This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

HARVARD
COLLEGE
LIBRARY

Preservation facsimile
printed on alkaline/buffered paper
and bound by
Acme Bookbinding
Charlestown, Massachusetts
2004

Harvard College Library

FROM THE
KENNETH MATHESON TAYLOR
FUND
GIVEN IN 1899 BY
JESSIE TAYLOR PHILIPS
IN MEMORY OF HER BROTHER
KENNETH MATHESON TAYLOR
(Class of 1890)
FOR ENGLISH LITERATURE

WORKS OF THOMAS NASHE

VOLUME III

THE WORKS OF THOMAS NASHE

EDITED FROM THE ORIGINAL TEXTS

BY RONALD B. McKERROW TEXT: VOL. III

A. H. BULLEN, 47 GREAT RUSSELL STREET
LONDON. MCMV

14466.23.5 (3) copy A

OXFORD : HORACE HART
PRINTER TO THE UNIVERSITY

CONTENTS

PAGE

HAVE WITH YOV TO SAFFRON-WALDEN 1
Title-page from British Museum, 96. b. 16. (5).

NASHES LENTEN STVFFE 141
Title-page from British Museum, 1029. e. 21.

SVMMERS LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT 227
Title-page from British Museum, C. 34. d. 50.

SHORTER PIECES

LATIN VERSES ON ECCLESIASTICUS 41. 1 298
Facsimile from State Papers, Dom. Add. Eliz., xxix.

PREFACE TO R. GREENE'S 'MENAPHON'. 300

PREFACE TO SIDNEY'S 'ASTROPHEL AND STELLA'. . . . 327

DOUBTFUL WORKS

AN ALMOND FOR A PARRAT 337
Title-page from British Museum, C. 37. d. 45.

A WONDERFVLL STRANGE . . . PROGNOSTICATION . . . 377
Title-page from Bodleian, Malone, 729.

VERSES FROM 'ASTROPHEL AND STELLA' 396

THE CHOISE OF VALENTINES 397

HAVE WITH YOV TO SAFFRON-WALDEN

Entry in the Stationers' Register: None.

Editions: (1) *Early:*

1596. [Head ornament] Haue vvith you to Saf-|fron-vvalden. | *OR*, | Gabriell Harueys Hunt is vp. | *Containing a full Anſwere to the eldeſt ſonne* | *of the Halter-maker.* | OR, | Naſhe his Confutation of the ſinfull | *Doctor.* | The Mott or Poſie, in ſtead of *Omne tulit punctum:* | *Pacis fiducia nunquam.* | *As much to ſay, as* I ſayd I would ſpeake with | him. | [ornament] | Printed at London by *Iohn Danter.* | *1596.*

No colophon. Quarto. Not paged.

Collation: A–X^4. (A 1) Title, *v.* blank. A 2 'To the most Orthodoxall and reuerent Corrector of staring haires . . .' *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. *The Epistle Dedicatorie.* (Except on B 3^v, where it is *A Grace put vp in behalfe of the Harueys.*) (C 4) 'To all Christian Readers . . .' *Ital. and Rom.* R-T. To the Reader. (D 4) 'Haue with you to Saffron-walden.' *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. Haue with you to Saffron-walden. (X 4) wanting, probably blank.

The Dedication is in a larger type than the text of the book.

Signatures are generally in Roman, but those of B 1, 3, D 1, 2, H 1, 2, 3, I 3, L 1, 2, O 2, Q 3, R 1, 2, 3, S 1, V 2, X 2 are in Italic. Fourth leaves not signed.

Catch-words: A 2. of B 1. pro-(tection) C 1. them, E 1. is G 1. (ligh-)tning, I 1. in L 1. (*vo-*)*lum'd* N 1. with P 1. grow R 1. *had* T 1 laid X 1 *Chute*

Copy used: That in the British Museum (96. b. 16. (5.)). In this copy a few of the side-notes have been cut into in binding: for these the other copy in the same library (G. 10453) has been referred to.

There are occasional differences of reading between these two copies, evidently owing to correction at press. In such cases the reading which appears to be correct is given in the text, that of the other copy being recorded in a foot-note. For this purpose copy 96. b. 16. (5.) is referred to as a and copy G. 10453 as b. When such a correction was made, the spelling of other words in the same line was frequently altered in order to save trouble in justification. No notice has been taken of these subsidiary variations.

It may be mentioned that almost all the hyphens in the quarto, owing evidently to their being lower than the rest of the type, have printed very indistinctly, and it is frequently impossible to determine, even by comparing the two copies, whether one is present or not. Errors in this respect must therefore be expected, and will, I hope, be excused.

(2) *Modern Editions:*

1870 (Coll.) Have with you to Saffron-Walden . . . 1596. (Miscellaneous Tracts. Temp. Eliz. and Jac. 1.)

Edited by J. P. Collier.

1883–4 (Gro.) The Complete Works of Thomas Nashe . . . edited by A. B. Grosart. Vol. iii, pp. 1–207.

From a copy in the Huth Library.

1904. (The present edition.)

From the copies at the British Museum as specified above. Grosart's variations from the quarto have been recorded only when it seemed that they might be intentional. Collier's text, which is, as usual, less correct, has only been used to compare with Grosart's when the latter departs from the reading of the original. Collier having in certain respects modernized the spelling, it has been found convenient to give readings which are common to his text and Grosart's in the spelling of the latter.

Haue vvith you to Saffron-vvalden.

OR,

Gabriell Harueys Hunt is vp.

Containing a full Anſwere to the eldeſt ſonne of the Halter-maker.

OR,

Naſhe his Confutation of the ſinfull *Doctor.*

The Mott or Poſie, in ſtead of *Omne tulit punctum:*

Pacis fiducia nunquam,

As much to ſay, as I ſayd I would ſpeake with him.

Printed at London by *Iohn Danter.*
1596.

To the most Orthodoxall and reue- A 2
rent Corrector of staring haires, the sincere &
*finigraphicall rarifier of prolixious rough barbarisme, the thrice egregious and censoriall animaduertiser of vagrant moustachios, chiefe scauinger of chins, and principall *Head-man of the parish wherein he dwells, speciall superuisor of all excrementall superfluities for Trinitie Colledge in* Cambridge, *and (to conclude) a not able and singular benefactor to all beards in generall,* Don Richardo Barbarossa de Cæsario, Tho: Nashe *wisheth the highest* Toppe *of his contentment and felicitie, and the* Shortning *of all his enemies.*

* quasi conuersant about heads.

ACute & amiable Dick, not *Dic mihi, Musa, virum,* Musing Dick, that studied a whole yeare to know which was the male and female of red herrings: nor *Dic obsecro,* Dick of all Dickes, that, in a Church where the Organs were defac'd, came and offred himselfe with his pipe and taber: nor old Dick of the Castle, that, vpon the newes | of the losse of *Calis*, went and put a whole bird-spit A 2v in the pike of his buckler: nor Dick Swash, or Desperate Dick, that's such a terrible Cutter at a chyne of beefe, and deuoures more meate at Ordinaries in discoursing of his fraies and deep acting of his slashing and hewing, than would serue halfe a dozen Brewers Dray-men: nor *Dick of the Cow,* that mad Demilance Northren Borderer, who plaid his prizes with the Lord *Iockey* so brauely: but paraphrasticall gallant Patron Dick, as good a fellow as euer was Heigh, fill the pot, hostesse: curteous Dicke, comicall

6 *] *In the Q three reference marks are used, one somewhat resembling a γ, a second like a λ, with the upper end curved to the right, and the third two inverted commas (‘’). These are here replaced by the asterisk, dagger, and double dagger respectively.* 8 *not able*] *Coll., Gro. In the Q the words are apparently divided by a very thin space.*

Dicke, liuely Dicke, louely Dicke, learned Dicke, olde *Dicke* of *Lichfield*, *Iubeo te plurimum saluere*, which is by interpretation, I ioy to heare thou hast so profited in gibridge.

I am sure thou wondrest not a little what I meane, to come vppon thee so straungelye with such a huge dicker of Dickes in a heape altogether: but that's but to shew the redundance of thy honorable Familie, and how affluent and copious thy name is in all places, though *Erasmus* in his *Copia verborum* neuer mentions it.

Without further circumstance, to make *short*, (which, to
A 3 speake troth, is onely proper to thy | Trade,) the short and long of it is this, There is a certaine kinde of Doctor of late very pittifully growen bald, and thereupon is to be shauen immediately, to trie if that will helpe him: now I know no such nimble fellow at his weapon in all *England* as thy selfe, who (as I heare) standst in election at this instant to bee chiefe *Crowner* or clipper of crownes in *Cambridge*, and yet no defacer of the Queenes coyne neither: and it is pittie but thou shouldst haue it, for thou hast long seru'd as a Clarke in the *crowne* office, and concluded syllogismes in *Barbara* anie time this sixteene yeare, and yet neuer metst with anie requitall, except it were some few *french crownes*, pild Friers crownes, drye shauen, not so much worth as one of these Scottish horne crownes; which (thy verie enemies must needes confesse) were but *bare* wages (yea, as bare as my nayle, I faith) for thy braue desert and dexteritie: & some such *Thinne* gratuitie or *Haire-loome* it may be the Doctor may present thee with, but how euer it *falls*, hath his head or his hayre the falling sicknesse neuer so, without anie more delay, *Of or on*, trimm'd hee must bee with a trice, and there is no remedie but thou must needes come and ioyne with me to giue him the terrible cut.|

A 3v Wherefore (good *Dick*) on with thy apron, & arme thy selfe *to set him downe* at the first word: *Stand to him*, I say, and *take him a button lower*: feare not to shew him a **knacke* of thy occupation, and once in thy life let it be said that a

* *Barbers knacking their fingers.*

Doctor weares thy † *cloth*, or that thou hast causd him to doo pennance, and weare *Haire-cloth* for his sinnes. Were he as he hath been (I can assure thee) he would clothe and adorne thee with manie gracious gallant complements, and not a rotten tooth that hangs out at thy shop window, but should cost him an indefinite Turkish armie of English *Hexameters*. O, he hath been olde dogge at that drunken staggering kinde of verse, which is all vp hill and downe hill, like the way betwixt *Stamford* and *Beechfeeld*, and goes like a horse plunging through the myre in the deep of winter, now soust vp to the saddle, and straight aloft on his tiptoes. Indeed, in old King Harrie sincerities, a kinde of verse it is hee hath been enfeoft in from his minoritie, for, as I haue bin faithfully informed, hee first cryde in that verse in the verie moment of his birth, and when he was but yet a fresh-man in *Cambridge*, he set vp * *Siquisses* & sent his accounts to his father in those ioulting Heroicks. Come, come, account of him as you list, by *Poll* and *Aedipoll* I protest, your noble Science of * decision and contraction is immortally beholding to him, for twice double his Patrimonie hath he spent in carefull cherishing & preseruing his pickerdeuant: and besides, a deuine vicarly brother of his, called *Astrologicall Richard*, some few yeares since (for the benefit of his countrey) most studiously compyled *a profound Abridgement vpon beards*, & therein copiously dilated of the true discipline of peakes, & no lesse frutelessely determined betwixt the Swallowes taile cut & the round beard like a rubbing brush. It was my chaunce (O thrice blessed chaunce) to the great comfort of my Muse to peruse it, although it came but priuately in Print: and for a more ratefied pasport (in thy opinion) that I haue read it and digested it, this title it beareth, *a* † *Defence of short haire against Synesius and Pierius*: or rather, in more familiar English to expresse it, a Dash ouer the head against baldnes, verie necessary to be obserued of al the *looser* sort, or *loose* haird sort, of yong Gentlemen & Courtiers, and no lesse pleasant and profitable to be

† *Theyr lousy napric they put about mis neckes, whiles they are trimming.*

* Siquis, *a bill for any thig lost.*

A 4

* *For diuisiō & contraction.*

† *Therfore belike hee gaue it that title, because it was most of it short*

haire his father made ropes of.

remembred of the whole Common-wealth of the Barbars. The Posie theretoo annexed, *Prolixior est breuitate sua*, as much to say as Burne Bees and haue Bees, & hair the more it is cut the more it comes: lately deuised and set forth by
A 4v *Richard Haruey*, | the vnluckie Prophet of prodigies. If this may not settle thy beleefe, but yet thou requirest a further token to make vp euen money, in the Epistle Dedicatorie thereof to a great Man of this Land, whom he calls *his verie right honourable good Lord*, he recounteth his large bounties bestowed vppon him, and talkes of the secret fauours which hee did him in his Studie or Closet at Court.

Heare you, Dick, marke you here what a iewell this learning is: how long wil it be, ere thou studie thy selfe to the like preferment? No reason I see, why thou, being a Barber, shouldst not bee as *hair-braind* as he. Onely for writing a booke of beards, in which he had no further experience but by looking on his father when he made hairs, hair lines I meane, and yet not such *lines* of life as a hangman hath in his hand, but haire lines to hang linnen on: for that smal demerit (I say) is he thus aduanced and courted, & from Astrological Dick raised to bee fauorite Dick. And verie meete it is he should be so fauored and raisd by high Personages, for before he was as low a Parson or Vicar as a man could lightly set ey on.

With teares be it spoken, too few such lowly Parsons & Preachers we haue, who, laying aside all worldly encum-
B 1 brances, & plesant cõuersing with | Saint *Austen*, *Ierome*, *Chrisostome*, wilbe content to read a Lecture, as he hath done, *de lana caprina*, (almost as slender a cast subiect as a Catts smelling haires,) or trauerse the subtile distinctions twixt *short cut and long taile*.

Fie, this is not the fortieth dandiprat part of the affectionate *Items* hee hath bequeathed on your mysterie: with fiue thousand other doctrinal deuotions hath he adopted himselfe more than a by-founder of your trade, conioyning with his aforesaid Doctor Brother in eightie eight browne Bakers dozen of Almanackes.

In euerie of which famous Annals of the foure windes, vnfallible rules are prescribd for men to obserue the best time to breed loue-lockes in, and so to *ringle a thorough hayre for rooting, that it shall neuer put foorth his snayles hornes again: as also vnder what Planet a man maye with least danger picke his teeth, and how to catch the Sun in such a phisicall Signe that one may sweate and be not a haire the worse.

* *Some holde that any place of a mans chin, beeing rubd with a gold rīg beeing heated, will so harden the skin that there shall neuer anie haire grow there more.*

But these amplifications adiourned to another Returne, all the deuoyre, Diamond Dick, which I am in this Epistle of thy daintie composition to expostulate is no more but this, that since vnder thy redoubted patronage and | protection my workes are to haue their royall **Bestellein* and more than common safe-conduct into the world, and that for the Meridian of thy honour and magnificence they are chiefely eleuated & erected, thou wouldst brauely mount thee on thy barbed steed, *alias* thy triumphant barbers Chaire, and girding thy keene *Palermo* rasour to thy side, in stead of a trenchant Turkish semitorie, and setting thy sharpe pointed † launce in his rest, be with them at a haires bredth that backbite and detract me. B 1v

* Bestellein, *the royallest Passe in Germanie that may bee, onely for Dukes & great princes.*

Phlebothomize them, sting them, tutch them, Dick, tutch them, play the valiant man at *Armes*, and let them bloud and spare not; the Lawe allowes thee to doo it, it will beare no action; and thou, beeing a Barber Surgeon, art priuiledgd to dresse flesh in Lent, or anie thing.

† *A lāce, an instrumēt to let bloud with.*

Admit this be not sufficient to coole the heat of their courage, serch them in another vaine, by discharging thy pocket dags against them, and let them smart for it to the proofe.

Steele thy painted May-pole, or more properly to tearme it, thy redoubted rigorous horsmans staffe, (which at thy dore as a manifest *signe* thou hangst forth of thy martiall prowesse and hardiment,) on their insolent creasts that maligne and despise me, and forbeare not to bring forth all thy | brasse peeces against them. It is well knowen thou hast been a Commaunder and a Souldier euer since *Tilbury* B 2

Campe, and earlie and late *walkt the round*, and dealt verie *short* and *round* with all those that come vnder thy fingers; strugled through the *foamie* deepe, and skirmisht on the *downes*: wherefore, if thou tak'st them not downe soundlie, with a hey downe and a derry, and doost not shuffle and *cut* with them lustilie, *actum est de pudicitia*, I aske of God thou maist light vpon none but bald-pates till thou diest. But I trow thou wilt carry a better pate with thee, and not suffer any of these indigent old fashiond iudgements to carry it away; whose wits were right stuffe when those loue-letters in rime were in request, & whose capacities neuer mended their pace since *Pace*, the Duke of *Norfolkes* foole, died. As for the decaied Proctor of *Saffron-walden* himself, if he wander within the precincts of thy indignation, I make no question but of thy owne accord, without any motion of mine, thou wilt be as ready as any *catchpoule*, out of all *scotch* & *notch* to torment him, & deal as *snip snap* snappishly with him as euer he was delt withall since he first dated letters from his gallerie in *Trinitie Hall*; not suffring a lowse that belongs to him to passe thy hands
B 2v without a *powling* penny: and yet, | as I shrewdly presage, thou shalt not finde many powling pence about him neither, except he rob *Peter* to pay *Powle*, empouerish his spiritual Vicar brother to helpe to pay for his powling, and he, alas, (dolefull foure nobles Curate, nothing so good as the Confessour of Tyburne or Superintendent of *Pancredge*,) hath nittifide himselfe with a dish, *rotundè profundè*, any time this fourteene yeare, to saue charges of sheep-shearing; &, not to make of a thing more than it is, hath scarce so much Ecclesiasticall liuing in all, as will serue to buy him cruell strings to his bookes, and haire buttons.

Wherefore I passe not if, in tender charitie and commiseration of his estate, I adde ten pound & a purse to his wages and stipend, canuaze him and his Angell brother *Gabriell* in ten sheetes of paper, and so leaue them to goe hang themselues; or outright to hang, draw, and quarter

2 *Qy. read* came ?

them al vnder one, I care not if I make it eighteen: on that condition in their last wil & testament they bequeath me eighteene wise words in the way of answere betwixt them.

I dare giue my word for them, they will neuer doe it, no, not although it were inioynd to them in stead of their neck-verse: their whole stock of wit, when it was at the best, beeing but ten Eng-lish Hexameters and a *Lenuoy*: H 3 wherefore, generous Dick, (without hum drum be it spoken) I vtterly despaire of them; or not so much despaire of them, as count them a paire of poore ideots, being not only but also two brothers, two block-heads, two blunderkins, hauing their braines stuft with nought but balder-dash, but that they are the verie botts & the glanders to the gentle Readers, the dead Palsie and Apoplexie of the Presse, the *Sarpego* and the *Sciatica* of the 7. Liberall Sciences, the surfetting vomit of Ladie Vanitie, the sworne bauds to one anothers vain-glorie; &, to conclude, the most contemptible *Mounsier Aiaxes* of excrementall conceipts and stinking kennel-rakt vp inuention that this or anie Age euer afforded.

I pry thee, surmounting *Donzel Dick*, whiles I am in this heate of Inuectiue, let me remember thee to do this one kindnes more for me, *videlicet*, when thou hast frizled and scrubd and tickled the haires sweetly, and that thou hast filcht thy selfe into an excellent honourable assembly of sharpe iudiciall fierie wits and fine spirites, bee it this winter at an Euening tearme, or where-euer, with all the thundring grace and magnanimous eloquence that thou hast, put vp this heroycall Grace in their behalfe, if thou bee not past grace. |

A Grace put vp in behalfe of the Harueys. B 3v

SVpplicat reuerentiis vestris, per Apostrophen, &c.

16 *Qy. read Serpigo or Serpego?* 32 *A . . . Harueys.*] *This takes the place of the running title on this page in Q.*

In English thus.

MOst humblie sueth to your Reuerences, the reprobate brace of Brothers of the Harueys: to wit, witlesse Gabriell and ruffling Richard; That whereas for anie time this foure and twentie yeare they haue plaid the fantasticall gub-shites and goose-giblets in Print, and kept a hatefull scribling and a pamphleting about earth-quakes, coniunctions, inundations, the fearfull blazing Starre, and the forsworne Flaxe-wife; and tooke vpon them to be false Prophets, Weather-wizards, Fortune-tellers, Poets, Philosophers, Orators, Historiographers, Mountebankes, Ballet-makers, and left no Arte vndefamed with their filthie dull-headed practise: it may please your Worships and Masterships, these infidell premisses considered, & that they haue so fully performed all their acts in absurditie, impudence, & foolerie, to grant them their absolute Graces to commence at Dawes crosse, and with your general subscriptions confirm them for the profoundest Arcandums, Acarnanians, and Dizards, that haue been discouered since the Deluge: & so let them passe throughout the Queenes Dominions.

2 *This 'Grace' is in smaller type than the rest of the 'Epistle Dedicatorie,' being the same as the text of the book.* 18 *Dizards*] Dizards *Coll., Gro.*

Purposely that space I left, that as manie as I shall B 4
perswade they are *Pachecoes*, *Poldauisses*, and *Dringles* may set their hands to their definitiue sentence, and with the Clearke helpe to crye *Amen* to their eternall vnhandsomming.

Plie them, plie them vncessantly, *vnico Dick*, euen as a Water-man plies for his Fares, and insinuate and goe about the bush with them, like as thou art wont to insinuate and go about the grizlie bushie beard of some sauage Saracen Butcher, and neuer surcease flaunting and firking it in fustian, till vnder the Vniuersities vnited hand & seale they bee enacted as *Obsolæte* a case of Cockescombes as euer he was in *Trinitie Colledge* that would not carrie his Tutors bow into the field, because it would not edifie; or his fellow *qui quæ codshead*, that in the Latine Tragedie of K. *Richard* cride, *Ad vrbs, ad vrbs, ad vrbs*, when his whole Part was no more but *Vrbs, vrbs, ad arma, ad arma.*

Shall I make a motion, which I would not haue thee thinke I induce to flatter thee neyther, thou being not in my walke, whereby I might come to wash my handes with thee a mornings, or get a sprinkling or a brushing for a brybe: wilt thou commence and make | no more ado, since B 4v
thou hast almost as much learning and farre more wit than the two Brothers, or eyther of those profound *qui mihi Discipulasses* aboue mentioned?

Now verely, (I perswade mee,) if thou wouldst attempt it, not all the *Gabriels* betwixt this and *Godmanchester*, put together, wold make a more perpolite cathedral Doctor than thy selfe: for all languages at thy fingers ende thou hast as perfect as *Spruce*, and nere a *Dicke Haruey* or cathedrall Doctor of them all can read a more smooth succinct *Lipsian* Lecture of short haire, than thou ouer thy Barbars Chaire, if thou bee so disposed, nor stand and encounter all commers so constantly.

Dick, I exhort thee as a brother, be not a horse to forget thy own worth: thou art in place where thou maist promote thy selfe; do not close-prison and eclipse thy

vertues in the narrow glasse lanthorne of thy Barbers shop, but reflect them vp and downe the Realme, like to those prospectiue glasses which expresse not the similitudes they receiue neere hand, but cast them in the ayre a farre off, where they are more clerely represented.

Commence, commence, I admonish thee, thy merits are ripe for it, & there haue been Doctors of thy Facultie,
C 1 as Doctor *Dodipowle* for exam-|ple; and here in *London* yet extant *viua voce* to testifie, *Doctor Nott and Doctor Powle*, none of which in *notting* and *powling* go beyond thee. To vtter vnto thee my fancie as touching those Neoterick tongues thou professest, in whose pronunciation old *Tooly* and thou varie as much as *Stephen Gardineer* and Sir *Iohn Cheeke* about the pronunciation of the Greeke tongue; loe, for a testifying incouragement how much I wish thy encrease in those languages, I haue here tooke the paines to nit and louze ouer the Doctours Booke, and though manie cholericke Cookes about *London* in a mad rage haue dismembred it, and thrust it piping hot into the ouen vnder the bottomes of dowsets, and impiously prickt the torne sheetes of it, for basting paper, on the outsides of Geese and roasting Beefe, to keepe them from burning; yet haue I naturally cherisht it and hugd it in my bosome, euen as a Carrier of *Bosomes Inne* dooth a Cheese vnder his arme, and the purest *Parmasen* magget Phrases therein cull'd and pickt out to present thee with.

Read and peruse them ouer, as diligently as thou wouldst doo a charme against the tooth-ache: for this I can gospelly auouch, no sleight paynes hath the Doctour
C 1v tooke in collecting | them, consulting a whole quarter of a yeare with *Textors* Epithites (which he borrowd of a frend of mine in Poules Churchyard) onely to pounse them out more poetically.

Be not self-wild, but insist in my precepts, and I will tutour thee so Pythagoreanly how to husband them in al companies, that euen *Williamson* himselfe, thy fellow

36 *Williamson*] *Willington Q. Corr. in Errata on* X 3v.

Barber in *Cambridge*, (who hath long borne the bell for finicall descanting on the *Crates*,) shalbe constrained to worship and offer to thee.

Abruptly to breake into the bowels of this *Index* of bald inkhornisme, what saist thou? for all thou art reputed such an **ænigmaticall linguist*, (vnder the Doctors *terme probatorie* license bee it spoken, being a terme with him as frequent as standing vpon termes among lawiers,) canst thou enter into the true nature of *villanie by conniuence*? I hold a groate thou canst not conster it. A word it is that the Doctor lay a whole weeke and a day & a night entranced on his bed to bring forth, and on the Munday euening late causd all the bels in the Parish where he then soiournd to be rong forth, for ioy that he was deliuerd of it.

* *A rag borrowd from his owne dunghil.*

Repent, and be ashamed of thy rudenesse: O thou that hast made so manie men winke whyles thou cast suds in their eyes, and yet knowest not | what *Conniuence* meanes. C 2
Plodding and dunstically, like a clowne of *Cherry-hinton*, basely thou beseechest them to winke, whiles thou mak'st a Tennis-court of their faces by brick-walling thy clay-balls crosse vp and downe their cheekes: whereas, if thou wert right orthographizd in the Doctors elocution, thou wouldst say—in stead of, I pray, Sir, winke; I must wash you—Sir, by your fauour I must require your *conniuence*.

Againe, it is thy custome, being sent for to some tall old sinckanter or stigmaticall bearded Master of Arte that hath been chin-bound euer since *Charles* the ninths massacre in *France*, to rush in bluntly with thy washing bowle and thy nursecloutes vnder thy cloake, and after a few scraping ceremonies, to aske if his Worship bee at leasure to be recreated.

A malo in peius, that is the meanest salutation that ere I heard: vtterly thou bewrayest thy *non-proficiencie* in the Doctors Paracelsian rope-rethorique. What a pesti-

5 thou for *Q*, *Coll.*, *Gro.* 24–5 say in stead of I pray Sir winke I must wash you, Sir, by your fauour *Q*.

lence, a yong braine and so poore and penurious in *Conges*! Rayse thy conceipt on the trees, or, rather than faile, new corke it at the heeles, before it should thus walke bare-foote vp and downe the streetes.

Hence take thy Harueticall *exordium*, if thou wouldst haue thy conceit the worlds fauourite at | first dash, *Omniscious and omnisufficient Master Doctor*, (for so hee calls *Cornelius Agrippa*) *will it please you to bee cosmologized and smirkt?*

C 2v

Suppose a Bishop come to the Vniuersitie, as the Bishop of *Lincolne* somtimes to visit *Kings Colledge*, and the Bishop of *Ely Saint Iohns*, (whiles there was euer a Bishop there,) a playne Bishop (like *Martin*) at euerie word thou wilt terme him, whereas if thou wert but one hower entred commons in *Haruey de Oratore*, *A great Pontife or Demy-god in omnisufficiencie* thou wouldst enstall him.

But to appose thee more dallyingly and familiarly. It is giuen out amongst Schollers that thou hast a passing singular good wit: now to trie whither thou hast so or no, let me heare what change of phrases thou hast to describe a good wit in, or how, in Pedagogue *Tragotanto* Doctors english, thou canst florish vpon it.

I feele thy pulses beat slowly alreadie, although thou beest fortie mile off from mee, and this impotent answere (with much adoo) droppes from thee, euen as sweate from a leane man that drinks sacke; namely, that thou thinkest there cannot much extraordinarie descant be made of it, except it be to say, such a one hath an admirable capacitie, an incomparable quick inuention, and a surmoun-|ting rich spirit aboue all men. *Hah, ha*, a destitute poore fellow art thou, and hast mist mee nine score: goe, goe, get thee a caudle and keepe thy selfe warme in thy bed, for, out of question, thy spirit is in a consumption.

C 3

A rich spirit, quoth a? nay then, a spirit in the way of honestie too: loe, this it is to bee read in nothing but in *Barnabe Riches* workes. Spend but a quarter so much

time in mumping vppon *Gabrielisme*, and Ile be bound, bodie and goods, thou wilt not anie longer sneakingly come forth with a ~~rich~~ spirit and an admirable capacitie, but *an enthusiasticall spirit & a nimble entelechy.* In the course of my Booke a whole catalogue thou shalt finde of all these *Guiny* phrases, to which, in zealous care of thy reformation, I referre thee.

Dii boni, boni quid porto? What a large Diocesse of Epistling haue I here progrest through? The Summons to a generall Councell, with all the reasons moouing thereunto, or *Tindalls* Prologue before the New Testament, are but short Graces before meate, in comparison of this my immoderate Dedication. But the best is, if it be too long, thou hast a combe and a paire of scissers to curtall it; or, if thou list not stand so long about it, with a *Trinitie Colledge* rubber thou maist epitomize it extempore. |

Marrie, if thou long to heare the reason why I haue so C 3v stretcht it on the tenter-hookes, forsooth it is a garment for the woodcocke *Gabriel Haruey*, and fooles, ye know, alwaies for the most part (especiallie if they bee naturall fooles) are suted in long coates; whereupon I set vp my rest to shape his garments of the same size, that I might be sure to sit on his skirts.

Dick, no more at this time, but *Nos-da diu catawhy*, and all the recompence I can make thee for being, like a Chancery Declaration, so tiring troublesome vnto thee, is this, if thou wilt haue the Doctour for an Anatomie, thou shalt; doo but speake the word, and I am the man will deliuer him to thee to be scotcht and carbonadoed: but in anie case speake quickly, for heere he lies at the last gaspe of surrendring all his credit and reputation.

Thy Frend, Tho: Nashe,
if thou beest foe, Dick, *to*
all the generation of
the Harueys. |

8 *boni boni, quid Q.* 23 sit] fit *Gro.*

C 4 # To all Christian Readers, to whom these Presents shall come.

WEll said, my Maisters, I perceyue there cannot a new Booke come forth but you will haue a fling at it. Say, what are you reading? Nashe *against* Haruey. *Fo, thats a stale ieast, hee hath been this two or three yeare about it. O good Brother* Timothie, *rule your reason, the Miller gryndes more mens corne than one; and those that resolutely goe through with anie quarrell must set all their worldly busines at a stay, before they draw it to the poynt. I will not gainsay but I haue cherisht a purpose of persecuting this Liff-lander* Bogarian *so long time as ye speak of, and that, like the long snouted Beast (whose backe is Castle proofe) carrying her yong in her wombe three yere ere she be deliuered, I haue been big with childe of a common place of reuenge, euer since the hanging of* Lopus: *but to say I plodded vpon it continually, and vsed in all this space nothing but gall to make inke with, is a lye befitting a base swabberly lowsie sailer, who hauing been neuer but a month at sea in his life, and duckt at the maine yards arme twice or thrice*
C 4v *for pilferie, when hee comes | home, sweares hee hath been seuenteene yeares in the Turkes Gallies.*

Patientia vestra, *there is not one pint of wine more than the iust Bill of costs and charges in setting forth, to be got by anie of these bitter-sauced Inuectiues. Some foolish praise perhaps we may meete with, such as is affoorded to ordinarie Iesters that make sport: but otherwise we are like those fugitiue Priests in* Spaine *and* Portugall, *whom the Pope (verie liberally) prefers to Irish Bishoprickes, but allowes them not a pennie of any liuing to maintaine them with, saue onely certaine Friers to beg for them.*

3 etc. *In Roman. Coll.* 10 *worldly*] *Coll., Gro.*: *wordly Q.*

High titles (as they of Bishops and Prelates), so of Poets and Writers, we haue in the world, when, in stead of their begging Friers, the fire of our wit is left, as our onely last refuge to warme vs.

Haruey *and I (a couple of beggars) take vpon vs to bandie factions, and contend like the* Vrsini *and* Coloni *in* Roome; *or as the* Turkes *and* Persians *about* Mahomet *and* Mortus Alli, *which should bee the greatest: and (with the* Indians) *head our inuentions arrowes with Vipers teeth, and steep them in the bloud of Adders and Serpents, and spend as much time in arguing* pro & contra, *as a man might haue found out the quadrature of the Circle in: when all the controuersie is no more but this, he began with mee, and cannot tell how to make an end; and I would faine end or rid my hands of him, if he had not first begun.*

I protest I doo not write against him because I hate him, but that I would confirme and plainly shew, to a number of weake beleeuers in my sufficiencie, that I am able to answere him: and his frends, and not his enemies, | let him thanke for this heauie load of disgrace I lay vpon him, since theyr extreame disabling of mee in this kinde, & vrging what a triumph he had ouer me, hath made me to ransacke my standish more than I would.

This I will boldly say, looke how long it is since he writ against me, so long haue I giuen him a lease of his life, & he hath onely held it by my mercie.

His Booke or Magna Charta *which against M.* Lilly *& me he addrest, I hauing kept idle by me in a by settle out of sight amongst old shooes and bootes almost this two yere, and in meere pitie of him would neuer looke vpon it but in some calme pleasing humor, for feare least in my melancholy too cruelly I should haue martyrd him.*

And yet, though vengeance comes not Zephiris & hirundine prima, *in the first springing prime of his schisme and heresie, let him not looke for one of Frier* Tecelius *Pardons, he that (as* Sleidane *reports) first stird vp* Luther, *pronouncing from*

27 *Qy. should be run on?*

the Pope free salarie indulgence to anie man, though he had deflowred the Virgine Mary, *and absolution as well for sinnes past as sinnes to come: for I meane to come vpon him with a tempest of thunder and lightning worse than the stormes in the West* Indies *cald the* Furicanoes, *and compleate arme more words for his confusion than* Wezell *in* Germanie *is able to arme men, that hath absolute furniture for three hundred thousand at all times.*

Gentlemen, what think ye of this sober mortified stile? I dare say a number of ye haue drawn it to a verdit alredie; and as an Elephants fore-legs are longer than his hinder, so you imagine my former confutation wilbe better than my latter. Nay then, Aesopum non attriuistis, *you are as ignorant in the true mouings of my Muse as | the Astronomers are in the true mouings of* Mars, *which to this day they could neuer attaine too. For how euer in the first setting foorth I martch faire and softly, like a man that rides vpon his owne horse, and like the* Caspian *sea seeme neither to ebbe nor flow, but keep a smooth plain forme in my eloquence, as one of the* Lacedemonian Ephori, *or* Baldwin *in his morrall sentences (which now are all snatcht vp for Painters posies), yet you shall see me, in two or three leaues hence, crie Heigh for our towne greene, and powre hot boyling inke on this contemptible Heggledepegs barrain scalp, as men condemned for stealing by* Richard de corde Lions *law had hot boyling pitch powrd on their heads, and feathers strewd vppon, that wheresoeuer they came they might be knowne.*

I know I am too long in preparing an entrance into my Text, sed tandem denique *to the matter and the purpose.*

The method I meane to vse in persecuting this Peter Maluenda *and* Sinibaldo Crasko *is no more but this:*

Memorandum, *I frame my whole Booke in the nature of a Dialogue, much like* Bullen *and his Doctor* Tocrub, *whereof the Interlocuters are these:*

Inprimis, Senior Importuno, *the Opponent.*

31 *this. Q, Coll., Gro.* 34 *these. Q.* 35 Importunio *Q, Coll., Gro. In every other case the name is given in Q as* Importuno.

The second, Grand Consiliadore, *chiefe Censor or Moderator.*

The third, Domino Bentiuole, *one that stands, as it were, at the line in a Tennis-court, and takes euerie ball at the volly.*

The fourth, Don Carneades de boone Compagniola, *who, like a busie Countrey Iustice, sits on the Bench, and preacheth to theeues out of their own confessions: or rather, like a Quarter-master or Treasurer of Bride-well, whose | office* D 2 *is to giue so manie strokes with the hammer, as the publican vnchast offender is to haue stripes, and by the same* Tuballs *musique to warne the blue-coate Corrector when he should patience and surcease: so continually, when by* Senior Importuno *the Doctor is brought to the Crosse,* Don Carneades *sets downe what proportion of iustice is to be executed vpon him, and, when his backe hath bled sufficient, giues a signall of retrayt.*

Neither would I haue you imagine that all these personages are fained, like Americke Vesputius, *& the rest of the* Antwerpe *Speakers in* Sir Thomas Moores Vtopia: *for, as true as* Bankes *his Horse knowes a Spaniard from an English-man, or there went vp one and twentie Maides to the top of* Boston *Steeple, and there came but one downe againe, so true it is that there are men which haue dealt with me in the same humour that heere I shaddow. In some nooke or blind angle of the* Black-Friers *you may suppose (if you will) this honest conference to bee held, after the same manner that one of these* Italionate *conferences about a* Duell *is wont solemnly to be handled, which is when a man, being specially toucht in reputation, or challenged to the field vpon equall tearmes, calls all his frends together, and askes their aduice how he should carrie himselfe in the action.*

Him that I tearme Senior Importuno *is a Gentleman of good qualitie, to whom I rest manie waies beholding, and*

14 *Importunio Coll.* 32 *askes them their Coll., Gro.* 34 Importunio *Coll., Gro.*

one (as the Philosophers say of winde, that it is nothing but aire vehemently moou'd) so hath hee neuer ceast, with all the vehemence of winde or breath that he hath, to incite and mooue me to win my spurres in this iourney.

D 2v *Vnder* Grand Consiliadore *I allude to a graue reue-*|*rend Gimnosophist,* (Amicorum amicissimus, *of all my Frends the most zealous,*) *that as* Aesculapius *built an Oracle of the Sunne at* Athens, *so is his Chamber an Oracle or Conuocation Chappell of sound counsaile for all the better sort of the sonnes of vnderstanding about* London, *and* (*as it were*) *an vsuall market of good fellowship and conference.*

Hee also (*as well as* Senior Importuno) *hath dealt with me verie importunately to employ all my Forces in this Expedition, and as* Hippocrates *preserued the Citie of* Coos *from a great plague or mortalitie* (*generally dispersed throughout* Greece) *by perswading them to kindle fires in publique places, wherby the aire might be purified: so hath hee* (*in most feruent deuotion to my well dooing*) *vncessantly perswaded me to preserue my credit from iadish dying of the* scratches, *by powerfull through enkindling this* Pinego Riminos *euerlasting fire of damnation.*

For Domino Bentiuole *and* Don Carneades de boune compagniola, *they be men that haue as full shares in my loue and affection as the former.*

The antecedent of the two, beside true resolution and valure (*wherewith he hath ennobled his name extraordinarie*) *and a ripe pleasant wit in conuersing, hath in him a perfect vnchangeable true habit of honestie, imitating the Arte of Musique, which the Professours thereof affirme to be infinite and without end.*

And for the subsequent or hindermost of the paire, who likewise is none of the vnworthiest retainers to Madame Bellona, *hee is another* Florentine Poggius *for mirthfull sportiue conceit & quick inuention,* ignem faciens ex lapide

D 3 nigro, (*which* Munster *in his Cosmography* | *alledgeth for the greatest wonder of* England,) *that is, wresting delight out of*

12 *Importunio Coll.* 22 bonne *Coll., Gro.* 34 *innention Q.*

anie thing. And this ouer and aboue I will giue in euidence for his praise, that though all the ancient Records and Presidents of ingenuous Apothegs and Emblemes were burnt, (*as* Polidore Virgill *in King* Harry *the eights time burnt all the ancient Records of the true beginning of this our Ile, after hee had finished his Chronicle,*) *yet out of his affluent capacitie they were to be renewed and reedified farre better.*

These foure, with my selfe, whom I personate as the Respondent in the last place, shall (*according as God wil giue them grace*) *clap vp a* Colloquium *amongst them, and so schoole my gentle* Comrade *or neighbor* Quiquisse *in some few short principles of my learning and industrie, that* (*I doubt not*) *by that time they haue concluded and dispatcht with him, my* Gorboduck Huddleduddle *will gladly* (*on his knees*) *resigne to mee his Doctourship; and as* Antisthenes *could not beate* Diogenes *away from him, but he would needes be his scholler whether he would or no, so shall I haue him haunt me vp and downe to be my prentise to learne to endite, and, doo what I can, I shall not be shut of him.*

This is once, I both can and wilbe shut presently of this tedious Chapter of contents, least, whereas I prepared it as an antipast to whet your stomacks, it cleane take away your stomackes, and you surfet of it before meate come: wherefore, onely giuing you this one caueat to obserue in reading my Booke, which Aristotle *prescribes to them that read Histories, namely, that they bee not* nimis credulos aut incredulos, *too rash or too slow of beleefe, and earnestly commending me to* Qui cytharam neruis, & neruis temperat arcum, *the melodious God of* Gam | vt are, *that is life and* D 3v *sinnewes in euerie thing; as also to* Ioues *ancient trustie* Roger, *frisking come aloft sprightly* Mercury, *that hath wings for his moustachies, wings for his ey-browes, wings growing out of his chinne like a thorough haire, wings at his armes, like a fooles coat with foure elbowes, wings for his riding bases, wings at his heeles in stead of spurres,*

and is true Prince of Wingan-decoy *in euerie thing, and desiring him to inspire my pen with some of his nimblest Pomados and Sommersets, & be still close at my elbow, since now I haue more vse of him than Alchumists, in loue and charitie I take my leaue of you all, at least of all such as heere meane to leaue and read no further, and hast to the launching forth of my Dialogue.* |

Dialogus.

Interlocutores: Senior Importuno, Grand Consiliadore, Domino Bentiuole, Don Carneades de boune compagniola, Piers Pennilesse Respondent.

Importuno.

WHat, *Tom*, thou art very welcome. Where hast thou bin this long time; walking in Saint *Faiths* Church vnder ground, that wee neuer could see thee? Or hast thou tooke thee a Chamber in *Cole-harbour*, where they liue in a continuall myst, betwixt two Brew-houses?

Consili: Indeed we haue mist you a great while, as well spiritually as corporally; that is, no lesse in the absence of your workes than the want of your companie: but now, I hope, by your presence you will fully satisfie vs in either.

Bentiuole: Nay, I would he would but fully satisfie | and pay one, which is the Doctor: for this I can assure him, he is run farre in arrearages with expectation, & to recouer himselfe it wilbe verie hard, except hee put twice dubble as much *aqua fortis* in his inke as he did before. D 4v

Carnead: No *aqua fortis*, if you loue me, for it almost poysoned and spoyled the fashion of *Stones* the fooles nose; and would you haue it be the destruction and desolation of a Doctor Foole now? What, content your selfe: a messe of *Tewksbury* mustard, or a dramme and a halfe of *Tower-hill* vineger, will seeme a high festiuall banquet, and

4 *bonne Coll., Gro.*

make a famous coronation shew on this forlorne Ciuilians hungry table.

Impor: Tush, tush, you are all for iest, & make him be more careles of his credit than he wold be, by thus contemning and debasing his Aduersarie. Will you heare what is the vnited voyce and opinion abroad? Confidently they say, he is not able to answere him, he hath deferd it so long, & if he doo answere him, howsoeuer it be, it is nothing, since hee hath been a whole Age about it; though I, for mine owne part, know the contrarie, & will engage my oath for him (if need be) that the most of this time they thinke him houering ouer the neast, he hath sat hatching of nothing but toies for priuate Gentlemen, & neglected the peculiar busines of his reputation, that so deeply concerne him, to follow vaine hopes and had I wist humours about Court, that make him goe in a thred-bare cloake, and scarce pay for boate hire. Often enough I told him of this, if he would haue beleeu'd me; but at length I am sure he findes it, and repents it all too late. In no companie I can come, but
E 1 euerie minute of an howre (be-|cause they haue taken speciall notice of my loue towards him) they still will be tormenting me with one question or another, of what he is about, what means he to be thus retchles of his fame, or whither I am sure those things which are past vnder his name heretofore were of his owne dooing, or to get an opinion of wit hee vsed some other mans helpe vnder hande, that nowe hath vtterly giuen him ouer and forsaken him; whether he be dead or no, or forbidden to write, or in regard he hath publisht a treatise in Diuinitie makes a conscience to meddle any more in these controuersies? with a thousand other like idle interrogatories: whereto I answere nothing else, but that he is idle and new fangled, beginning many things but soone wearie of them ere hee be halfe entred, and that hee hath too much acquaintance in London euer to doo any good, being like a Curtezan that can deny no man, or a

14 concerne[s] *Grv.* 18 belee'ud *Q.* 20 be- [*c.w.* cause] | because *Q.* 21 him, they *Q.*

graue common-wealths Senatour that thinkes he is not borne for himselfe alone; but, as old *Laertes* in *Homers Odissæa*, *Dum reliqua omnia curabat, seipsum negligebat*, caring for all other things else, sets his owne estate at sixe and seauen. Iudge you, whom he takes for his best friends, what the end of this will be. A disgraced and condemned man he liues whiles *Haruey* thus liues vnanswered, worse than he that hath peaceably and quietly put vp an hundred bastinadoes, or suffred his face to be made a continual common wall for men to spit on: Spittle may be wip't off, and the print of a broken pate or bruse with a cudgell quickly made whole, and worne out of mens memories, but to be a villaine in print, or to be imprinted at London the reprobatest villaine that euer went on two legs, for such | is *Gabriell Scurueies* E 1v (as in thy other booke thou termst him) his witles malicious testimony of thee, with other more rascally hedge rak't vp termes, familiar to none but roguish morts and doxes, is an attainder that will sticke by thee for euer. A blot of ignominie it is, which though this age, or, at the vtmost, such in this age as haue conuerst or are acquainted with thee, hold light and ridiculous, and no more but as a Bulls roaring and bellowing and running horne mad at euery one in his way, when he is wounded by the Dogges and almost bayted to death; yet there is an age to come, which, knowing neither thee nor him, but by your seuerall workes iudging of either, will authorise all hee hath belched forth in thy reproach for sound Gospell, since as the prouerbe is, *qui tacet consentire videtur*, thou holding thy peace, and not confuting him, seemes to confesse and confirme all whereof hee hath accused thee, and the innocent, vnheard, doo perish as guilty. Deceiue not thy selfe with the bad sale of his bookes, for though in no other mans handes, yet in his owne Deske they may bee founde after his death, whereby, while Printing lasts, thy disgrace may last, & the Printer (whose Copie it is) may leaue thy infamie in Legacie to his heyres, and his heyres to their next heyres successiuely to

2 *odissæa Q.* 16 hedge-rak't (*f*) *Q.*

the thirteenth and fourteenth generation, *Cum Priuilegio*, forbidding all other to Print those lewd lying Recordes of thy scandall and contumely, but the lineall offspring of their race *in sempiternum*. Hast thou not heard howe *Orpheus* wrote in the 2700. age of the world, whereas it is now 5596. and yet his memorie is fresh, his verses are extant, whereas all the Kings that raignd and suruiude at
E 2 that time haue not | so much as the first letter of their names to posterity commended? the very same is thy case with those in *Germanie*, which beeing executed are neuer buried. Consider and deliberate well of it, and if it worke not effectually with thee I know not what will. Neither, if thou beest so sencelesse that thou wilt not let it sinke into thee, doo I hold thee worthy to be any thing but the sinke of contempt, to be excluded out of all men of worths companies, & counted the abiect scumme of all Poets and ballet-makers.

Respond: So you haue said, sir. Now let mee haue my turne another-while, to counterbuffe and beate backe all those ouerthwart blowes wherewith you haue charged me.

Benti: No reason to the contrarie, but in any case be not chollerick, since the most of those speeches he hath vttred my owne eares can witnesse to bee true, when as at diuers great meetings and chiefe Ordinaries I haue Champion-like tooke thy part, and euery one obiected and articled against thee, much after the same forme he hath expressed.

Respond: Will you haue patience, and you shall heare me expressely and roundly giue him his *quietus est*? To the first, wherein he concludes I am not able to answere him, because I haue deferd it so long; I answere that it followes not, in so much as many men that are able to pay their debts doo not alwaies discharge and pay them presently at one push; and secondly, or to the second lye, where he sayth, and I doo answere him it is nothing, since I haue beene a whole age about it—If I list, I could proue his assertion to bee vnder age: but thats all one, I am

34 nothing *Q.* 35 it, If *Q*: it, if *Coll.*: it. If *Gro.*

content my witte | should take vppon it antiquitie this E 2v
once, and nothing else in my defence I will alledge but *Veritas Temporis filia*, it is onely time that reuealeth all things: wherefore, though, in as short time as a man may learne to run at Tilt, I could haue gone thorough with inuention inough to haue run him thorough & confounded him, yet I must haue some further time to get perfect intelligence of his life and conuersation, one true point whereof, well set downe, wil more excruciate & commacerate him, than knocking him about the eares with his owne stile in a hundred sheetes of paper. And this let me informe the Iury ouer and aboue, that age is no argument to make anie thing ill: & though graybeard drumbling ouer a Discourse be no crime I am subiect too, yet, in the behalfe of the crazed wits of that stamp, I will vphold that it is no vpright conclusion to say whatsoeuer is long laboured is lowsie and not worth a straw; since by that reason you might conclude *Dianas* Temple at *Ephesus* to haue been a stinking Doue-cote or a Hog-sty, because it was 220. yere in building by the *Amazons*. Anie time this 17. yere my aduersary, *Frigius Pedagogus*, hath laid waste paper in pickle, and publisht some rags of treatises against Master *Lilly* and mee, which I will iustifie haue lyne by him euer since the great matches of bowling and shooting on the *Thames* vpon the yce. But for my part, trie mee who will, and let anie man but finde mee meate and drinke, with the appurtenances, while I am playing the paper stainer and fishing for pearle in the bottome of my tar-boxe, and but free me from those outward encumbrances of cares that ouer-whelme mee, and let this Paraliticke Quacksaluer fill ten thousand tunnes with | *scelerata sinapis*, shrewish snap- E 3
pish mustard, as *Plautus* calls it, or botch and cobble vp as manie volumes as he can betwixt this and doomesday, and he shall see I will haue euerie one of them in the nose straight, and giue as suddaine extemporall answeres as

6 innention *Q*. 14 crime, I . . . too, yet *Gro*. 20–1 *Read perhaps* this 7. yere *?*

Pope *Siluesters* or Frier *Bacons* brazen head, which he would haue set vp on the Plain of *Salsbury*. As touching the vain hopes and had I wist Court humors which you say I follow, there is no Husbandman but tills and sowes in hope of a good crop, though manie times hee is deluded with a bad Haruest. Court humours, like cutting of haire, must either bee obserued when the Moone is new or in the full, or else no man will haue his hands full that gleanes after them. Not vnlikely it is they so question you about the cause of my long stay; and their wits being dull frozen and halfe dead for want of matter of delight, (wherof *Poules Church-yard* was neuer worse fuelled,) like those in *Florida* or diuers Countreyes of the *Negroes*, that kindle fire by rubbing two sticks one against another, so, to re-create and enkindle their decayed spirites, they care not how they set *Haruey* and mee on fire one against another, or whet vs on to consume our selues. But this Cock-fight once past, I vow to turne a new leafe, and take another order with them, resoluing to take vp for the Word or *Motto* of my patience, *Perdere posse sat est*, it is enough that it is in my power to call a Sessions and trusse him vp when I list, concluding with the Poet, *Dum desint hostes, desit quoque causa triumphi*, as long as we haue no enemies to trouble vs, it is no matter for anie Triumphs or bonfires: and as it was said of the blacke Princes souldiers, that they
E 3v car'd for no spoyle but gold and siluer, | or feathers, so euer after I will care for no conquest or victorie which carries not with it a present rich possibilitie of raysing my decayed fortunes, and Caualier flourishing with a feather in my cappe (hey gallanta) in the face of enuie and generall Worlds opinion. As newfangled and idle, and prostituting my pen like a Curtizan, is the next *Item* that you taxe me with; well it may and it may not bee so, for neither will I deny it nor will I grant it; onely thus farre Ile goe with you, that twise or thrise in a month, when *res est angusta domi*, the bottome of my purse is turnd downeward, & my conduit of incke will no longer flowe

for want of reparations, I am faine to let my Plow stand still in the midst of a furrow, and follow some of these newfangled *Galiardos* and *Senior Fantasticos*, to whose amorous *Villanellas* and *Quipassas* I prostitute my pen in hope of gaine; but otherwise there is no newfanglenes in mee but pouertie, which alone maketh mee so vnconstant to my determined studies; nor idlenesse, more then discontented idle trudging from place to place, too and fro, and prosecuting the meanes to keep mee from idlenesse. My Doctour *Vanderhulk*, peraduenture, out of this my indigent confession may take occasion to work piteously: It is no matter, I care not, for many a faire day agoe haue I proclaimed my selfe to the worlde *Piers Pennilesse*, and sufficient petigrees can I shewe to prooue him my elder brother. What more remaineth behinde of the condemned estate I stand in, till this *Domine Dewse-ace* be conswapped, & sent with a paire of newe shooes on his feete and a scrowle in his hand to saint *Peter*, like a *Russian* when he is buried; as also of the immortality of the Print, & | how though not E 4 this age, yet another age three yeares after the building vp the top of Powles steeple, may baffull and infamize my name when I am in heauen & shall neuer feele it, in foure words I will defeate and lay desolate. Forsooth, (bee it knowne vnto you) I haue prouided harping yrons to catch this great Whale; and this *Gobin a grace ap Hannikin* by Gods grace shall be met and combatted. Yet this I must tell you, sir, in the way of friendship twixt you & mee, your graue fatherly forecasting *Forasmuches*, and vrging of posteritie and after ages whose cradle-makers are not yet begot, that they may doo this, and they may doo that, is a stale imitation of this heathen *Gregorie Huldricke*, my *Antigonist*. And thus I trust all reckonings are euen twixt you and mee.

Impor: Nay, I promise thee, thou hast giuen me my Pasport, and I know not what to say, now thou sayst he shall be answerd.

Benti: I am very glad, for thy credits sake, that thou

perseuerst in that purpose, but more glad would I bee to see it abroad and publisht.

Resp: Content your selfe, so you shall; although it hath gone abroad with his Keeper any time this quarter of this yeare; but as profounde a reason as any I haue alleag'd yet, of the long stay and keeping it backe, was that I might fulfill that olde verse in *Ouid*, *Ad metam properate simul; tunc plena voluptas*, as much to say as march together merrily, and then there will be lusty dooings and sound sport; so did I stay for some company to march with mee, that wee might haue made round worke, and gone thorough stitch: but since all this while they come not forwarde
E 4v according to pro-|mise, but breake their daye, as the King of *Spaine* did with *Sebastian*, King of *Portugall*, about his meeting him at *Guandulopeia*, when they should haue gone together to the Battaile of *Alcazar*, *veiah diabolo*, Saint *George* and a tickling pipe of *Tobacco*, and then pell mell, all alone haue amongst them, if there were ten thousand of them.

Carn: Faith, well said, I perceiue thou fearst no colours.

Resp: Whatsoeuer I feare, Ile force *Ienkin Heyderry derry* both to feare and beare my colours, and suite his cheekes (if there be one pimple of shame in them) in a perfecter red than anie *Venice* dye.

Consil: Vengeance on that vnluckie dye, may hee crie, like a swearing shredded gamester, that looseth at one set all that euer he is worth: but I pry thee (in honestie), if thou hast anie of the papers of thy Booke about thee, shew vs some of them, that, like a great Inquest, we may deliuer our verdit before it come to the *Omnigatherum* of Towne and Countrey.

Respon: Then gather your selues together in a ring, and, *Grand Consiliadore*, be you the grand commander of silence (which is a chiefe Office in the Emperour of *Russiaes* Court), for here it is in my sleeue that will besliue him: yet, if I be not deceiued, some part of the Epistle I haue read to you heretofore.

Import: I, to the Barber: such a thing I well remember, but what Barber it was, or where he dwelt, directly thou neuer toldst vs.

Respon: Yes, that I haue both towld and bookt him too: neuertheles, (for your better vnderstanding,) know it is one *Dick Litchfield*, the Barber of *Trinity Colledge*, | a rare ingenuous odde merry Greeke, who (as I haue F 1 heard) hath translated my *Piers Pennilesse* into the *Macaronicall* tongue; wherein I wish hee had been more tongue-tide, since in some mens incensed iudgements it hath too much tongue alreadie, being aboue 2. yeres since maimedly translated into the French tongue, and in the English tongue so rascally printed and ill interpreted as heart can thinke or tongue can tell. But I cannot tell how it is growen to a common fashion amongst a number of our common ill liuers, that whatsoeuer tongue (like a spaniels tongue) doth not licke their aged soares and fawne on them, they conclude it to be an adders tongue to sting them: and wheras wittie *Aesope* did buy vp all the tongues in the market hee could spie, as the best meate hee esteemed of, they (by all meanes possible), euen out of the buckles of theyr girdles, labor to plucke forth the tongs, for feare they should plucke in their vnsatiate greedie paunches too straight.

Carn: O, peace, peace, exercise thy writing tongue, and let vs haue no more of this plaine English.

Resp: With a good will, agreed: &, like *Mahomets* angels in the *Alcheron*, that are said to haue eares stretching from one end of heauen to the other, let your attention be indefinite & without end, for thus I begin.

Mascula virorum, Saint *Mildred* and Saint *Agapite*! more Letters yet from the Doctor? nay, then we shall be sure to haue a whole *Grauesend* Barge full of Newes, and heare soundly of all matters on both eares. Out vppon it, heere's a packet of Epistling, as bigge as a Packe of Woollen | cloth, or a stack of salt-fish. Carrier, F 1v

didst thou bring it by wayne, or on horse-backe? By wayne, sir, & it hath crackt me three axeltrees, wherefore I hope you will consider me the more. *Heauie* newes, *heauie* newes, take them againe, I will neuer open them. Ah, quoth he (deepe sighing), to mee, I wot, they are the heauiest, whose Cart hath cryde creake vnder them fortie times euerie furlong: wherefore, if you bee a good man, rather make mud walls with them, mend high wayes, or damme vp quagmires with them, than thus they shuld endammage mee to my eternall vndooing. I, hearing the fellow so forlorne and out of comfort with his luggage, gaue him his *Charons Naulum*, or ferry three half pence, & so dismist him to go to the place from whence he came, and play at *Lodum*. But when I came to vnrip and vnbumbast this *Gargantuan* bag-pudding, and found nothing in it but dogs-tripes, swines liuers, oxe galls, and sheepes gutts, I was in a bitterer chafe than anie Cooke at a long Sermon when his meate burnes. Doo the Philosophers (said I to my selfe) hold that letters are no burden, & the lightest and easiest houshold stuffe a man can remooue? Ile be sworne vpon *Anthonie Gueuaras* golden Epistles, if they will, there's not so much toyle in remoouing the siedge from a Towne, as in taking an inuentorie suruay of anie one of them. Letters doo you terme them? they may be Letters patents well enough for their tediousnes: for no lecture at Surgeons Hall vppon an Anatomie may compare with them in longitude. Why, they are longer than the Statutes of clothing, or the Charter of *London*. Will ye haue the simple truth, without anie deuices or playing vpon it? *Gabriell Haruey*,
F 2 my stale Gull, & the one-|ly pure Orator in senseles riddles or *Packstonisme* that euer this our litle shred or seperate angle of the world suckled vp, not content to haue the naked scalp of his credit new couered with a false periwig of commendations, and so returne to his fathers house in peace and there sustaine his hungry bodie with wythred

5 sighing) to mee I wot they *Q*: sighing) to mee, I wot, they *Coll., Gro.*

scallions and greene cheese, hath since that time deepely forsworne himself in an arbitrement of peace, &, after the ancient custome of Scottish amitie, vnawares proclaimed open warres a fresh in a whole *Alexandrian* Librarie of waste paper. *Piers his Supererogation, or Nashes Saint Fame*, pretely & quirkingly he christens it; and yet not so much to quirke or crosse me thereby, as to blesse himselfe and make his booke sell, did hee giue it that title: for hauing found, by much shipwrackt experience, that no worke of his, absolute vnder hys owne name, would passe, he vsed heretofore to drawe *Sir Philip Sydney*, *Master Spencer*, and other men of highest credit, into euerie pild pamphlet he set foorth; and now that he can no longer march vnder their Ensignes, (from which I haue vtterly chac'd him in my *Foure Letters intercepted*,) he takes a new lesson out of *Plutarch*, in making benefit of his enemie, & borrows my name, and the name of *Piers Pennilesse* (one of my Bookes), which he knew to be most saleable, (passing at the least through the pikes of sixe Impressions,) to helpe his bedred stuffe to limpe out of *Powles Churchyard*, that else would haue laine vnrepriuably spittled at the Chandlers. Such a huge drifat of duncerie it is he hath dungd vp against me, as was neuer seene since the raigne of *Auerrois*. O, tis an vnconscionable vast gor-
bellied Volume, bigger bulkt than a Dutch Hoy, & | farre F 2v
more boystrous and cumbersome than a payre of *Swissers* omnipotent galeaze breeches. But it shuld seeme he is asham'd of the incomprehensible corpulencie thereof himselfe, for at the ende of the 199. Page hee beginnes with one 100. againe, to make it seeme little, (if I lye you may look and conuince mee;) & in halfe a quire of paper besides hath left the Pages vnfigured. I haue read that the Giant *Antæus* Shield askt a whole Elephants hyde to couer it; *bona fide* I vtter it, scarce a whole Elephants hyde & a half would serue for a couer to this *Gogmagog*

18-9 *Qy. read* Bookes which . . . saleable, passing? 30 one 100.] *Qy. read* 100. *or* one hundred?

Iewish *Thalmud* of absurdities. Nay, giue the diuell his due, and there an ende, the Giant that *Magellan* found at *Caput sanctæ crucis*, or Saint *Christophers* picture at *Antwerpe*, or the monstrous images of *Sesostres*, or the *Aegiptian Rapsinates*, are but dwarffes in comparison of it. But one Epistle thereof, to *Iohn Wolfe*, the Printer, I tooke and weighed in an Ironmongers scales, and it counterpoyseth a Cade of Herring and three Holland Cheeses. You may beleeue me if you will, I was faine to lift my chamber doore off the hindges, onely to let it in, it was so fulsome a fat *Bonarobe* and terrible *Rounceuall*. Once I thought to haue cald in a Cooper that went by and cald for worke, and bid him hoope it about like the tree at *Grays-Inne* gate, for feare it should burst, it was so beastly; but then I remembred mee the boyes had whoopt it sufficiently about the streetes, and so I let it alone for that instant. Credibly it was once rumord about the Court, that the Guard meant to trie masteries with it before the Queene, and, in stead of throwing the sledge or the hammer, to hurle it foorth at the armes
F 3 ende for a wager. I, I, euerie one maye | hammer vpon it as they please, but if they will hit the nayle on the head pat, as they should, to nothing so aptly can they compare it as *Africke*, which being an vnbounded stretcht out Continent, equiualent in greatnes with most Quarters of the Earth, yet neuertheles is (for the most part) ouerspred with barraine sands: so this his Babilonian towre or tome of confutation, swelling in dimension & magnitude aboue all the prodigious commentaries and familiar Epistles that euer he wrote, is, notwithstanding, more drie, barraine, and sandie in substance, than them all. Peruse but the Ballet *In Sandon soyle as late befell*, and you will be more soundly edified by sixe parts. Sixe and thirtie sheetes it comprehendeth, which with him is but sixe and thirtie full points; for he makes no more difference twixt a sheete of paper and a full point, than there is twixt two blacke puddings for a pennie,

and a pennie for a paire of blacke puddings. Foule euill goe with it, I wonder you will prate and tattle of sixe and thirtie full points so compendiously trust vp (as may bee) in sixe and thirtie sheetes of paper, when as those are but the shortest prouerbs of his wit; for he neuer bids a man good morrow, but he makes a speach as long as a proclamation; nor drinkes to anie, but he reads a Lecture of three howers long *De Arte bibendi.* O, tis a precious apothegmaticall Pedant, who will finde matter inough to dilate a whole daye of the first inuention of *Fy, fa, fum,* I smell the bloud of an English-man: and if hee had a thousand pound, hee hath vowd to consume it euerie doyt, to discouer and search foorth certaine rare Mathematicall Experimentes; as for example, that of | tying a flea in a chaine, (put in the last edition of F 3v the great Chronicle,) which if by anie industrie hee could atchieue, his owne name beeing so generally odious throughout *Kent* and Christendome, hee would presently transforme & metamorphize it from Doctour *Haruey* to Doctour *Ty,* (of which stile there was a famous Musition some few yeres since,) resoluing, as the last cast of his maintenaunce, altogether to liue by carrying that Flea, like a monster, vp and downe the countrey, teaching it to doo trickes, hey, come aloft, Iack, like an ape ouer the chaine. If you would haue a flea for the nonce that you might keepe for a breeder, why this were a stately flea indeede to get a braue race of fleas on; your fly in a boxe is but a drumble-bee in cõparison of it; with no expence at all, on your chin (like a witches familiar) you might feed it, and let the chaine hang downe on your breast, like a stale greasie Courtiers chaine with one strop. Alacke and weladay, too too inconsiderately aduised was this our Poeticall *Gabriell,* when, hexameterly entranced, he cride out,

O blessed health, blessed wealth, and blessed abundance,
O, that I had these three for the losse of 30. Commensments.

29 at all (on your chin like *Q, Coll., Gro.*

when he should haue exclaimd,

O, that I had this flea for the losse of 30. Commensments.

Peraduenture he thinkes thus slightly to steale away with a Flea in his eare, but I must flea his asses skin ouer his eares a little handsomer ere wee part. Those that bee so disposed to take a view of him, ere hee bee come to the full Midsommer Moone and raging *Calentura* of his wretchednes, here let them behold his liuely counterfet and portraiture, not in the pantofles of his prosperitie, as he was when he libeld against my | Lord of *Oxford*, but in the single-soald pumpes of his aduersitie, with his gowne cast off, vntrussing, and readie to beray himselfe, vpon the newes of the going in hand of my booke.

The picture of Gabriell Harvey, as hee is readie to let fly vpon Aiax.

F 4

If you aske why I haue put him in round hose, that vsually weares Venetians; It is because I would make him looke more dapper & plump and round vpon it, wheras otherwise he looks like a case of tooth-pikes, or a Lute pin put in a sute of apparell. Gaze vppon him who list, for, I tell you, I am not a little proud of my workmanship, and, though I say it, I haue handled it so neatly, and so sprightly, and withall ouzled gidumbled, muddled, and drizled it so finely, that I forbid euer a *Hauns Boll*, *Hauns Holbine*, or *Hauns Mullier* of them all (let them but play

22 Venetians? It *Q.* Venetians? it *Coll.*, *Gro.* 34, 35 Hanns (*thrice*) *Coll.*, *Gro.*

true with the face) to amend it, or come within fortie foote of it. Away, away, *Blockland*, *Trusser*, *Francis de Murre*, and the whole generation of them will sooner catch the murre and the pose tenscore times, ere they doo a thing one quarter so masterly. Yea, (without *Kerry merry buffe* be it spoken,) put a whole million of *Iohannes Mabusiusses* of them together, and they shall not | handle their matters F 4v at ‡ sharpe so handsomly as I.

‡ Painters sharp handling.

Benti: From sharpe to come to the poynt: as farre as I can learne, thou hast all the aduantage of the quarell, since both the first and last fire-brand of dissention betwixt you was tost by the Doctour.

Respond: Tossing (by your fauour) is proper to the sea; and so (like the sea) doth hee tosse water, and not fire.

Benti: That is tost or cast water on fire: if hee did so, he is the wiser.

Respon: On a fire of sea-cole, you meane, to make it burne brighter.

Benti: A fire that the sea will coole, or *Haruey* find water inough to quench, if you looke not too it the better.

Respon: I warrant, take you no care, Ile looke to his water well inough.

Imp: But me thought euen now thou contemndst him, because hee tost water and not fire; whereas, in my iudgement, there is not a hairs difference betwixt being burnd and being drownd, since death is the best of either, and the paine of dying is not more tedious of the one than of the other.

Respon: O, you must not conclude so desperate, for euerie tossing billow brings not death in the mouth of it: besides, if the worst come to the worst, a good swimmer may doo much, whereas fire *rapit omnia secum*, sweepeth cleane where it seazeth.

Importun: I, but haue you not heard that broken peece of a vearse, *Currenti cede furori*, giue place to fire or furie, and you shall quickly see it consume it selfe? |

Respon: A stale puddings end; by that reason you may G 1

as well come vpon mee with *Tempus edax rerum, quid non consumitis anni?* As though there is anie thing so eternall and permanent, that consumes and dies not after all his fire of life is spent. For mee, I know I shall liue, and not die, till I haue digd the graues of all my enemies; and that the fire of my wit will not bee spent, till (as amongst the *Samogetes* and *Chaldæans*) I get it to be worshipt as a god of those whom it most cõfounds: and as diuers of the *Aethiopians* curse the sunne when it riseth, and worship it when it setteth, so, how-euer they curse and raile vpon mee in the beginning, I will compell them to fall downe and worship mee ere I cease or make an end, crying vpon their knees *Ponuloi nashe*, which is, in the *Russian* tongue, Haue mercie vpon vs: but I will not haue mercie or be pacifide, till I haue left them so miserable that very horses shal hardly abstaine from weeping for them, as they did for the death of *Cæsar*; and if they haue but euer a dog that lou'd them, he shall die for griefe, to view his masters in that plight.

Consil: In anie case leaue this big thunder of words, wherein thou vainly spendst thy spirits before the push of the battaile; and if thou hast anie such exhaled heat of reuenge in the vpper region of thy braine, let it lighten and flash presently in thy aduersaries face, and not a farre off threaten thus idely.

Respon: Threaten idely, said you? Nay, sure, Ile performe as much as hee that went about to make the dyuing boate twixt *Douer* and *Callis*, and as lightning and thunder neuer lightly goe asunder, so in my stile will I temper them both
G 1v togither, mixing thunder with ligh-|tning, and lightning with thunder, that is, in dreadfull terror with stripes, & sound thrusts with lowd threats. Tell mee, haue you a minde to anie thing in the Doctors Booke? speake the word, and I will helpe you to it vpon the naile; whether it bee his words, his metaphors, his methode, his matter, his meeters. Make your choyce, for I meane to vse you most stately.

31 *Qy. read* is, dreadfull?

Carn: Then, good gentle Frend, (if you will) let 's haue halfe a dozen spare-ribs of his rethorique, with tart sauce of taunts correspondent, a mightie chyne of his magnificentest elocution, and a whole surloyne of his substantiallest sentences and similes.

Resp: And shall; I am for you; Ile serue you of the best, you may assure your selfe: with a continuat *Tropologicall* speach I will astonish you, all to bee-spiced & dredged with sentences and allegories, not hauing a crum of any cost bestowed vpon it more than the Doctors owne cooquerie.

Import: Tropologicall! O embotched and truculent. No French gowtie-leg, with a gamash vpon it, is so gotchie and boystrous.

Consi: It sounds like the ten-fold ecchoing rebound of a dubble Cannon in the aire, and is able to spoyle anie little mouth that offers to pronounce it.

Resp: Gentlemen, take God in your minde, & nere feare you this word *Tropologicall*, for it is one of *Dick Harueys* sheepes trattells in his *Lambe of God.*

Imp: I, *Dick Harueys*, that may wel be; for I neuer heard there was more in him than would hard and scant serue him to make a Collation: but for the Doctor, trie it who will, his stile is not easie to be matcht, beeing commended by diuers (of good iudgement) | for the best that G 2 ere they read.

Respond: Amongst the which number is a red bearded thrid-bare Caualier, who (in my hearing) at an ordinarie, as he sat fumbling the dice after supper, fell into these tearmes (no talke before leading him to it): There is such a Booke of *Harueys* (meaning this his last Booke against mee), as I am a Souldiour and a Gentleman, I protest, I neuer met with the like contriued pile of pure English. O, it is deuine and most admirable, & so farre beyond all that euer he published heretofore, as day-light beyond candle-light, or tinsell or leafe-gold aboue arsedine; with a great many more excessiue praises he bestowed vpon it: which

29 it) There *Q.* 35 *Qy. read* tinsell of leafe-gold *?*

authentically I should haue beleeued, if, immediately vpon the nicke of it, I had not seene him shrug his shoulders, and talk of going to the *Bathe*, and after, like a true Pandar (so much the fitter to be one of *Gabriels* Patrons), grew in commending to yong gentlemen two or three of the most detested loathsom whores about *London*, for peereles beauteous Paragons & the pleasingest wenches in the world; wherby I guest, his iudgment might be infected as wel as his body; & he that wold not stick so to extoll stale rotten lac'd mutton, will, like a true *Millanoys*, sucke figges out of an asses fundament, or doo anie thing. I more than halfe suspect those whom you preferre for the best iudgements are of the same stampe; or, if they be not, I wil set a new stampe on their iudgments, hauing (to let them see their dotage and error, and what his stile is they make such a miracle of) musterd together, in one galimafrie or short Oration, most of the ridiculous senseles sentences, finicall flaunting phrases, and termagant inkhorne tearmes
G 2 throughout | his Booke, and fram'd it in his owne praise and apologie, because I would cut his cloake with the Wooll, though *Lilly* and *Nashe* neuer so cry *Non placet* thereat. Auditors, awake your attention, and here expect the cleare repurified soule of truth, without the least shadow of fiction; the vnflattered picture of Pedantisme, that hath no one smile or crinkle more than it should: for I deeply auow, on my faith and saluation, if he were a Doctor of gold, here in his owne clothes he shal appeare to you, & not so much as a knot to his winding sheete, or corner tip to the smallest seluage of his garments I will insert; only a needle and thred to trusse vp his trinkets more roundly (vppon better aduice) I am determined to lend him, in hope it may be his thred of life, and euen by that single bountie dubble stitch him vnto me to be my deuoted beadsman till death, but not a pinnes head or a moaths pallet roome gets he of anie farther contribution. Hem, cleare your throates, and spit soundly; for now the pageant begins, and the stuffe by whole Cart-loads comes in.

An Oration, including most of the miscreated words and sentences in the Doctors Booke.

*RE*nowmed *and amicable Readers, from whom it is not concealed, that Silence is a slaue in a chaine, and the Pen the hot shot of the musket:*

Benti: Marke, marke, a sentence, a sentence.

Orati:

that, when the caitife Planet raigneth, of Punical war ther is no end, & of the coũter-tenor of an offended Sirẽ *no* ela. |

Carne: Theres two; keepe tally. G 3

Orati:

Tell mee (I pray you), was euer Pegasus *a cow in a cage,* Mercury *a mouse in a cheese, Dexteritie a dog in a dublet, Ledgerdemaine a slow-worme, Viuacitie a lazy bones, Entelechie a slug-plum, Humanitie a spittle-man, Rhetorique a dummerell, Poetrie a tumbler, Historie a bangrout, Philosophie a broker?*

Consili: I, marry, now it workes.

Respon: I bely him not a word; iust as it is there, in his owne text it comes together.

Orati:

Why should I then, that haue been an incorruptible Areopage,

Benti: Stay that same *Areopage*, hee is a forreyner newe come ouer: let vs examine him if hee bee the Queenes friend or no, ere he passe.

Orati:

without anie pregnant cause, be thus prestigiously besiedged and marked with an Asteriske *by them that are superficiall in Theory?*

Carne: On my vertuous chastitie & in veritie, pregnant, prestigious, superficiall, and pretie.

11 *Carn: c.w.* 13 I *Q.*

Orati:

In manie extraordinarie remarkeable energeticall lines and perfunctorie pamphlets, both in ambidexteritie and omnidexteritie, together with matters adiophorall, haue I disbalased my minde, & not let slip the least occasionet of aduantage, to acquaint the world with my pregnant propositions and resolute Aphorismes.

Consili: That word Aphorismes *Greenes* Exequutors
G 3v may claime from him; for while hee liu'd he had | no goods nor chattles in commoner vse than it.

Import: Away, away, I cannot be perswaded hee wold euer come forth with anie one of these balductum bastardly termes.

Respon: You cannot? then cannot I be perswaded that you cannot bee perswaded; since I haue as much reason not to credit your bare assertion, where you say you are perswaded it is not so, as you to distrust my deep vehement protestatiõs, wherin I wold perswade you it is so: but if none of these perswasions or protestations may preuaile with your incredulitie, bring me to the booke, if you please, (the Doctours Booke *subintelligitur*,) and that will soone resolue you.

Import: It shall not need; I beleeue thee, since thou standst in it so seriously: yet I wonder thou setst not downe in figures in the margent, in what line, page, & folio a man might find euerie one of these fragments, which would haue much satisfied thy Readers.

Respon: What, make an *Errata* in the midst of my Booke, and haue my margent bescratcht (like a Merchants booke) with these roguish Arsemetrique gibbets or flesh-hookes, and cyphers or round oos, lyke pismeeres egges? Content your selfe, I will neuer do it: or if I were euer minded to doo it, I could not, since, (as I told you some few leaues before,) in more than a quarter of that his tumbrell of Confutation, he hath left the Pages vnfigured; foreseeing by deuination (belike) that I should come to disfigure them.

Consil: I warrant thee I, thou hast figur'd him well enough as it is; and if thou hadst tooken the paynes of quotations or figures, as he would haue thee, I doubt whether there be anie would euer haue bestowed so | much G 4 paines to conferre or examine them.

Carnead: On, forward, good *Piers Respondent*, with your Oration, for I am hungrie vpon it; and with this I haue heard alreadie my appetite is nothing stancht, but rather whetted.

Respond: Beare witnes, my masters, if hee dye of a surfet, I cannot doo withall; it is his owne seeking, not mine: as long as I haue it, I am no niggard of it, at all aduentures I will set it before him.

Oration.

Omitting (sicco pede) *my encomiasticall Orations, and mercuriall and martiall discourses of the terribilitie of war, in the actiue & cheualrous vaine, euery way cõparable with the Caualcads of* Bellerophon, *or* Don Alphõso d'Aualos, *my Seraphicall visions in Queene Poetrie, queint theorickes, melancholy proiects, and pragmaticall discourses; whose beau-desert and rich œconomie the inspiredest Heliconists &* Arch-patrons *of our new Omniscians haue not stickt to equipage with the ancient Quinquagenarians, Centurions, and Chiliarkes: notwithstanding all which* Idees *of monstrous excellencie, some smirking Singularists, brag Reformists, and glicking Remembrancers (not with the multiplying spirite of the Alchumist, but the villanist) seeke to bee masons of infinite contradiction; they (I say) with their frumping* Contras, *tickling interiections, together with their vehement incensiues and allectiues, as if they would be the onely* A per se a's, *or great* A's *of puissance, like* Alexander, *(whom yet some of our moderne Worthies disdaine to haue sceptred the* est Amen *of valure,) commense redoubtable Monomachies against mee, and the dead honnie-bee my brother.* |

Bentiu: A per se, con per se, tittle, est, Amen! Dost G 4v

thou not feele thy selfe spoyld? why, he comes vppon thee (man) with a whole Horn-booke.

Import: What a supernaturall *Hibble de beane* it is, to call his brother a dead honnie-bee!

Consil: I laughd at nothing so much as that word *Arch-patrons.* Goe thy wayes, thought I; thou art a Ciuilian, and maist well fetch metaphors from the Arches, but thou shalt neuer fish anie monie from thence whilest thou liu'st.

Carn: Troth, I would hee might for mee (that's all the harme I wish him), for then we neede neuer wish the Playes at *Powles* vp againe, but if we were wearie with walking, and loth to goe too farre to seeke sport, into the Arches we might step, and heare him plead; which would bee a merrier Comedie than euer was old Mother *Bomby.* As, for an instance: suppose hee were to sollicite some cause against Martinists, were it not a iest as right sterling as might be, to see him stroke his beard thrice, & begin thus? *Graue Heliconists, seraphicall Omniscians, & the only Centurions, Quinquagenarians, and Chiliarks of our time; may it please you to be aduertised, how that certaine smirking Singularists, brag Reformists, and glicking Remembrancers, not with the multiplying spirit of the Alchumist, but the villanist, haue sought to be Masons of infinite contradiction, and with their melancholy proiects, frumping* contras, *tickling interiections, and vehement incensiues & allectiues, in all pragmaticall terribilitie, commense redoubtable Monomachies against you, & the beau-desert & Idees of your encomiasticall Church gouernment, and particular & peculiar œconomies.* O, we should haue
H 1 the Pro-|ctors and Registers as busie with their Table-books as might bee, to gather phrases, and all the boyes in the Towne would be his clients to follow him. Marry, it were necessarie the Queenes Decypherer should bee one of the High Commissioners; for else other-while he would blurt out such *Brachmannicall fuldde-fubs* as no bodie should be able to vnderstand him.

3 what *Q.* 28 of of *Q.* 34 High] *Gro.*: high *Q, Coll.*

Respon: You make too long gloses on the text, attend how it followes.

Oration.

But Mercury sublimed is some-way a coy & stout fellow,

Ben: Verie true, for it is a good medicine for the itch.

Oration.

and spite as close a secretarie as a scummer,

Carnead: Secretarie Spite and Secretarie Scummer, giue me your hands, I beseech you: what Noble-men about Court doo you belong too?

Oration.

Resolution a forward mate, and Valour a braue man;

Bentiu: O braue man, will you buy a braue dog?

Oration.

Impudencie and Slaunder, two arrant vagabonds.

Carnead: I crie you mercie, I alwaies tooke them for the two Brothers.

Oration.

The world neuer such a Scogin as now, and the diuell neuer such a knaue as now.

Bentiu: What a diuell ayles he to rayle so vppon a poore painfull diuell, that dooes for him all he can?

Respond: Whist, silence on euerie hand; for here is the very *S. Georges* robes of rhetorique, a speach that I haue tooke vp by the lumpe, as it lies in his Booke. |

Oration. H 1v

What's the saluation of Dauid Gorge? *A Nullitie. What the deification of* H. N.? *A Nullitie. What the glorification of* Ket? *A Nullitie. What the sanctification of* Browne? *A Nullitie. What the communitie of* Barrow? *A Nullitie. What the plausibilitie of Martin? A Nullitie; yea, and a wofull Nullitie, and a piteous Nullitie.*

4 *fellow. Q, Coll., Gro.* 7 *seertarie Q.* 9 hands: I beseech you, what *Q, Coll., Gro.* 31 Martin *Coll., Gro.*

Carnead: What a piteous noyse, like a spirit in a wal, doth he here make with his Nullities? I should sure run out of my wits, if one should come to my chamber doore at midnight, with nothing but such a dismall note of A Nullitie, a Nullitie.

Oration.

Nay, be you Load-stones to exhale what I say. Martin *is a* Guerra, Browne *a browne-bill, &* Barrow *a wheel-barrow;* Ket *a kight,* H. N. *an* o. k.; *and, to conclude, as the Wheele was an ancient* Hierogliphicke *amongst the* Aegyptians, *so some tooles are false Prophets.*

Bentiu: That's the cause wee haue so manie bad work-men now a daies: put vp a Bill against them next Parliament.

Import: But if he had said, manie men haue some tooles that are litle for their profit, he had hit the mark somewhat nearer.

Oration.

Iudas *the* Gaulonite *in the raigne of* Herod *was a hot toast,*

Carn: It cannot choose but he lou'd ale well, then.

Oration.

and present examples we haue, as hot as fresh, that he that hath time hath life. |

H 2 *Consil:* In good time be it spoken.

Import: A good admonition to Musitions to keepe time with their instruments, if they be desirous to liue long.

Oration.

Duke Allocer *on his lustie cock-horse is a hot familiar,*

Carnead: Let him but liue in *London* halfe a yeare, and there be them that wil take him downe and coole him, were he twice as hot.

Oration.

and no such Arte memoratiue as the crab-tree deske:

Consil: No? what say you to a crab-tree cudgell? if it

were well husbanded about his shoulders, I thinke it would make him remember it time enough.

Oration.

for, vnder correction of the arte notorie be it spoken, enuie is a soaking register, and mortall fewde the claw of an adamant.

Import: Hath adamant such sharpe clawes? that makes it hold yron so fast when it hath it.

Respon: Harke, harke, how hee praiseth *Sir Philip Sidney.*

Oration.

Sweete Sir Philip Sidney, *he was the Gentleman of curtesie, and the verie Esquire of industrie.*

Carnea: The Esquire of industrie? O scabbed scald squire (*Scythian Gabriell*) as thou art, so vnder-foot to commend the cleerest myrrour of true Nobilitie.

Consil: What a mischiefe does he taking anie mans name in his vlcerous mouth? that, being so festred and ranckled with barbarisme, is able to rust and canker it, were it neuer so resplendent. |

Respon: In all his praises he is the most fore-spoken H 2v and vnfortunate vnder heauen, & those whom he feruentest striues to grace and honour he most dishonors and disgraceth by some vncircumcised sluttish epithite or other: and euen to talke treason he may be drawn vnwares, and neuer haue anie such intent, for want of discretion how to manage his words.

Bent: It is a common scoffe amongst vs, to call anie foolish prodigall yong gallant, the gentleman or floure of curtesie; & (if it were wel scand) I am of the opinion, with the same purpose hee did it to scoffe and deride *Sir Philip Sidney*, in calling him the Gentleman of curtesie, and the verie Esquire of industrie.

Respond: Poore tame-witted silly *Quirko*, on my conscience I dare excuse him, hee had neuer anie such thought,

13 *industrie? Q, Gro.*: *industrie! Coll.* 21 *Respond: c.w.*

but did it in as meere earnest as euer in commendation of himselfe and his brothers hee writ these two verses,

Singular are these three, Iohn, Richard, Gabriel Haruy,
For Logique, Philosophie, Rhetorique, Astronomie;

as also, in like innocent wel meaning, added he this that ensues.

Oration.

His Entelechy was fine Greece, and the finest Tuscanisme in graine. Although I could tickle him with a contrarie president, where he casts Tuscanisme, as a horrible crime, in a Noble-mans teeth.

Carnead: Bodie of mee, this is worse than all the rest, he sets foorth *Sir Philip Sidney* in the verie style of a Diers Signe. As if hee should haue said:|

H 3 HEERE WITHIN THIS PLACE IS ONE THAT DIETH ALL KINDE OF ENTELECHY IN FINE GREECE, AND THE FINEST TVSCANISME IN GRAINE THAT MAY BEE, OR ANY COLOVR ELSE YE WOLD DESIRE. AND SO GOD SAVE THE QVEENE.

Bentiu: More Copie, more Copie; we leese a great deale of time for want of Text.

Imp: Apace, out with it; and let vs nere stand pausing or looking about, since we are thus far onward.

Oration.

But some had rather be a Pol-cat with a stinking stirre, than a Muske-cat with gracious fauour.

Bentiu: I smell him, I smell him: the wrongs that thou hast offred him are so intollerable, as they would make a Cat speake; therefore looke to it, *Nashe*, for with one Polcat perfume or another hee will poyson thee, if he be not able to answere thee.

4 *Astronomie. Q, Coll., Gro.* 30 *fauour*] *sauour Coll., Gro.*

Carnead: Pol-cat and Muske-cat? there wants but a Cat a mountaine, and then there would be old scratching.

Bentiu: I, but not onely no ordinarie Cat, but a Muske-cat, and not onely a Muske-cat, but a *Muske-cat with gracious fauour* (which sounds like a Princes stile *Dei gratia*): not *Tibault* or *Isegrim*, Prince of Cattes, were euer endowed with the like Title. |

Respon: Since you can make so much of a little, you shall haue more of it. H 3v

Oration.

To vtter the entrayles of a spherical heart in few sillables, Muske is a sweete curtezan, and sugar and honey daintie hipocrytes.

Bentiu: O, sweeter and sweeter, some bodie lend me a hand-kercher, that I may carrie some home in my pocket for my little God-sonne.

Carnead: Madame Muske, if you be a curtezan (as the Doctour informes vs), sure you haue drest a number of my friends sweetly, haue you not? But you were neuer otherwise like, for mans apparaile & womans apparaile, all was one to you; and some mysterie there was in it, that they alwayes cride, Foh, what a stinke is heere? and stopt their noses when you came neere them. For your worships, Master Sugar & Master Honie, (be you likewise such daintie hipocrytes as he giues testimonie) I doubt not but at one time or other we shall taste you.

Respond: Stay, let me looke vpon it: I, it is the same, right *Isenborough* good, or neuer trust mee. A speach or sudden exclamation, which, after hee had been in a deadly sound for sixe or seauen houres, (vppon what fear-procured sicknes I leaue you to imagine,) was the first words vpon his reuiuing he vttered.

Oration.

O Humanitie, my Lullius, *and Diuinitie, my* Paracelsus.

Consil: As much to say as all the humanitie he hath is

5 *fauour*] *sauour Coll., Gro.*

gathered out of *Lullius*, and all his diuinitie or religion out of *Paracelsus*.

H 4 *Carnead:* Let him call vppon *Kelly*, who is better | than them both; and for the spirites and soules of the ancient Alchumists, he hath them so close emprisoned in the firie purgatorie of his fornace, that for the welth of the King of *Spaines Indies*, it is not possible to release or get the third part of a nit of anie one of them, to helpe anie but himselfe.

Import: Whether you call his fire Purgatorie or no, the fire of Alchumie hath wrought such a purgation or purgatory in a great number of mens purses in *England* that it hath clean fir'd thē out of al they haue.

Respond: Therefore our Doctor (verie well heere towards the latter end of his Oration) comes in with a cooling card.

Oration.

Cordially I could wish, that the pelting horne of these sturres (according to the fœciall law) were rebated, wherby our populars might taste of some more plausible Panegericall Orations, fine Theurgie, and profound essentiall God-full arguments.

Carnead: Soft, ere I goe anie further, I care not if I draw out my purse, and change some odde peeces of olde English for new coyne; but it is no matter, vpon the Retourne from *Guiana*, the valuation of them may alter, and that which is currant now be then copper. Onely this word *God-full* goes with mee, if it be but to court a widdow in Christ or holy sister of ours with, that weares *Thy spirit be with vs* for the posie of her ring.

Oration.

But the arte of figges had euer a dappert wit, and a deft conceit: Saint Fame *giue him ioy of his blacke cole & his white chalke.* |

H 4v *Consil: Saint Fame* is one of the notorious nicke-names he giues thee, as also vnder *the arte of figges* (to cleaue him from the crowne to the waste with a quip) he shadowes *Master Lilly:* but if, betweene you, you doo not

so chalke him vp for a *Crimme* & *Maniquenbecke*, and draw him in cole more artificially than the face in cole that *Michaell Angelo* and *Raphaell Vrbin* went to buffets about, I would you might be cole-carriers or pioners in a cole-pit, whiles colliers ride vpon collimol cuts, or there be any reprisalls of purses twixt this and *Cole-brooke*.

Respond: Pacifie your conscience, and leaue your imprecations; wee will beare no coales, neuer feare you. As for him whom (so artlesse and against the haire of anie similitude or coherence) hee calls *the arte of figges*, he shall not need long to call for his figs, for hee will bee choakt soone inough with them; they hauing lyne ripe by him readie gathered (wanting nothing but pressing) anie time this twelue month. For my owne proper person, if I doo not (in requitall of *S. Fame*) ensaint and canonize him for the famousest Paliard and Senior *Penaquila* that hath breathed since the raigne of S. *Tor*, let all the droppings of my pen bee seazed vpon by the Queenes Takers for Tarre to dresse ships with. I tarry too trifling superfluously in the twittle-cum-twattles of his Text: take it, with a wennion, altogether, if you will haue it.

Oration.

Embellishtly I can resolue them, here they shall not meete with chalke for cheese; and though some drinke oyle of prickes for a restoratiue, they shall haue much adoo to void sirrupe of Roses: for it is not euerie mans blab that casts | *a sheepes eye out of a calues head, and for ought I know, I* 11 *see no reason why the Wheel-wright may not be as honest a man and pregnant mœchanician as the Cutler, the Cutler as the Drawer, the Drawer as the Cutter, and the Writer as the Printer. And so I recommend euery one, and them all, to your curtesies.*

Your mindfull debter,
Gabriell Haruey.

Carnead: Thou hast opprest vs with an Inundation of

9 him (whom so *Q.* 20 twittle cum-twattles *Q, Coll., Gro.* [*Carnead.*] *Coll., Gro.*: *om. Q.*

‡Binscaism, the most barbarous Spanish; eu̅ as the Northren tung of the English.

‡ *Biscanisme*; and though we would faine haue made him stand in a white sheet for his baudie oyle of pricks (a common receipt for the greene sicknes); as also examind his sirrupe of roses, wherein *Rose Flowers* is best experimented, yet time & tide (that staies for no man) forbids vs to tire any more on this carrion, being more than glutted with it alreadie.

Bentiu: But yet, to giue him this one comfort at the parting, it had not been amisse that, whereas he stands in such feare of casting his sheeps eye out of his calues head, thou neuer meantst it, but if it were an oxes hee should still keepe it, and rather thou wouldst enlarge it than empayre it.

Respond: I, make it vp a paire (I sweare) rather than he should bee vnprouided. *Responde breuiter, Senior Importuno:* haue not I comprehended all the Doctors workes brauely, like *Homers Iliads* in the compasse of a nut-shell? Now where be our honorable Caualiers, that keepe such a prating and a gabrill about our *Gabriell* and his admirable stile (nothing so good as *Littletons*, with his *Iohn a Nokes* and *Iohn a Stiles*)? let them look to it, I wold aduise them,
I 1v for the course they take | in commending this course *Himpenhempen Slampamp*, this stale Apple-squire *Cockledemoy*, who, some 18. yeares since, when these Italionate carnation painted horse tayles were in fashion, in selfe same sort was about (if his chamber-fellow had not ouer-rulde him) to haue scutchaneled and painted his pickerdeuant, to make it trauerlike antick: this iadish course, this iauels course, this drumbling course, this dry braind course, if you perseuer and insist in, and, on the toppe of asses buskind eares, thus labour to build trophees of theyr praise, canonizing euerie *Bel-shangles*, the water-bearer, for a Saint, and the contemptiblest worlds dish-cloute for a Relique; inspiredly I prophecie, your endes will be Ale and *Shorditch*; that all preferment and good spirits will abandon you; and more, (to plague you for your *apostata*

24 these] *Qy. read* those? 26 a bout *Q.* 28 trave[lle]r-like *Coll.*

conceipts) ballets shalbee made of your base deaths, euen as there was of *Cutting Ball.*

Consil: Ho, Ball, ho; in the name of God, whether wilt thou?

Respond: To *Saffron-walden* as fast as I can, though I goe a little way about.

Import: Vnfortunate *Gabriell*, I am sorry for him, for he hath been a man of good parts.

Respond: Good parts? Ile name you one of seauen times better parts than he, whom you and I and euery one heere haue knowen from our childhood.

Import: Who is that?

Respond: In Speach with his eight Parts. But without further speach, that you may throghly be resolu'd what those good parts are you enable the Doctor for, here haue I set downe his whole life from his infancie to this present 96, euẽ as they vse in the beginning of a | Book to set 12 down the life of anie memorable ancient Author. Dispense with it though it drink some inck, or prodigally dispend manie Pages that might haue been better employd; for if it yeeld you not sport for your money, at the same price shall you buye mee for your bond-slaue, that my Booke costs you.

Carnead: On that condition, wee will make thee a lease of our attention for three liues and a halfe, or a hundred lacking one.

The life and godly education from his childhood of that thrice famous Clarke, and worthie Orator and Poet, Gabriell Haruey.

GAbriell *Haruey*, of the age of fortie eight or vpwards, (*Turpe senex miles*, tis time for such an olde foole to leaue playing the swash-buckler,) was borne at *Saffron walden*, none of the obscurest Townes in *Essex*. For his parentage, I will say, as *Polidore Virgill* saith of Cardinall *Wolsey*, *Parentem habuit virum probum, at lanium*, he had a reasonable honest man to his father, but he was a butcher;

so *Gabriell Haruey* had one Good-man *Haruey* to his father, a true subiect, that paid scot and lot in the Parish where he dwelt, with the best of them, but yet he was a Rope-maker: *Id quod reminisci nolebat* (as *Polidore* goes forward) *vt rem vtique persona illius indignam*, that which is death to *Gabriell* to remember, as a matter euerie way derogatorie to his person, *quare secum totos dies cogitabat, qualis esset, non vnde esset*, wherefore from time to time he doth nothing but turmoile his thoghts how to raise his estate, and I 2v inuent new petegrees, and | what great Noble-mans bastard hee was likely to bee, not whose sonne he is reputed to bee.

Consil: *Giue me leaue before thou readst any further. I would not wish thee so to vpbraid him with his birth, which if he could remedie it were another matter; but it is his Fortune, and Natures, & neither his fathers fault nor his.*

Respond: Neither as his fathers nor his fault doo I vrge it, otherwise than it is his fault to beare himselfe too arrogantly aboue his birth, and to contemne and forget the house from whence he came; which is the reason that hath induced mee (aswell in this Treatise as my former Writings) to remember him of it, not as anie such hainous discredit simply of it selfe, if his horrible insulting pride were not;

Nam genus & proauos, & quæ non fecimus ipsi,
Vix ea nostra voco.

It is no true glorie of ours what our fore-fathers did, nor are we to answere for anie sinnes of theirs. *Demosthenes* was the sonne of a Cutler, *Socrates* of a Midwife; which detracted neyther from the ones eloquence, nor the others wisedome: (farre be it that eyther in eloquence or wisedome I should compare *Gabriell* to either of them.) Marry, for *Demosthenes* or *Socrates* to be ashamed or take it in high derisiõ (which they neuer did) the one to be said to haue a Cutler to his father, or the other that hee had a Mid-wife to his mother, (as *Haruey* doth to haue himselfe or anie of his brothers called the sonnes of a Rope-maker, which, by his own priuate confession to some of my friends,

was the onely thing that most set him a fire against me,) I wil iustify it, might argue thē or him more inferior & despi-|cable than anye Cutler, Mid-wife, or Rope-maker. I 3
Turne ouer his two bookes he hath published against me (whereon he hath clapt paper Gods plentie, if that would presse a man to death), and see if in the waye of answer, or otherwise, he once mention the word rope-maker, or come within fortie foot of it: except in one place of his first booke, where hee nameth it not neither, but goes thus cleanly to worke, (as heretofore I haue set downe,) though hee could finde no roome in the expence of 36. sheetes of paper to refute it. *And may not a good sonne haue a reprobate to his father?* (a *Periphrasis* of a Rope-maker, which (if I should shryue my selfe) I neuer heard before.) This is once: I haue giuen him cause enough, I wot, to haue stumbled at it, and take notice of it; for where, in his first booke, hee casts the begger in my dish at euerie third sillable, and so like an Emperour triumphs ouer mee, as though he had the Philosophers Stone to play at foot-bal with, & I were a poore Alchumist new set vp, that had scarce money to buy beechen coles for my fornace; in kind guerdon and requitall, I tolde him in *Piers Penilesse* Apologie, *That he need not be so lustie, if (like the Peacocke) he lookt downe to the foule feete that vpheld him, for he was but the sonne of a Rope-maker; and he would not haue a shoo to put on his feete, if his father had not traffique with the Hang-man.* And in another place, where he brought the Towne Seale or next Iustices hands (as it were) to witnes that his father was an honest man; which no man denide or impaired anie further than saying *He got his liuing backward; & that he had kept three sonnes at the Vniuersitie a long time;* I ioynd issue with them and confirmed it, & added, *Nay,* | *which is more, three* I 3ᵛ *proud sonnes, that when they met the hang-man (their fathers best customer) would not put off their hatts to him;* with other by-glances, to the like effect: which he silently

14 if should *Q, Coll.*: if[I] should *Gro.* 22 fornace. In *Q, Coll., Gro.*

ouer-skippeth, to withdraw men (lapwing-like) from his neast, as much as might bee. Onely hee tells a foolish twittle twattle boasting tale, (amidst his impudent brazen-fac'd defamation of Doctor *Perne*,) of the Funerall of his kinsman, *Sir Thomas Smith*, (which word *kinsman* I wonderd he causd not to be set in great capitall letters,) and how in those Obsequies he was a chiefe Mourner. Iwis his father was of a more humble spirit; who, in gratefull lieu and remembrance of the hempen mysterie that hee was beholding too, and the patrons and places that were his trades chiefe maintainers and supporters, prouided that the first letter each of his sonnes names began with should allude and correspond with the chiefe marts of his traffick, & of his profession & occupation; as *Gabriell*, his eldest sonnes name, beginning with a G. for Gallowes, *Iohn* with a I. for Iayle, *Richard* with an R. for Rope-maker; as much to say as all his whole liuing depended on the Iayle, the Gallowes, & making of Ropes. Another brother there is, whose name I haue forgot, though I am sure it iumpes with this Alphabet. Iumpe or iarre they with me as they see cause, this counsaile (if the case were mine) I would giue them, not to bee daunted or blanckt anie whit, had they ten hundred thousand legions of *hangum tuums* or *per collum pendere debes* to their fathers, and any should twit them or gaule them with it neuer so: but as *Agathocles*, comming from a durt-kneading Potter to be a King, would (in memorie of that
14 his first | vocation) be serued euer after as well in earthen dishes as sumptuous royal plate; so, had they but one royall of plate or sixe pennie peece amongst them, they shuld plat (what euer their other cheere were) to haue a salt eele, in resemblance of a ropes end, continuallye seru'd in to their tables; or, if they were not able to be at such charges, let them cast but for a two-penny rope of onions euerie day to be brought in, in stead of frute, for a closing vp of their stomackes. It cannot doo amisse, it will remẽber them they are mortal, & whence they came,

& whether they are to goe. Were I a Lord (I make the Lord God a vow) and were but the least a kin to this breath-strangling linage, I would weare a chain of pearle brayded with a halter, to let the world see I held it in no disgrace, but high glorie, to bee discended howsoeuer: and as amongst the ancient *Aegiptians* (as *Massarius de ponderibus* writes) there was an Instrument called *Funiculus*, conteining 60. furlongs, wherewith they measured their fields and their vineyards; so from the plough harnesse to the slender hempen twist that they bind vp their vines with wold I branch my alliance, and omit nothing in the praise of it, except those two notable blemishes of the trade of rope-makers, *Achitophel* and *Iudas*, that were the first that euer hangd themselues.

Bentiu: *Thereto the Rope-makers were but accidentally accessarie, as any honest man may be that lends a halter to a thiefe, wherewith (vnwitting to him) he goes & steales a horse: wherefore, how euer (after a sort) they may be said to haue their hands in the effect, yet they are free and innocent from the cause.*

Respond: As though the cause and the effect (more | than the superficies and the substance) can bee seperated, when in manie things *causa sine qua non* is both the cause and the effect, the common distinction of *potentia non ctu* approuing it selfe verie crazed and impotent herein, since the premisses necessarily beget the conclusion, and so contradictorily the conclusion the premisses; a halter including desperation, and so desperation concluding in a halter; without which fatall conclusion and priuation it cannot truly bee termed desperation, since nothing is said to bee till it is borne, and despaire is neuer fully borne till it ceaseth to bee, and hath depriu'd him of beeing that first bare it and brought it forth. So that herein it is hard to distinguish which is most to be blamed, of the cause or the effect; the Cause without the effect beeing of no effect, and the effect without the cause neuer able to haue I 4v

18 *however, (after Coll., Gro.*

been. Such another paire of vndiscernable twins and mutuall married correllatiues are Nature & Fortune. As for example; If it be any mans fortune to hang himselfe and abridg his naturall life, it is likewise natural to him (or allotted him by Nature) to haue no better fortune.

Carnead: *Better or worse fortune, I pry thee let vs heare how thou goest forward with describing the Doctor and his life and fortunes: and you, my fellow Auditors, I beseech you, trouble him not (anie more) with these impertinent Parentheses.*

Respond: His education I wil handle next, wherein he ran through *Didimus* or *Diomedes* 6000. books of the Arte of Grammer, besides learnd to write a faire capitall Romane hand, that might well serue for a boone-grace to
K 1 such men as ride with their face to-|wards the horse taile, or set on the pillory for cousnage or periurie. Many a copy-holder or magistrall scribe, that holds all his liuing by setting school-boies copies, comes short of the like gift. An old Doctor of *Oxford* shewd me Latine verses of his, in that flourishing flantitanting goutie *Omega* fist, which hee presented vnto him (as a bribe) to get leaue to playe, when hee was in the heigth or prime of his *Puer es, cupis atque doceri.* A good qualitie or qualification, I promise you truely, to keepe him out of the danger of the Statute gainst wilfull vagabonds, rogues, and beggers. But in his Grammer yeares (take me thus farre with you) he was a verie gracelesse litigious youth, and one that would pick quarrells with old *Gulielmus Lillies Sintaxis* and *Prosodia*, euerie howre of the daye. A desperate stabber with pen-kniues, and whom he could not ouer-come in disputation, he would be sure to break his head with his pen and ink-horne. His father prophecyde by that his ventrus manhood and valure, he would proue an other *S. Thomas a Becket* for the Church. But his mother doubted him much, by reason of certaine strange dreames she had when she was first quicke with childe of him; which wel she hoped were but idle swimming fancies

2 Fortune (*turned* u) *Q.*

of no consequence: till, being aduisde by a cunning man (her frend, that was verie farre in her books), one time shee slept in a sheepes skinne all night, to the intent to dreame true, another time vnder a lawrell tree, a third time on the bare ground starke naked, and last on a dead mans tomb or graue-stone in the church in a hot Summers afternoone; when, no barrel better herring, she sped euen as she did before. For first shee dreamed her wombe was turned to such another hol-|low vessell full of disquiet K 1v fiends as *Salomons* brazen Bowle, wherein were shut so manie thousands of diuels; which (deepe hidden vnder ground) long after the *Babilonians* (digging for mettals) chaunced to light vpon, and, mistaking it for treasure, brake it ope verie greedily, when, as out of *Pandoras* Boxe of maladyes, which *Epimetheus* opened, all manner of euills flewe into the world; so all manner of deuills then broke loose amongst humane kinde. Therein her drowsie diuination not much deceiu'd her; for neuer wer *Empedocles* deuils so tost from the aire into the sea, & from the sea to the earth, and from the earth to the aire againe exhaled by the Sunne, or driu'n vp by windes & tempests, as his discontented pouertie (more disquiet than the Irish seas) hath driu'n him from one profession to another. Deuinitie (the Heauen of all Artes) for a while drew his thoughts vnto it, but shortly after the world, the flesh, and the diuell with-drewe him from that, and needes he would be of a more Gentleman-like lustie cut; whereupon hee fell to morrall Epistling and Poetrie. He fell, I may well say, & made the price of wit and Poetrie fall with him, when hee first began to be a fripler or broker in that trade. Yea, from the aire he fell to the sea, (that my comparison may hold in euerie point,) which is, he would needs crosse the seas to fetch home two penniworth of Tuscanisme: from the sea to the earth againe he was tost, *videlicet* shortly after hee became a roguish Commenter vppon earth-quakes, as by the famous Epistles (by his owne mouth onely made famous)

may more largely appeare. *Vltima linea rerum*, his finall entrancing from the earth to the skies, was his key-colde
K 2 defence of the Cleargie in | the Tractate of *Pap-hatchet*, intermingled, like a small Fleete of Gallies, in the huge *Armada* against me. The second dreame his mother had was that shee was deliuerd of a caliuer or hand-gun, which in the discharging burst. I pray God (with all my heart) that this caliuer or caualier of Poetrie, this hand-gun or elder-gun that shoots nothing but pellets of chewd paper, in the discharging burst not. A third time in her sleep she apprehended and imagined that out of her belly there grew a rare garden bed, ouer-run with garish weedes innumerable, which had onely one slip in it of herb of grace, not budding at the toppe neither, but, like the floure *Narcissus*, hauing flowres onely at the roote; whereby she augur'd and coniectur'd, how euer hee made some shew of grace in his youth, when he came to the top or heighth of his best proofe he would bee found a barrain stalk without frute. At the same time (ouer and aboue) shee thought that, in stead of a boye (which she desired), she was deliuerd and brought to bed of one of these kistrell birds, called a wind-sucker. Whether it be verifiable, or onely probably surmised, I am vncertaine, but constantly vp and downe it is bruted, how he pist incke as soone as euer hee was borne, and that the first cloute he fowld was a sheete of paper; whence some mad wits giu'n to descant, euen as *Herodotus* held that the *Aethiopians* seed of generation was as blacke as inke, so haply they vnhappely wold conclude, an *Incubus*, in the likenes of an inke-bottle, had carnall copulation with his mother when hee was begotten. Should I reckon vp but one halfe of the miracles of his conception, that verie substantially haue been affirmed vnto me, one or other like *Bodine*
K 2v wold | start vp and taxe mee for a miracle-monger, as hee taxt *Liuy*, saying that he talkt of nothing else, saue how oxen spake, of the flames of fire that issued out

22 wind-fucker *Q*.

of the *Scipioes* heads, of the Statues of the Gods that swet, how *Iupiter*, in the likenes of a childe or yong-man, appeared to *Hanniball*, and that an Infant of six months olde proclaymed triumph vp and downe the streetes. But let him that hath the poyson of a thousand *Gorgons* or stinging Basiliskes full crammed in his inke-horne, tamper with mee, or taxe mee in the way of contradiction neuer so little, and he shall finde (if I finde him not a toad, worthie for nought but to be stampt vnder foote) that I will spit fire for fire, fight diuell fight dragon, as long as he will. No vulgar respects haue I, what *Hoppenny Hoe* & his fellow *Hankin Booby* thinke of mee, so those whom Arte hath adopted for the peculiar Plants of her Academie, and refined from the dull Northernly drosse of our Clyme, hold mee in anie tollerable account.

The wonders of my great Grand-father *Harueys* progeniture were these.

In the verie moment of his birth there was a calfe borne in the same Towne with a dubble tongue, and hauing eares farre longer than anie asse, and his feete turned backward, like certaine people of the *Tartars*, that neuertheles are reasonable swift.

In the houre of his birth there was a most darksome Eclipse, as though hel and heauen about a consultation of an eternall league had met together.

Those that calculated his natiuitie said that *Saturne* and the Moone (either of which is the causer of madnesse) were melancholy conioynd together (contrarie | to all course of K 3
Astronomie) when into the world hee was produced. About his lips, euen as about *Dions* ship, there flocked a swarme of waspes, as soone as euer he was laid in his cradle. Scarce nine yeres of age he attaind too, when, by engrossing al ballets that came to anie Market or Faire there-abouts, he aspired to bee as desperate a ballet-maker as the best of them; the first frutes of his Poetrie beeing a pittifull Dittie in lamentation of the death of a Fellow

31 cradle] *Coll., Gro.*: cradles *Q.* 35 them. The *Q., Coll., Gro.*

that, at Queene *Maries* coronation, came downward, with his head on a rope, from the Spyre of *Powles* steeple, and brake his necke. Afterward he exercised to write certaine graces in ryme dogrell, and verses vppon euerie Month, manie of which are yet extant in Primers and Almanackes. His father, with the extreame ioy of his towardnesse, wept infinitely, and prophecide he was too forward witted to liue long. His Schoole-master neuer heard him peirse or conster but he cryde out *O acumen Carneadum! O decus addite diuis!* and swore by *Susenbrotus* and *Taleus* that he would prooue another *Philo Iudæus* for knowledge and deep iudgment, who in Philosophie was preferd aboue *Plato*; and bee a more rare Exchequer of the Muses than rich *Gaza* was for wealth, which tooke his name of *Cambyses* laying all his Treasure there, when hee went to make warre against *Aegipt.*

By this time imagin him rotten ripe for the Vniuersitie, and that hee carries the poake for a messe of porredge in *Christs Colledge*: which I doo not vpbraid him with, as anie disparagement at all, since it is a thing euerie one that is Scholler of the House is ordinarily subiect vnto
K 3v by turnes, but onely I thrust it in for a Peri-|phrasis of his admission or matriculation. I am sure you will bee glad to heare well of him, since hee is a youth of some hope and you haue been partly acquainted with his bringing vp.

In sadnes I would be loath to discourage ye, but yet in truth (as truth is truth, and will out at one time or other, and shame the diuell) the coppie of his Tutors Letter to his father I will shew you, about his carriage and demeanour; and yet I will not positiuely affirme it his Tutors Letter neither, and yet you maye gather more than I am willing to vtter, and what you list not beleeue referre to after Ages, euen as *Paulus Iouius* did in his lying praises of the House of *Medices*, or the importunate Dialogue twixt *Charles* the fifth and him, of *Expedire*

36 Fifth *Coll., Gro.*

te oportet, & parare calamos: or his tempestuous thunder-bolt Inuectiue against *Selimus.*

The Letter of *Harueys* Tutor to his Father, as touching his manners and behauior.

Emanuell.

SIr, Grace and peace vnto you premised. So it is, that your sonne you haue committed to my charge is of a passing forward carriage, & profiteth very soundly.

Carnead: That is, beares himselfe very forward on his tip-toes, (as he did euer,) & profits or *battles* soundly, and is a youth of a good *size.*

Letter.

Great expectation we haue of him, that hee will proue an other Corax *or* Lacedemonian Ctesiphon *for Rhethorique, who was banisht because he vaunted he could talke a whole day of anie thing,* |

Benti: I would our *Gurmo Hidruntum* were like-wise banisht with him; for he can hotch-potch whole Decades vp of nothing, and talks idlely all his life time. K 4

Letter.

and not much inferiour to Demosthenes, Aeschines, Demades, *or the melodious recording Muse of* Italy, Cornelius Musa, *Bishop of* Bitonto, *or the yet liuing melli-fluous* Pancarola, *who is said to cast out spirites by his powerfull diuine eloquence.*

Carnead: The spirit of foolery out of this *Archibald Rupenrope* he shall neuer be able to cast, were the *Nectar* of his eloquence a thousand times more superabundant incessant sourding.

Letter.

When I record (as I doo often) the strange vntraffiqu't phrases by him new vented and vnpackt, as of incendarie *for fire, an* illuminarie *for a candle and lant-horne, an*

16 *thing. Q.* 17 *Bentiu: c.w.*

indument *for a cloake, an* vnder foote abiect *for a shooe or a boote, then I am readie (with* Erasmus) *to cry,* Sancte Socrates, *or (with* Aristotle) Ens entium miserere mei! *what an ingeny is heere? O, his conceipt is most delicate, and that right well he apprehendeth, hauing alreadie proposed high matters for it to worke on. For, stealing into his Study by chance the other day, there I found diuers Epistles and Orations, purposely directed and prepared, as if he had been Secretarie to her Maiestie for the Latine tongue; or, against such a place should fall, he would be sure not to be vnprouided: as also hee had furnisht himselfe (as if he made no question to be the Vniuersitie Orator) for all Congratulations, Funerall Elegiacall condolments of the death of such and such a Doctor in* Cambridge, *and, which is more, of euerie Priuy*
K 4v *Coun-|sailour in* England. *You are no Scholler, & therefore little know what belongs to it, but if you heard him how sacredly hee ends euerie sentence with* esse posse videatur, *you would (like those that arriue in the* Phillipinas, *opprest with sweete odors) forget you are mortall, and imagine your selfe no where but in Paradice. Some there be (I am not ignorant) that, vpon his often bringing it in at the end of euerie period, call him by no other name but* esse posse videatur: *but they are such as were neuer endenizond in so much arte as* Similiter Desinens, *and know not the true vse of* Numerus Rhetoricus. *So vpon his first manumission in the mysterie of Logique, because he obseru'd* Ergo *was the deadly clap of the peece, or driu'n home stab of the Syllogisme, hee accustomed to make it the Faburden to anie thing hee spake; As, if anie of his companions complained hee was hungrie, hee would straight conclude* Ergo *you must goe to dinner; or if the clocke had stroke or bell towld,* Ergo *you must goe to such a Lecture; or if anie stranger said he came to seeke such a one, and desir'd him he would shew him which was his chamber, he would foorthwith come vpon him with* Ergo *he must go vp such a paire of staires: whereupon (for a*

great while) he was cald nothing but Gabriell Ergo *vp and downe the Colledge. But a scoffe which longer dwelt with him than the rest, though it argued his extreame pregnancie of capacitie and argute transpersing dexteritie of Paradoxisme, was that once he would needs defend a Rat to be* Animal rationale, *that is, to haue as reasonable a soule as anie Academick, because she eate and gnawd his bookes, and, except she carried a braine with her, she could neuer digest or be so capable of learning. And the more to confirme it, because euerie one laught at him for a common Mounte-*|*banke Rat-catcher about it, the* L 1 *next rat he seazd on hee made an Anatomie of, and read a lecture of 3. dayes long vpon euerie artire or musckle in her, and after hangd her ouer his head in his studie, in stead of an Apothecaries Crocodile, or dride* Alligatur. *I haue not yet mentiond his Poetrie, wherein hee surmounteth and dismounteth the most heroycallest* Countes Mountes *of that Craft; hauing writ verses in all kindes, as in forme of a paire of gloues, a dozen of points, a paire of spectacles, a two-hand sword, a poynado, a Colossus, a Pyramide, a Painters easill, a market-crosse, a trumpet, an anchor, a paire of pot-hookes; yet I can see no Authors he hath, more than his owne naturall* Genius *or* Minerua, *except it bee* Haue with ye to Florida, The storie of Axeres and the worthie Iphijs, As I went to Walsingham, *and* In Creete when Dedalus, *a song that is to him food from heauen, and more transporting and rauishing than* Platoes *Discourse of the immortalitie of the soule was to* Cato, *who, with the verie ioy he conceiud from reading thereof, wold needs let out his soule, and so stabd himselfe. Aboue* Homers *or all mens workes whosoeuer he doth prize it, laying it vnder his pillow (like* Homers *works) euery night, and carrying it in his bosome (next his heart) euerie day. From the generall Discourse of his vertues let mee digresse, and informe you of some few fragments of his vices; as, like a Church and an ale-house, God and the diuell, they manie times dwell neere together.* Memorandum, *his*

laundresse complaines of him that hee is mightie fleshly giuen, and that there had lewdnes past betwixt her daughter and him, if she had not luckely preuented it by searching her daughters pocket, wherein she found a little epitomisd
L 1v Bradfords Meditations, *no broader vo-|lum'd than a Seale at Armes or a blacke melancholy veluet patch, and a three-pennie pamphlet of* The Fall of man *he had bestowed on her, that he might stow her vnder hatches in his study, & do what he wold with her. In a wast white leafe of one of which bookes he had writ for his sentence or posie,* Nox & amor, *as much to say as, O, for a pretie wench in the darke; and vnderneath,* Non sunt sine viribus artus, *If thou comst, old lasse, I will tickle thee: and in the other,* Leue fit quod bene fertur onus, *that is, we must beare with one another, and* Fœlices quibus vsus adest, *vse in all things makes perfect. Secondly, he is, beyond all reason or Gods forbod, distractedly enamourd of his own beautie, spending a whole forenoone euerie day in spunging and licking himselfe by the glasse; and vseth euerie night after supper to walke on the market hill to shew himselfe, holding his gown vp to his middle, that the wenches may see what a fine leg and a dainty foote he hath in pumpes and pantoffles, and, if they giue him neuer so little an amorous regard, he presently boords them with a set speach of the first gathering together of societies, and the distinction of* amor *and* amicitia *out of* Tullies Offices; *which if it work no effect & they laugh at, he will rather take a raison of the sunne, and weare it at his eare for a fauor, than it should bee said hee would goe away emptie. Thirdly, he is verie seditious and mutinous in conuersation, picking quarrells with euerie man that will not magnifie and applaud him, libelling most execrably and inhumanely on* Iacke *of the Falcon, for that he would not lend him a messe of mustard to his red herrings; yea, for a lesser matter than that, on the Colledge dog he libeld, onely because he proudly bare vp his taile as hee past by him.*
L 2 *And fourthly and lastly, he vseth often to be | drunk with the sirrupe or broth of stewd prunes, and eateth more bread,*

vnder pretence of swearing by it, than would serue a whole Band in the Low Countries. These are the least part of his veniall sinnes, but I forbear him, & proceed no further, because I loue him: only I wold wish you (being his father) at anie hand to warne him of these matters priuately betwixt him and you, and againe and againe cry out vpon him to beware of pride; which I more than fatally prophecie will be his vtter ouer-throw.

Yours assuredly, and so foorth,
Iohannes sine nomine, Anno Domini what ye will.

Carnead: *What is your censure, you that bee of the common counsaile; may this Epistle passe or no without a demurre or prouiso?*

Consil: *Passe in the way of pastime, and so foorth; it being no indecorum at all to the Comedie we haue in hand to admit* Piers *himselfe for his Tutor, for if he proceed in the seuere discipline he hath begun, he is like to humble him, and bring him to more goodnes than anie Tutor or Master he euer had since he was borne.*

Life.

Leauing his childhood, which hath leaue or a lawe of priuiledge to be fond, & to come to the first prime of his pamphleting, which was much about the setting vp of the Bull by *Felton* on the Bishop of *Londons* gate, or rather some prettie while before, when, for an assay or nice tasting of his pen, he capitulated on the births of monsters, horrible murders, and great burnings: and afterward, in the yeare when the earth-quake was, he fell to be a familiar Epistler, & made *Powles Church-|yard* resound or L 2ᵛ crie twang againe with foure notable famous Letters; in one of which hee enterlaced his short but yet sharpe iudiciall of Earth-quakes, & came verie short and sharpe vppon my Lord of *Oxford* in a ratling bundle of English Hexameters. How that thriu'd with him some honest Chronicler helpe

me to remember, for it is not comprehended in my braines Diarie or Ephemerides: but this I can iustifie, that immediately vpon it he became a common writer of Almanackes. Tis meruaile if some of you, amongst your vnsatiable ouerturning of Libraries, haue not stumbled on such an approued architect of Calenders as *Gabriel Frend*, the Prognosticator. That *Frend* I not a little suspect (if a man should take occasion to trye his *Frend*) would be found to bee no *Frend*, but my constant approued mortall enemie, *Gabriell Haruey*. Well, I may say to you, it is a difficult rare thing in these dayes to finde a true *Frend*. But the probable reasons which driue me to cõiecture that it is a false *Frend* which deludes vs with these durtie astronomicall predictions, & that *Gabriell Haruey* is this *Frend* in a corner, which no man knowes of, be these that follow. First, he hath been noted, in manie companies where hee hath been, very suspitiously to vndermine, whither any man knew such a fellow as *Gabriell Frend*, the Prognosticator, or no? or whether they euer heard of anie that euer saw him or knew him? Wheretoo, when they all aunswered with one voyce, not guiltie to the seeing, hearing, or vnderstanding of anie such *Starry* Noune Substantiue, vp starts me he (like a proud school-master, when one of his Boyes hath made an Oration before a countrey Maior that hath pleasd) and bites the lip, and |
L 3 winkes and smiles priuily, and lookes pertly vpon it, as who should say, *corâm quem queritis adsum:* and, after some little coy bridling of the chin and nice simpring and wrything his face 30. waies, tels them flatly that vppon his credit and knowledge (both which are hardly worth a candles end to helpe him to bed with) there is no such *Quarter-master*, or master of the 4. Quarters, or Writer in redde letters, as that supposed flower of *Frend-ly* curtesie, *Gabriell Frend*, the Prognosticator; but, to vse plaine dealing amongst frends, a frend of his it is he must cõceale, who thoght good to shroud himselfe vnder that title. Now

5 ouerturnings *Coll., Gro.* 33 *frend*-ly *Coll.*: *Frend*-ly *Gro.*

if ye will allow of my verdit in this behalfe, I hold *vnusquisque proximus ipse sibi*, euery man is the best *Frend* to himself, & that he himself, & no other, is that *Frend* of his he must conceale. The 2. argument that confirmes me in this strong article of my creede is, for none is priuy to a *blank* maintenance he hath, & some maintenãce of necessity he must haue, or else how can he maintaine his peak in true christendome of rose-water euerie morning? By the ciuil law peraduenture you wil alleage he fetches it in: nay, therin ye are deceiud, for he hath no law for that. I will not deny but his mother may haue su'd *in forma pauperis*, but he neuer sollicited in form of papers in the Arches in his life. How then? doth he fetch it aloft with his poetrie? *Dii faciant laudis summa sit ista suæ.* I pray God he neuer haue better lands or liuing till he die. Shall I discharge my conscience, being no more than (on my soule) is most true? The Printers and Stationers vse him as he wer the *Homer* of this age, for they say vnto him, *Si nihil attuleris, ibis, Homere, foras; Haruey*, if ye bring no mony in your purse, ye get no books printed here. | Euen for the printing of this logger-head Legend of lyes, L|3v which now I am wrapping vp hot spices in, hee ran in debt with *Wolfe*, the Printer, 36. pound & a blue coate which he borrowed for his man, and yet *Wolfe* did not so much as brush it when hee lent it him, or presse out the print where the badge had been. The Storie at large a leafe or two hence you shall heare. The last refuge and sanctuarie for his exhibition (after his lands, law, & poetrie are confiscated) is to presume he hath some priuy benefactors or patrons that holde him vp by the chin. What hee hath had of late my intelligence failes me, but, for a number of yeares past, I dare confidently depose, not a bit nor cue of anie benefactor or patron he had, except the Butler or Manciple of *Trinitie Hall* (which are both one) that trusted him for his commons & sizing; so that when I haue toyled the vtmost that I can to saue his credite and honestie, the

11 in *Q.* 17 true? The] *Coll., Gro.*: true, the *Q.*

best wit-craft I can turn him too, to get three pence a weeke and keepe the paper soales and vpper leather of his pantoffles together, is to write Prognostications and Almanackes; and that alone hath beene, and must bee, his best Philosophers Stone till hys last destiny.

I was sure, I was sure at one time or other I should take him napping. O eternall iest (for Gods sake helpe me to laugh): What, a graue Doctor a base *Iohn Doleta*, the Almanack-maker, Doctor *Deuse-ace* and Doctor *Mery-man*? Why, from this day to proceed, Ile neuer goe into *Powles Church-yard* to enquire for anie of his workes, but (where euer I come) looke for them behinde the doore, or on the backe-side of a screene (where Almanackes are set vsually),
L 4 or at a Barbers or | Chandlers shop neuer to misse of them. A maker of Almanackes, quoth a, God forgiue me, they are readier money than Ale and cakes, and are more familiar read than *Tullies* familiar Epistles, or the Discourse of Debitor & Creditor, especially of those that ordinary write Letters, or haue often occasion to paye money. They are the verie Dialls of dayes, the Sunnes ghesses, and the Moones months-mind. Here in *London* streets, if a man haue busines to enquire for anie bodie, and he is not well acquainted with the place, he goes filthely halpering, and asking, cap in hand, from one shop to another, where's such a house and such a signe? But if we haue busines to speak with anie in the skie, buy but one of *Gabriell Frend* or *Gabriell Harueys* Almanacks, and you shall carry the signe & house in your pockets, whether *Iupiters* house, *Saturnes* house, *Mars* hys house, *Venus* house, or anie hot-house or baudy house of them all. To conclude, not the poorest walking-mate, or thred-bare cut-purse in a countrey, that can well be without them, be it but to know the Faires & Markets when they fall: & against who dare I will vphold it that theres no such necessarie Book of *common* places in the earth as it, as for example, From *London* to *Yorke*, from *Yorke* to *Barwicke*, and so backwardes. It is a

8 What a *Coll., Gro.* Doctor, a *Q, Coll., Gro.*

strange thing I should be so skilfull in Phisiognomie and neuer studied it. I alwaies saw in the Doctors countenaunce he greedily hunted after the high way to honour, and was a busie Chronicler of high wayes, he had such a number of vgly wrinckled high wayes in his visage. But the time was, when he would not haue giuen his head for the washing, and would haue tooke foule scorne that the best of them all should haue out-|faced him. I haue a tale at my tungs L 4v end, if I can happen vppon it, of his hobby-horse reuelling & dominering at *Audley-end*, when the Queene was there: to which place *Gabriell* (to doo his countrey more worship & glory) came ruffling it out, huffty tuffty, in his suite of veluet. There be the in *Cambridge* that had occasion to take note of it, for he stood noted or scoard for it in their bookes manie a faire day after: and, if I take not my markes amisse, *Rauen*, the botcher by *Pembrook-hal*, (whether he be aliue or dead I know not,) was as priuie to it, euerie *patch* of it from top to toe, as hee that made it; and if euerie one would but mend one as often as hee hath mended that, the world would bee by 200. parts honester than it is: yet, be he of the mending hand neuer so, and *Gabriell* neuer able to make him amends, he may blesse the memorie of that wardrope, for it will be a good while ere hee meete with the like customer as it was to him at least 14. yere together, falling into his hands twice a yeare, as sure as a club, before euery Batchelors and Masters Commensment, or, if it were aboue, it was a generall *Item* to all the Vniuersitie that the Doctor had some ierking Hexameters or other shortly after to passe the stampe, hee neuer in all his life (till lately he fel a wrangling with his sister in law) hauing anie other busines at *London*. The rotten mould of that worme-eaten relique (if hee were well searcht) he weares yet, meaning when he dies to hang it ouer his tombe for a monument: and in the meane time, though it is not his lucke to meete with euer a substantiall baudie case (or booke case) that carries *rem*

8 him] *b, Coll., Gro.*: *om. a.* 9 hobby-horse-reuelling *Coll., Gro.*

in re, meate in the mouth in it, (A miserable intollerable
M 1 case, when a yong fellow & a yong wench cannot | put the case together, and doo with their owne what they list, but they shalbe put to their booke to confesse, and be hideously perplext,) yet I say daily and hourely doth he deale vpon the case notwithstanding. You wil imagine it a fable percase which I shall tell you, but it is x. times more vnfallible thã the newes of the Iewes rising vp in armes to take in the Land of promise, or the raining of corne this Summer at *Wakefield*. A Gentleman (long agoe) lent him an old veluet saddle, which when he had no vse for, since no man else would trust him for a bridle, and that he was more accustomed to be ridden than to ride, what does me he, but, deeming it a verie base thing for one of his standing in the Vniuersity to be said to be yet dunsing in *Sadolet*, & with all scorning his chamber shuld be employd as an ostry presse to lay vp iades riding iackets and trusses in, presently vntrusseth & pelts the outside from the lining, and, vnder *benedicite* here in priuate be it spoken, dealt verie cunningly and couertly in the case, for with it he made him a case or couer, for a dublet, which hath cased and couerd his nakednes euer since? and, to tell yee no lye, about two yeare and a halfe past hee creditted *Newgate* with the same metamorphized costly vestiment. As good cheape as it was deliuerd to mee (at the second hand) you haue it. *Nil habeo præter auditum*, I was not at the cutting it out, nor will I binde your consciences too strictly to embrace it for a truth, but if my iudgement might stand for vp, it is rather likely to be true than false, since it vanisht inuisible and was neuer heard of: and besides, I cannot deuise how he should behaue him to consume such an implement, if he cõfiscated it not to that
M 1v vse, neither lending it away | nor selling it; nor how hee should otherwise thrust himselfe into such a moth-eaten weed, hauing neyther money nor frends to procure it. Away, away, neuer hauke nor pause vpon it, for without all

13 than to to ride *Q.* 21 couer, for] *Coll., Gro.*: couer for *Q.*

par-anters it is so; and let them tattle and prate till their tongues ake, were there a thousand more of them, and they should set their wit to his, he would make them set besides the saddle, euen as he did the Gentleman. A man in hys case hath no other *shift*, or apparaile, which you will, but he must thus shift other-while for his liuing, especially liuing quiet as he dooth without anie Crosses (in his purse *subaudi*) and being free from all couetous incumbraunces: yet in my shallow foolish conceipt, it were a great deale better for him if he were not free, but *crost* soundly, & cõmitted prisoner to the Tower, where perhaps once in his life he might be brought to look vpon the Queenes coine in the Mynt, & not thus be alwaies abroad and neuer *within*, like a begger. I must beg patience of you, thogh I haue been somwhat too tedious in brushing his veluet, but the Court is not yet remou'd from *Audley end*, and we shall come time enough thether to learne what rule he keepes.

There did this our *Talatamtana* or Doctour *Hum* thrust himselfe into the thickest rankes of the Noblemen and Gallants, and whatsoeuer they were arguing of, he would not misse to catch hold of, or strike in at the one end, and take the theame out of their mouths, or it should goe hard. In selfe same order was hee at his pretie toyes and amorous glaunces and purposes with the Damsells, & putting baudy riddles vnto them. In fine, some Disputations there were, and he made an Oration before the Maids of Honour, and not before | her Maiestie, as heretofore I misinformedly set M 2 down, beginning thus:

Nux, mulier, asinus simili sunt lege ligata,
Hæc tria nill rectè faciunt, si verbera desunt.

A nut, a woman, and an asse are like,
These three doo nothing right, except you strike.

Carnead: *He would haue had the Maids of Honor thriftely cudgeld belike, and lambeakt one after another.*

Respond: *They vnderstood it not so.*

30 *nil Coll.*

Bentiu: *No, I thinke so, for they vnderstood it not at all.*
Consil: *Or, if they had, they would haue driu'n him to his guard.*
Carnead: *Or had the Guard driu'n him downe the staires, with* Deiu vous garde, Monsieur, *goe and prate in the yard,* Don Pedant, *there is no place for you here.*

Life.

The proces of that Oration was of the same woofe and thrid with the beginning: demurely and maidenly scoffing, and blushingly wantoning & making loue to those soft skind soules & sweete Nymphes of *Helicon*, betwixt a kinde of carelesse rude ruffianisme and curious finicall complement; both which hee more exprest by his countenance than anie good iests that hee vttered. This finished, (though not for the finishing or pronouncing of this,) by some better frends than hee was worthie of, and that afterward found him vnworthie of the graces they had bestowed vpon him, he was brought to kisse the Queenes hand, and it pleased her Highnes to say (as in my former Booke I haue cyted) that he lookt something like an Italian. No other incitement he needed to rouze his plumes, pricke
M 2v vp his | eares, and run away with the bridle betwixt his teeth, and take it vpon him, (of his owne originall ingrafted disposition theretoo he wanting no aptnes;) but now he was an insulting Monarch aboue *Monarcha*, the Italian, that ware crownes on his shooes; and quite renounst his naturall English accents & gestures, & wrested himselfe wholy to the Italian *puntilios*, speaking our homely Iland tongue strangely, as if he were but a raw practitioner in it, & but ten daies before had entertained a schoole-master to teach him to pronounce it. Ceremonies of reuerence to the greatest States (as it were not the fashion of his cuntray) he was very parsimonious and niggardly of, & would make no bones to take the wall of *Sir Philip Sidney* and another honourable Knight (his companion) about

4 *Qy. read driue?* 23 him; (of *Q*: him (of *Coll., Gro.* 24 aptnes) but *Q.*

Court yet attending; to whom I wish no better fortune than the fore lockes of Fortune he had hold of in his youth, & no higher fame than hee hath purchast himselfe by his pen; being the first (in our language) I haue encountred, that repurified Poetrie from Arts pedantisme, & that instructed it to speake courtly. Our Patron, our *Phœbus*, our first *Orpheus* or quintessence of inuention he is; wherfore, either let vs iointly inuent some worthy subiect to eternize him, or let Warre call back Barbarisme from the *Danes*, *Pictes*, and *Saxons*, to suppres our frolicke spirits, and the least sparke of more eleuated sence amongst vs finally be quenched and die, ere we can set vp brazen Pillers for our Names and Sciences, to preserue them from the Deluge of Ignorance. But to returne from whence I haue strayd, *Dagobert Coppenhagen* in his iollitie persisteth; is Haile fellowe well met with those that looke highest; and, to cut it off | in three syllables, follows the M 3 traine of the delicatest fauorites and minions, which by chaunce being withdrawne a mile or two off, to one Master *Bradburies*, where the late deceased Countesse of *Darbie* was then harbinged, after supper they fell to dansing, euery one choosing his mate as the custome is; in a trice so they shuffled the cards of purpose (as it wer to plague him for his presumption) that, will he nill, he must tread the measures about with the foulest vgly gentlewoman or fury that might be, (then wayting on the foresaid Countesse,) thrice more deformed than the woman with the horne in her head. A turne or two hee mincingly pac't with her about the roome, & solemnly kist her at the parting: Since which kisse of that squinteyd *Lamia* or *Gorgon*, as if she had been another *Circe* to transforme him, he hath not one houre beene his owne man. For whilst yet his lips smoakt with the steame of her scortching breath, that partcht his beard like sun-burnt grasse in the Dog-dayes, he ran head-

2 forelockes *Coll., Gro.* 6 *Phœbus Q.* 24 that will he nill he must *Q*: that, will he nill he, must *Coll.*: that will he nill, he must *Gro. Qy. read* that, will he nill he, he must *?* 25 foulest foulest *Q.*

long violently to his study as if he had bin born with a whirl-winde, and strait knockt me vp together a Poem calde his *Aedes Valdinenses*, in prayse of my L. of *Leycester*, of his kissing the Queenes hand, and of her speech & comparison of him, how he lookt like an Italian: what *vidi?* sayth he in one place; Did I see her Maiesty? quoth a, *Imo, vidi ipse loquentem cum Snaggo*, I saw her conferring with no worse man then Master *Snagge*. The bungerliest vearses they were that euer were scande, beeing most of them hought and cut off by the knees out of *Virgill* and other Authors. This is a patterne of one of them, *Wodde, meusque tuusque suusque Britannorumque suorumque*, run-
M 3v ning through all the Pro-|nounes in it, and iumpe imitating a verse in *As in presenti*, or in the demeanes or adiacents, I am certaine. I had forgot to obserue vnto you, out of his first foure familiar Epistles, his ambicious stratagem to aspire, that whereas two great Pieres beeing at iarre, and their quarrell continued to bloudshed, he would needs, vncald and when it lay not in his way, steppe in on the one side, which indeede was the safer side (as the foole is crafty inough to sleepe in a whole skin) and hewe and slash with his Hexameters; but hewd and slasht he had beene as small as chippings, if he had not playd ducke Fryer and hid himselfe eight weeks in that Noblemans house for whome with his pen hee thus bladed. Yet neuerthelesse Syr *Iames a Croft*, the olde Controwler, ferrited him out, and had him vnder hold in the Fleete a great while, taking that to be aimde & leueld against him, because he cald him his olde Controwler, which he had most venomously belched against Doctour *Perne*. Vppon his humble submission, and ample exposition of the ambiguous Text, and that his forementioned *Mecenas* mediation, matters were dispenst with and quallified, & some light countenance, like sunshine after a storme, it pleased him after this to let fall vppon him, and so dispatcht him to spurre Cut backe againe to Cambridge. Where, after his arriuall, to his associates and companions

5, 7 *vidi*] *vide Q.* *Corr. in Errata on* X 3v. 31 that [at] his *Coll., Gro.*

he priuatly vaunted what redoubled rich brightnes to his name this short eclipse had brought, and that it had more dignified and raisd him than all his endeuours from his childhood. With such incredible applause and amazement of his Iudges hee bragd hee had cleard himselfe, that euery one that was there ran to him and embrast him, and shortly hee | was promist to be cald to high preferm̃et in court, M 4 not an ace lower than a Secretariship, or one of the Clarks of the Councell. Should I explaine to you howe this wrought with him, and howe, in the itching heate of this hopefull golden worlde and hony moone, the ground would no longer beare him, but to Sturbridge Fayre, and vp and downe *Cambridge*, on his foot-cloth maiestically he would pace it, with manie moe madde trickes of youth nere plaid before; in stead of making his heart ake with vexing, I should make yours burst with laughing. Doctor *Perne* in this plight nor at anie other time euer met him, but he would shake his hand and crie *Vanitas vanitatum, omnia vanitas*, Vanitie of vanities, and all things is vanitie.

His father he vndid to furnish him to the Court once more, where presenting himselfe in all the coulours of the raine-bow, and a paire of moustachies like a black horse tayle tyde vp in a knot, with two tuffts sticking out on each side, he was askt by no meane personage, *Vnde hæc insania?* whence proceedeth this folly or madnes? & he replied with that wether-beaten peice of a verse out of the Grammer, *Semel insaniuimus omnes*, once in our dayes there is none of vs but haue plaid the ideots; and so was he counted and bad stand by for a *Nodgscombe*. He that most patronizd him, prying more searchingly into him, and finding that he was more meete to make sport with than anie way deeply to be employd, with faire words shooke him of, & told him he was fitter for the Vniuersitie thã for the Court or his turne, and so bad God prosper his studies, & sent for another Secretarie to *Oxford*.

Readers, be merry; for in me there shall want no-|thing M 4ᵛ

3 from hls *Q*.

I can doo to make you merry. You see I haue brought the Doctor out of request at Court, & it shall cost me a fall but I will get him howted out of the Vniuersitie too, ere I giue him ouer. What will you giue mee when I bring him vppon the Stage in one of the principallest Colledges in *Cambridge*? Lay anie wager with me, and I will; or, if you laye no wager at all, Ile fetch him aloft in *Pedantius*, that exquisite Comedie in *Trinitie Colledge*; where, vnder the cheife part, from which it tooke his name, as namely the concise and firking finicaldo fine School-master, hee was full drawen & delineated from the soale of the foote to the crowne of his head. The iust manner of his phrase in his Orations and Disputations they stufft his mouth with, & no Buffianisme throughout his whole bookes but they bolsterd out his part with; as those ragged remnaunts in his foure familiar Epistles twixt him and *Senior Immerito*, *Raptim scripta*, *Nosti manum & stylum*, with innumerable other of his rabble routs: and scoffing his *Musarum Lachrymæ* with *Flebo amorem meum*, *etiam Musarum lachrymis;* which, to giue it his due, was a more collachrymate wretched Treatise than my *Piers Pennilesse*, being the pittifullest pangs that euer anie mans Muse breathd foorth. I leaue out halfe; not the carrying vp of his gowne, his nice gate on his pantoffles, or the affected accent of his speach, but they personated. And if I should reueale all, I thinke they borrowd his gowne to playe the Part in, the more to flout him. Let him denie this (and not damne himselfe) for his life, if hee can. Let him denie that there was a Shewe made at *Clare-hall* of him and his two Brothers, called,|

N 1 *Tarrarantantara turba tumultuosa Trigonum,*
Tri-Harueyorum, Tri-harmonia.

Let him denie that there was another Shewe made of the little Minnow his Brother, *Dodrans Dicke*, at *Peter-house*, called, *Duns furens.* Dick Haruey in a frensie. Whereupon *Dick* came and broke the Colledge glasse

21 *Pennilesse Q.* 36 Whereupon . . .] *New par. Coll., Gro.*

windowes; and Doctor *Perne* (being then either for himselfe or Deputie Vice-chancellour) caused him to be fetcht in and set in the Stockes till the Shew was ended, and a great part of the night after.

The first motiue or caller foorth of *Gabriels* English Hexameters was his falling in loue with *Kate Cotton*, and *Widdowes* his wife, the Butler of *Saint Iohns*. And this was a rule inuiolate amongst the fraternitie of them, *Gabriell* was alwayes in loue, *Dick* still in hate, either with *Aristotle*, or with the great Beare in the firmament, which he continually bayted; or with Religion, against which in the publique Schooles he set vp Atheistical Questions, and besides compared his beard so *Porphirian* blasphemously, as I am afraid the Earth would swallow me, if I should but rehearse. It fell to my lot to haue the perusing of a letter of his to Doctor *Fulke*, then lying at a Preachers house neere Criplegate in *London*, as touching his whole persecution by the Fellowes of the House about it, & how, except he had mercie on him, he were expulst and cast awaye without redemption.

The third Brother (*Iohn*) had almost as ill a name as the Spittle in *Shorditch*, for the olde reakes hee kept | with N 1v
the wenches in *Queenes Colledge* Lane; and if *M. Wathe*, his ancient ouer-wharter (betwixt whom & him there was such deadly emulation), had bin furnisht with those instructions therof which I could haue lent him, he had put him downe more handsmoothe than he did, though at a Commensment dinner in *Queenes Colledge* (as apparantly as might be) he graueld and set a ground both him and his brother *Gabienus*. This *Iohn* was hee that beeing entertaind in Iustice *Meades* House (as a Schoole-master) stole away his daughter, and, to pacifie him, dedicated to him an Almanacke; which daughter (or *Iohns* wife), since his death, *Gabriel* (vnder pretence of taking out an Administration, according as she in euery Court exclaimes) hath gone about to circumuent of al she hath: to the which effect (about 3. yere agoe) there were three Declarations put vp against

him, & a little while after I heard there were Attachments out for him: whether he hath compounded since or no, I leaue to the Iurie to enquire.

Pigmey Dicke aforesaid, that lookes like a pound of Gold-smiths candles, is such another Venerian steale Placard as *Iohn* was, being like to commit folly the last yeare in the House where he kept (as a frend of his verie soberly informd me) with a Milke-maid; & if there had not bin more gouernmẽt in her than in him (for all his diuinitiship), the thing you wote of, the blowe that neuer smarteth had been strooke, and she carried away to *Saffron-walden*; he sending for her to one *Philips* his house, at the signe of the Bel in *Bromley*, & there feasting her to that end. Fast and pray, luxurious Vicar, to keepe vnder thy vnruly members, and wrap thee in a Monkes Cowle, which (they
N 2 say) is good to mortifie; | or drinke of the water of *Saint Iues*, by *Iohn Bale* (out of Romish Authors) produced to be good against the temptations of the petticoate; or (which exceedeth them both) trie *Master Candishes* Roote hee brought out of the Indies, giu'n him by a venerable Hermit, with this *probatum est* or vertue, that he which tasted it should neuer lust after; by that token he could meet with none about Court or in *London*, that was content to be an Eunuch for the Kingdome of Heauen, or lou'd his pleasure so little as to venture vpon it. I haue not yet seald and shakt hands with him for making two such false Prophets of *Saturne* & *Iupiter*, out of whose iumbling in the darke and coniunction copulatiue he denounced such Oracles and alterations to ensue, as if (like another *Thebit Bencorat*) he had liu'd 40. yere in a mountain to discerne the motion of the eighth Orbe: but as he (for all his labour) could not attaine to it, no more could *Dick* (with his predictions) compasse anie thing but derision, being publiquely preacht against for it at *Powles Crosse* by the Bishop of *London* that then was, who (according to Arte, if such a Coniunction had chanc'd) disproou'd the reuolutions to bee cleane

12 to to one *Q*.

contrarie; and besides, a singular Scholler, one *Master Heath,* (a Follower of the right Honorable and worthie *Lord of Hunsdon* that now is,) set vpon it, and answered it in Print, pell mell, *cape a pee*, by probable reason, and out of all Authors perspicuously demonstrating what a lying *Ribaden* and *Chincklen Kraga* it was, to constellate and plannet it so portentously. I am none of the *Cashiers* or *Prouiditores* for lame Souldiours or Men of desert, but were I one, as the *Athenians* (in the noblest Schoole of their Academy) erected to *Berosus*, the | Astrologer, a N 2v Statue with a golden tongue, for his predictions were true, so wold I largely disburse toward the building him a Statue on *Sophisters Hills* by *Cambridge*, with a tongue of copper or ockamie (neerely counterfetting siluer) such as organe pipes & serieants maces are made of, because his predictions are false & erronious. And so lightly are all the trade of them, neuer foretokening or fore-telling anie thing till after it be come to passe: and then, if it bee a Warrior or Conqueror they would flatter, who is luckie and succesfull in his enterprises, they say he is borne vnder the auspicious Signe of *Capricorne*, as *Cardan* saith *Cosmo de Medices*, *Selimus*, *Charles* the fifth, and *Charles* Duke of *Burbon* were; albeit, I dare be sworne, no wizardly Astronomer of them all euer dreamd of anie such Calculations, till they had shewd themselues so victorious, and their prosperous raignes were quite expired. On the other side, if he be disastrous or retrograde in hys courses, the maleuolent Starres of *Medusa* and *Andromeda,* inferring suddaine death or banishment, predominated his natiuitie. But (I thank heauen) I am none of their credulous disciples, nor can they cousen or seduce me with anie of their iugling coniecturalls, or winking or tooting throgh a six penny *Iacobs Staffe*; their spels, their characters, their anagrams, I haue no more perswasion of, than I am perswaded that vnder the inuersed denomination or anagram of this Word *September* (as some of our late Deuines and auncient

2 Honrable *Q.* 31 they they *Q.*

Hebrue Rabbines would enforce vpon vs) is included the certaine time of the Worlds first Creation; or that he which is born under *Aries* shall neuer goe in a thrid bare
N 3 cloake, or be troubled with the rheume, because | the Sunne, arriuing in that Poynt, cloatheth the Earth with a new fleece, and sucks vp all the Winters superfluous moysture; or that he which is borne vnder *Libra* shall bee a Iudge or Iustice of Peace, because the Sunne in that Signe equally poyzeth the daies & nights alike. *Heilding Dicke* (this our Ages *Albumazar*) is a temporist that hath faith inough for all Religions, euen as *Thomas Deloney*, the Balletting Silke-weauer, hath rime inough for all myracles, & wit to make a *Garland of good will* more than the premisses, with an Epistle of *Momus* and *Zoylus*; whereas his Muse, from the first peeping foorth, hath stood at Liuery at an Ale-house wispe, neuer exceeding a penny a quart, day nor night, and this deare yeare, together with the silencing of his looms, scarce that; he being constrained to betake him to carded Ale: whence it proceedeth that, since *Candlemas* or his Iigge of *Iohn for the King*, not one merrie Dittie will come from him, but *The Thunder-bolt against Swearers*, *Repent, England, repent*, & *The strange iudgements of God*. No more will there from *Dick quibus in terris*, *Dick*, Pastor of *Cheselhurst*, that was wont to pen Gods iudgements vpon such and such and one, as thicke as Water-men at *Westminster bridge*. The miracles of the burning of *Brustur* with his Wench in adulterie he writ for *Binneman*; which a villaine (*Brusturs* owne kinsman) long afterward at the Gallowes tooke vppon him, and shewed what Ninnies a vayne Pamphleter (one *Richard Haruey*) had made of the world, imputing it to such a wonderfull vengeance of adulterie, when it was nought but his murdrous knauerie. Dead sure they are in writing against the dead; dauncing Moriscoes & Laualtoes on
N 3v the silent Graues | of *Plato*, *Buchanan*, *Sinesius*, *Pierius*, *Aristotle*, & the whole Petigree of the *Peripatecians*, *Sophisters*, & *Sorbonists*, the most of whose mouthes clods

had bungd vp manie *Olimpiades* since, yet seeke they to stifle and choak them again with waste paper; when (in thys innouating selfe-loue Age) it is disputable whether they haue anie frends or no left to defend them. This is that *Dick* that set *Aristotle*, with his heeles vpward, on the Schoole gates at *Cambridge*, and asses eares on hys head; a thing that, *in perpetuam rei memoriam*, I will record and neuer haue done with. This is that *Dick* that comming to take one *Smiths* (a yong Batchelour of *Trinitie Colledge*) Questions, and they being such as he durst not venture on, cride *Aquila non capit muscas*, an Eagle catcheth no flies; and so gaue them him againe: wheretoo the other (beeing a lustie big boand fellow, & a *Golias* or *Behemoth* in comparison of him) strait retorted it vpon him, *Nec elephas mures*, no more doth an elephant stoope to myce; and so they parted. This is that *Dick* of whom *Kit Marloe* was wont to say that he was an asse, good for nothing but to preach of the Iron Age: Dialoguizing *Dicke*, *Io Pæan Dicke*, *Synesian* and *Pierian Dick*, *Dick* the true *Brute* or noble *Troian*, or *Dick* that hath vowd to liue and die in defence of *Brute*, and this our Iles first offspring from the *Troians*, *Dick* against baldnes, *Dick* against *Buchanan*, little and little witted *Dicke*, *Aquinas Dicke*, ‡ *Lipsian Dick*, heigh light a loue a *Dick*, that lost his Benefice & his Wench both at once, his Benefice for want of sufficiencie, and his wench for want of a Benefice or suf-|ficient liuing to maintaine her, *Dilemma Dick*, dissen- tious *Dick*; with *abi in malam crucem*, that is, get all thy frends in their prayers to commend thee, I shut vp the congested *Index* of thy redundant opproby, and hast backe to the right worshipfull of the Lawes, *Master D. Garropius*, thy brother, (as in euerie Letter that thou writ'st to him thou tearmst him,) who, for all he is a ciuill Lawier, will neuer be *Lex loquens*, a Lawier that shall lowd throate it with Good my Lord, consider this poore mans case. But

‡ Therefore Lipsian Dicke, because N 4 lamely & lubberly hee striues to imitate and bee another English Lipsius; when his lippes hang so in his light, as hee

7 in *Q*, *Coll.*, *Gro.* 24 *Qy. read* light a loue Dick? 25 his Benfice for *Q*. 26 and hls wench *Q*.

can neuer come neere him.

thogh he be in none of your Courts Licentiate, and a Courtier otherwise hee is neuer like to be, one of the Emperour *Iustinians* Courtiers (the Ciuill Lawes chiefe Founder) *malgre* he will name himselfe; and, a quarter of a yeare since, I was aduertised that aswell his workes as the whole body of that Law compleat, (hauing no other employment in his Facultie,) hee was in hand to tourne into English Hexameters; and if he might haue had his will, whiles he was yet resident in *Cambridge*, it should haue been seuerely enacted throghout the Vniuersitie that none should speake or ordinarily conuerse but in that cue. For himselfe, hee verie religiously obseru'd it, neuer meeting anie Doctor or frend of his, but he would salute him or giue him the time of the day in it most heroically, euen as hee saluted a Phisition of speciall account in these tearmes,

Nere can I meet you, sir, but needs must I veile my bonetto.

Which he (loth to be behinde with him in curtesie) thus turnd vpon him againe,

Nere can I meet you, sir, but needs must I call ye knauetto.

Once hee had made an Hexameter verse of seauen feete, whereas it would lawfully beare but sixe; which fault a pleasant Gentleman hauing found him with, wrapt the said verse in a peece of paper, & sent a lowse with it, inserting vnderneath, *This verse hath more feet than a lowse.* But to so Dictionarie a custome it was grown with him, that after supper if he chaunst to play at Cards, and had but one Queen of Harts light in his hand, he would *extempore* in that kinde of verse runne vppon mens hearts and womens hearts all the night long, as,

N 4v

Stout hart & sweet hart, yet stoutest hart to be stooped.

No may-pole in the streete, no wether-cocke on anie Church steeple, no garden, no arbour, no lawrell, no ewe tree, that he would ouerslip without haylsing after the same

33 *New par. Coll., Gro.*

methode. His braynes, his time, all hys maintenance & exhibition vpon it he hath consumed, and neuer intermitted till such time as he beganne to Epistle it against mee; since which I haue kept him a work indifferently; and that in the deadest season that might bee, hee lying in the ragingest furie of the last Plague, when there dyde aboue 1600. a week in *London*, inck-squittring and printing against me at *Wolfes* in *Powles Church-yard*. Three quarters of a yere thus cloystred and immured hee remained, not beeing able almost to step out of dores, he was so barricadoed vp with graues, which besiedged and vndermined his verie threshold; nor to open his window euening or morning, but a dampe (like the smoake of a Cannon) from the fat manured earth with contagion (being the buriall place of fiue parishes) in thick rouling clowds would strugglingly funnell vp, & with a full blast puffe in at his casements. Supply mee with a margent note, some bodie that hath more idle leasure than I haue at | the post hast hudling vp of these presents, as touching 01
his spirites yearning empassionment, and agonizd fiery thirst of reuenge, that neglected soule & bodies helth to compasse it; the helth of his bodie, in lying in the hell mouth of infection, & his soules health, in minding any other matters than his soul; nay, matters that were vtter enemies to his soul (as his first offring of wrong, & then prosecuting of it), when his soule and bodie both, euerie hower, wer at the hazard poynt to be seperated. The argument (to my great reioycing & solace) frō hence I haue gathered was that my lines were of more smarting efficacie than I thought, & had that steele and mettall in them which pierst & stung him to the quick, and droue him, vpon the first searching of the wounds I had giu'n him, to such rauing impatience as he could rest no where, but through the poysonfullest iawes of death, and fire and water, he would burst, to take vengeance, and not onely on the liuing but the dead also, (as what will not a dogge doo that is angerd? bite and gnarle at anie

bone or stone that is neere him :) but rather I deeme that from the harsh grating in his eares & continuall crashing of sextens spades against dead mens bones (more dismall musique to him than the Voyce or Ghosts Hearse) he came so to be incenst & to inueigh against the dead, therewith they exasperating and setting his teeth on edge, more than hee would. But let that rest, which would not let him rest: at *Wolfes* he is billetted, sweating and dealing vpon it most intentiuely; and, for he would (as nere as was possible) remoue all whatsoeuer encumbrāces, that might alienate or withdraw him from his studie, hee hath vowd (during his abode there) not to haue a denier in his purse, or see mo-|ney, but let it run on the score and goe to the diuell if it will, he is resolute, and means to trouble himselfe with none of this trash: and yet it is a world to heare how malicious tongues will slaunder a man with truth, and giue out, how of one *Mighell* (somtimes *Dexters* man in *Powles Church-yard*, though now he dwells at *Exceter*) he should borrow ten shillings to buy him shooes and stockings, and when it came to repayment, or that he was faine to borrow of another to satisfie and paye him (as he will borrow so much fauor of him he nere saw before) no lesse than halfe a crowne out of that ten shillings he forswore, & rebated him for vsurie. Contēt your self, it was a hard time with him; let not *Mighel* and *Gabriell* (two Angels) fal out for a trifle: those that be his frends will consider of it & beare with him, euen as *Beniamin* the Founders father who dwels by *Fleete-bridge*, hath borne with him this foure yere for a groat which he owes him for plaisters; and so *Trinitie Hall* hath borne with him more than that, he being (as one that was Fellow of the same House of his standing informd mee) neuer able to pay his Commons, but from time to time borne out in almes amongst the rest of the Fellowes; how euer he tells some of his frends he hath an out-brothership, or beadsmans

O 1ᵛ

36 beadf mans *Q*: beads mans *Coll.*: beadsmans *Grv.*

stipend of ten shillings a yeare there still comming to him, and a Library worth 200. pound. *Iohn Wolfe* sayes nothing, and yet hee beares with him asmuch as the best, and if hee had borne a little longer, he would haue borne till his back broke, though *Gabriell* lookes big vpon it, and protests by no bugges he owes him not a dandiprat, but that *Wolfe* is rather in his debt than hee in his, all reckonings iustly cast. In plaine truth and in verity, some | pleasures he did *Wolfe* in my knowledge. For, first and O 2 formost, he did for him that eloquent *post-script* for the Plague Bills, where he talkes of the series, the classes, & the premisses, & presenting them with an exacter methode hereafter, if it please God the Plague continue. By the style I tooke it napping, and smelt it to be a pig of his *Sus Mineruam*, the Sow his Muse, as soone as euer I read it, and since the Printer hath confest it to mee. The vermilion *Wrinckle de crinkledum* hop'd (belike) that the Plague would proceed, that he might haue an occupation of it. The second thing wherein he made *Wolfe* so much beholding to him was that if there were euer a paltrie *Scriuano*, betwixt a Lawiers Clark & a Poet, or smattring pert Boy whose buttocks were not yet coole since he came from the grammer, or one that houers betwixt two crutches of a Scholler and a Traueller, when neither will helpe him to goe vpright in the worlds opinion, & shuld stumble in there with a Pamphlet to sell, let him or anie of them but haue conioynd with him in rayling against mee, and feed his humor of vaine-glorie, were their stuffe by ten millions more *Tramontani* or *Transalpine* barbarous than balletry, he would haue prest it vpon *Wolfe*, whether he would or no, and giu'n it immortall allowance aboue *Spencer*. So did he by that Philistine Poem of *Parthenophill* and *Parthenope*, which to compare worse than it selfe, it would plague all the wits of *France*, *Spaine*, or *Italy*. And when hee saw it would not sell, hee cald all the World asses a hundred times ouer, with the stampingest cursing and

8 verity] *Coll., Gro.*: verily *Q.* 34 plague] *b, Coll.*: plunge *a, Gro.*

tearing he could vtter it, for that he hauing giu'n it his passe or good word, they obstinately contemnd and mislik'd
O 2v it. So did he by *Chutes Shores* | *Wife*, and his *Procris* and *Cephalus*, and a number of *Pamphlagonian* things more, that it would rust & yron spot paper to haue but one sillable of their names breathed ouer it. By these complots and carefull purueyance for him *Wolfe* could not choose but bee a huge gainer, a hundred marke at least ouer the shoulder: &, which was a third aduantage to hoyst or raise him, besides the Doctors meate and drinke, which God payd for and it is not to be spoken of, he set him on the score for sack, *centum pro cento*, a hundred ‡ quarts in a seuen-night, whiles he was thus saracenly sentencing it against mee. Towards the latter end, he grew weary of keeping him and so manie asses (of his procuring) at liuery, and would grumble and mutiny in his hearing of want of money. Tut, man, mony? would he say, is that your discontent? plucke vp your spirites and bee merry, I cannot abide to heare anie man complaine for want of money. Twice or thrice hee had set this magnificent face vpon it, and euer *Wolfe* lookd when hee would haue terrifide the table with a sound knock of a pursse of angels, and sayd, There 's for thee, paye mee when thou art able: but with him there was no such matter, for he put his hand in his pocket but to scrub his arme a little that itcht, and not to pluck out anie cash, which with him is a stranger shape than euer *Cacus* shrowded in his den, and would make him, if he should chop on anie such churlish lumpe vnawares, to admire & blesse himselfe, with

‡ You must consider it was the dog daies, and he did it to coole him.

Quis nouus hic nostris successit sedibus hospes?

Iesu, how comes this to passe? here is such geere as I neuer saw. So blesse himselfe he could not, but beeing a
O 3 little more roundly put to it, he was faine to confesse | that he was a poore impecunious creature, & had not traffiqut a great while for anie of these commodities of *Santa Cruz*,

17 mony would *Q*, *Gro.*: mony, would *Coll.* 18 Plucke *Coll.*, *Gro.*

but as soone as euer his rents came vp, which he expected euerie howre, (though I could neuer heare of anie he had, more than his ten shillings a yeare at *Trinitie Hall*, if he haue that,) he would most munificently congratulate, correspond, and simpathize with him in al interchangable vicissitude of kindnes; & let not the current of time seeme too protractiue extended, or breed anie disvnion betwixt them, for he would accelerate & festinate his procrastinating ministers and commissaries in the countrey, by Letters as expedite as could bee. I giue him his true dialect and right varnish of elocution, not varying one I tittle from the high straine of his harmonious phrase, wherein he puts downe *Hermogenes* with his Art of Rhetorique, and so farre out-strips ouer-tunged Beldam *Roome*, or her super-delicate bastard daughter ceremonious dissembling *Italy*, as *Europe* puts down all the other parts of the World in populous societies and fertilenes. "A Gentleman, a frend of mine, that was no straunger to such bandyings as had past bewixt vs, was desirous to see how he lookt since my strappadoing and torturing him; in which spleene he went and enquird for him: answere was made he was but new risen, and if it wold please him to stay, he would come down to him anon. Two howres good by the clocke he attended his pleasure, whiles he (as some of his fellow In-mates haue since related vnto mee) stood acting by the glasse all his gestures he was to vse all the day after, and currying & smudging and pranking himselfe vnmeasurably. *Post varios casus*, his case of tooth-pikes, his combe case, his | case of head-brushes O 3v and beard-brushes, run ouer, *& tot discrimina rerum*, rubbing cloathes of all kindes, downe he came, and after the *bazelos manus*, with amplifications and complements hee belaboured him till his eares tingled and his feet ak'd againe. Neuer was man so surfetted and ouer-gorged with English, as hee cloyd him with his generous spirites, renumeration of gratuities, stopping the posternes of in-

25 fellow-inmates *Coll.*: fellow-Inmates *Gro.*

gratitude, bearing the launcier too seuere into his imperfections, and trauersing the ample forrest of interlocutions. The Gentleman swore to mee that vpon his first apparition (till he disclosed himselfe) he tooke him for an Vsher of a dancing Schoole, neither doth he greatly differ from it, for no Vsher of a dauncing Schoole was euer such a *Bassia Dona* or *Bassia de vmbra de vmbra des los pedes*, a kisser of the shadow of your feetes shadow, as he is. I haue perused vearses of his, written vnder his owne hand to *Sir Philip Sidney*, wherein he courted him as he were another *Cyparissus* or *Ganimede*; the last *Gordian* true loues knot or knitting vp of them is this:

Sum iecur ex quo te primùm Sydnee vidi,
Os oculósque regit, cogit amare iecur.

All liuer am I, Sidney, since I saw thee;
My mouth, eyes, rules it, and to loue doth draw mee.

Not halfe a yeare since, comming out of *Lincolnshyre*, it was my hap to take *Cambridge* in my waye, where I had not been in sixe yeare before, when by wonderful destenie, who (in the same Inne and very next chamber to mee, parted but by a wainscot doore that was naild vp, either vnwitting of other) should be lodgd but his *Gabrielship*, that, in a manner, had liu'd as long a Pilgrim from thence
O 4 as I? Euerie circumstance I cannot stand | to reckon vp, as how wee came to take knowledge of one anothers being there, or what a stomacke I had to haue scratcht with him, but that the nature of the place hindred mee, where it is as ill as pettie treason to look but awry on the sacred person of a Doctour, and I had plotted my reuenge otherwise; as also of a meeting or conference on his part desired, wherein all quarrells might be discust and drawne to an attonement, but *non vult fac*, I had no fancie to it, for once before I had bin so cousend by his colloging, though personally we neuer met face to face, yet by trouch-

2 interlocution *Coll., Gro.* 13 *Qy. read Sydnëie (as Harvey)?* 20–1 *Qy. read* who in . . . mee (parted?

men and vant-curriers betwixt vs: nor could it settle in my conscience to loose so much paines I had tooke in new arraying & furbushing him, or that a publique wrong in Print was to be so sleightly slubberd ouer in priuate, with Come, come, giue me your hand, let vs bee frends, and therevpon I drinke to you. And a further doubt there was if I had tasted of his beife and porredge at *Trinity Hal*, as he desired, (*notandum est*, for the whole fortnight together that he was in *Cambridge*, his Commons ran in the Colledge detriments, as the greatest curtesie hee could doo the House whereof he was, to eate vp their meate and neuer pay anie thing;) If I had (I say) rusht in my selfe, and two or three hungrie Fellowes more, and cryde, Doo you want anie guestes? what, nothing but bare Commons? it had beene a question (considering the good-will that is betwixt vs) whether he wold haue lent me a precious dram more than ordinarie, to helpe disgestion: he may be such another craftie mortring Druggeir, or Italian porredge seasoner, for anie thing I euer saw in his complexion. That word complexion is dropt foorth in good time, for to describe to | you his complexion & composition, entred I O 4v into this tale by the way, or tale I found in my way riding vp to *London*. It is of an adust swarth chollericke dye, like restie bacon, or a dride scate-fish; so leane and so meagre, that you wold thinke (like the Turks) he obseru'd 4. Lents in a yere, or take him for the Gentlemans man in the *Courtier*, who was so thin cheekd and gaunt and staru'd, that, as he was blowing the fire with his mouth, the smoke tooke him vp, like a light strawe, and carried him to the top or funnell of the chimney, wher he had flowne out God knowes whether, if there had not bin crosse barres ouer-whart that stayde him; his skin riddled and crumpled like a peice of burnt parchment; & more channels & creases he hath in his face than there be Fairie circles on *Salsburie Plaine*, and wrinckles & frets of old age than characters on Christs Sepulcher in *Mount Caluarie*, on which euerie one

23 chollerieke *Q*. 35 ffets (*broken* t) *Q*.

that comes scrapes his name and sets his marke to shewe that hee hath been there: so that whosoeuer shall behold him,

Esse putet Boreæ triste furentis opus,

will sweare on a booke I haue brought him lowe, and shrowdly broken him: which more to confirme, look on his head, and you shall finde a gray haire for euerie line I haue writ against him; and you shall haue all his beard white too, by that time hee hath read ouer this booke. For his stature, he is such another pretie *Iacke a Lent* as boyes throw at in the streete, and lookes, in his blacke sute of veluet, like one of these ieat droppes which diuers weare at their eares in stead of a iewell. A smudge peice of a handsome fellow it hath beene in his dayes, but now he is olde and past his best, and fit for nothing but to be a Noble
P 1 mans porter, or a Knight | of *Windsor*, cares haue so crazed him, and disgraces to the verie bones consumed him; amongst which hys missing of the Vniuersitie Oratorship, wherin Doctor *Perne* besteaded him, wrought not the lightliest with him; and if none of them were, his course of life is such as would make anie man looke ill on it, for he wil endure more hardnes than a Camell, whó in the burning sands will liue foure dayes without water & feeds on nothing but thistles and wormewood & such lyke; no more doth he feed on anie thing, when he is at *Saffron-walden*, but sheepes trotters, porknells, and butterd rootes; and other-while in an Hexameter meditation, or when hee is inuenting a new part of *Tully*, or hatching such another Paradoxe as that of *Nicholaus Copernicus* was, who held that the Sun remains immoueable in the center of the World & that the Earth is moou'd about the Sunne, he would be so rapt that hee would remaine three dayes and neither eate nor drinke, and within doores he will keepe seauen yeare together, and come not abroad so much as to Church. The like for seauen and thirtie weekes space

2 behold] hehold *Q.* 12 ieat droppes] *Coll., Gro.*: ieatdroppes *Q.* 26 sheepes trotters, porknells] *Gro.*: trotters, sheepes porknells *Q, Coll.*

together he did, while he lay at *Wolfes* coppying against mee, neuer stirring out of dores or being churched all that while, but like those in the West country, that after the *Paulin* hath cald them, or they haue seene a spirit, keep themselues darke 24. howres; so after I had plaid the spirit in hanting him in my 4. Letters cõfuted, he could by no means endure the light, nor durst venter himself abroad in the open aire for many mõths after, for feare he should be fresh blasted by all mens scorne and derision. My instructions of him are so ouer-flowing and numberlesse that, except I abridge them, my Book will | grow such P 1v a bouncer that those which buy it must bee faine to hire a porter to carry it after them in a basket. For breuitie sake I omit twentie things, as the conflict betwixt my Hostesse of the Dolphin in *Cambridge* and him, at my beeing there, about his lying in her house a fortnight, and keeping one of the best Chambers, yet neuer offring to spend a penie; the Hackney-mens of *Saffron-waldens* pursuing him for their horses, he hiring them but for three dayes and keeping them fifteene, & telling him very flatly when he went about to excuse it, that they could not spare them from their Cart so long, they being Cart horses which they set him on. The description of that poore *Iohn a Droynes* his man, whom he had hyred for that iourney, a great big-boand thresher, put in a blue coate too short wasted for him, & a sute made of the inner linings of a sute turnd outward, being white canuas pinkt vpon cotton; his intollerable boasting at *Wolfes* to such as wold hold him chat & he could draw to talk with him, that he thought no man in *England* had more learning than himselfe; hys threatning anie Noble-man whatsoeuer, that durst take my part, and vowing he would do this and that to him if he should; his incensing my L. Mayor against me that thē was, by directing vnto him a perswasiue pamphlet to persecute mee, and not to let slip the aduantage hee had against mee, and reporting certaine words I shuld speake

against him that Christmas at a Tauerne in *London*, when I was in the *Ile of Wight* then and a great while after. His inciting the Preacher at *Poules Crosse*, that lay at the same house in *Wood-streete* which hee did, to preach manifestly against *Master Lilly* and mee, with *Woe to the* P 2 *Printer, woe to the Seller, woe to the | Buyer, woe to the Author.* But in none of these will I insist, which are remnants in comparison of the whole peice I haue to shew; only I will haue a short tutch at *Wolfes* and his parting, and so make an end of an old song, and bid God night to this Historie.

Pierses Supererogation printed, the charge whereof the Doctor had promist to defray and be countable to *Wolfe* for, amounting (with his diet) to 36. pounds, from *Saffronwalden* no argent would bee heard of, wherefore downe he must go amongst his tenaunts, as he pretended, (which are no other than a company of beggers, that lye in an out barne of his mothers sometimes,) and fetch vp the grand summes, or *legem pone.* To accomplish this, *Wolfe* procur'd him horses and money for his expences, lent him one of his Prentises (for a seruing creature) to grace him, clapping an olde blue coate on his backe, which was one of my *Lord of Harfords* liueries, (he pulling the badge off,) & so away they went. *Saint Christopher* be their speed, and send them well backe againe; but so prayes not our *Dominico Ciuilian*, for he had no such determination: but as soone as euer he had left *London* behinde him, he insinuated with this *Iuuentus* to run away frõ his Master, and take him for his good Lord and supporter. The Page was easily mellowd with his attractiue eloquẽce, as what heart of adamant or enclosed in a Crocodyles skin (which no yron will pierce), that hath the power to withstand the Mercurian heauenly charme of hys Rhetorique? With him he stayes halfe a yere, rubbing his toes, and following him with his sprinkling glasse & his boxe of kissing comfets from place to place; whiles his Master, fretting & chafing

10 god night *Coll., Gro.*

to be thus colted of both | of them, is readie to send out P 2v
Processe for the Doctor, and get his Nouice cride in euerie
market Towne in *Essex*: but they preuented him, for the
impe or stripling, being almost staru'd in this time of his
beeing with him, gaue him warning he would no longer
serue him, but wold home to his master what euer shift he
made. *Gabriell* thought it not amisse to take him at his
word, because his clothes were all greasie and worne out,
& hee is neuer wont to keepe anie man longer than the sute
lasteth he brings with him, and then turne him to grasse
and get one in newe trappings; and euer picke quarrells
with him before the yeares end, because hee would be
sure to pay him no wages: yet in his prouident forecast he
concluded it better policie for him to send him backe to his
Master than he should goe of his owne accord, and whereas
he was to make a iourney to *London* within a weeke or
such a matter, to haue his blue coate (being destitute of
euer another trencher-carrier) credit him vp, though it were
thrid bare. So considered, and so done, at an Inne at
Islington hee alights, and there keepes him aloofe, *London*
being too hot for him. His retinue (or attendaunt), with
a whole cloke-bag full of commendations to his master, he
dismisseth, and, in stead of the 36. pounds hee ought him,
wild him to certefie him that verie shortly hee would send
him a couple of Hennes to Shroue with. *Wolfe*, receiuing
this message, and holding himselfe palpablye flouted therein,
went and feed Baylies, and getts one *Scarlet* (a frend of his)
to goe and draw him foorth, & hold him with a tale whiles
they might steale on him & arrest him. The watch-word
giu'n them when they should seaze vpon him, was *Wolfe*
(*I must needes say*) | *hath vsde you verie grosely:* and to P 3
the intent he might suspect nothing by *Scarlets* comming,
there was a kind letter fram'd in *Wolfes* name, with *To the
right worshipfull of the Lawes*, in a great Text hand, for a
superscription on the out-side; and vnderneath at the
bottome, *Your worships euer to commaund, and prest to doo*

19 *Possibly* thrid-bare *Q.*

you seruice, Iohn Wolfe. The contents of it were about the talking with his Lawier, and the eager proceeding of his Sister in law against him. This letter deliuerd and read, and *Scarlet* and he (after the tasting of a cup of dead beere, that had stood pawling by him in a pot three dayes) descending into some conference, he began to finde himselfe ill apaid with *Wolfes* encroaching vpon him, and asking him money for the Printing of his Booke, and his diet whiles he was close prisoner, attending and toyling about it, & obiecting how other men of lesse desert wer liberally recompenst for their paines, whereas he (whose worth ouerbalaunst the proudest) must be constrained to hire men to make themselues rich. I appeale to you (quoth hee) whether euer anie mans workes sold like mine. I, euen from a childe, good master Doctor, replide *Scarlet*, and made a mouth at him ouer his shoulder, so soothing him on forward till the Baylies Cue came of *Wolfes* abusing him verie grosely, which they not failing to take at the first rebound, stept into the roome boldly (as they were two well bumbasted swaggering fat-bellies, hauing faces as broad as the backe of a chimney, and as big as a towne bag-pudding) and clapping the Doctor with a lusty blow on the shoulder, that made his legs bow vnder him & his guts cry quag againe, by your leaue, they said vnto him (in
P 3v a thundring yeoman vshers *diapason*), | in Gods name and the Queenes wee doo arrest you. Without more pause, away they hurried him, & made him beleeue they wold carry him into the Citie, where his Creditor was, whē, comming vnder *Newgate*, they told him they had occasion to goe speake with one there, and so thrust him in before them for good manners sake, because he was a Doctour and their better, bidding the Keeper, as soone as euer he was in, to take charge of him. Some lofty tragicall Poet helpe mee, that is dayly conuersant in the fierce encounters of Raw-head and bloody bones, and whose pen, like the Plowes in Spayne that often stumble on golde vaines, still

35 Bloody-bones *Coll.*: bloody-bones *Gro.*

splits and stumpes it selfe against olde yron and raking ore battred Armour and broken Truncheons, to recount and expresse the more than *Herculean* fury he was in, when hee sawe hee was so notably betrayd and bought and solde: Hee fumde, he stampt, he buffeted himselfe about the face, beat his head against the walls, and was ready to byte the flesh off his armes if they had not hindred him: out of doores hee would haue gone (as I cannot blame him) or hee swore hee would teare downe the walls and set the house on fire if they resisted him: whither, quoth he, you villaines, haue you brought mee? To Newgate, good Master Doctour, with a lowe legge they made answer. I knowe not where I am. In Newgate, agayne replyed they, good Master Doctour: Into some blinde corner you haue drawne me to be murdred: to no place (replyed they the third time) but to Newgate, good Master Doctour. Murder, murder, (he cryed out): some body breake in, or they will murder mee. No murder but an action of debt, sayd they, good Master Doctour. O you pro-|phane *Plebeyans*, exclaymed hee, I will massacre, I will P 4 crucifie you for presuming to lay hands thus on my reuerent person. All this would not serue him, no more than *Hackets* counterfet madnesse woulde keepe him from the Gallowes, but vp he was had and shewed his lodging where hee should lye by it, and willed to deliuer vp his wepon. That wrung him on the withers worse than all the rest. What, my armes, my defence, my weapon, my dagger? quoth hee; my life then, I see, is conspired against, when you seek to bereaue me of the instruments that should secure it. They ratled him vp soundly, and told him if he would be conformable to the order of the prison, so it was; otherwise hee should bee forc't: Force him no forces, no such mechanicall drudges should haue the honor of his artillery: marry, if some worthy Maiestrate came, as their Master or Mistresse, it might be, vppon good conditions for

5 solde. Hee *Coll.*, *Gro.* 13 answer. I] *Coll.*: answer: I *Q*; *Gro.*
25 willed him to *a*. 26–7 rest. What] *Coll.*, *Gro.*: rest, what *Q*.

his lifes safetie and preseruation, hee woulde surrender. The Mistresse of the house, (her husband beeing absent,) vnderstanding of his folly, came vp to him, and went about to perswade him. At her sight somewhat calm'd hee was, as it is a true amorous Knight, and hath no power to deny any thing to ladies & gentlewomen, & he told her if she would command her seruants forth, (whom hee scornd should haue theyr eyes so much illuminated as to beholde any martiall engin of his,) hee would in all humillity dispoyle himselfe of it. Shee so farre yeelded to him; when as soone as they were out, he runs and swaps the doore too, & drawes his dagger vpon her with, O, I will kill thee, what could I doo to thee nowe? and so extreamely terrified her, that shee scritcht out to her seruants, who
P 4v burst in in heapes, as | thinking he would haue rauisht her. Neuer was our *Taptharthārath* (though hee hath run through manie briers) in the like ruthfull pickle hee was then, for to the bolts he must, amongst theeues and rogues, and tast of the Widdowes Almes, for drawing his dagger in a Prison: frō which there was no deliuerance, if basely hee had not falne vppon his knees and askt hir forgiuenes. Dinner being readie, he was cald downe, & there beeing a better man than hee present, who was plac'd at the vpper end of the boord, for very spite that hee might not sit highest, he straight flung to his chamber againe, and vowd by heauen and earth and all the flesh on his backe, he would famish himselfe, before he would eate a bit of meate as long as hee was in *Newgate*. How inuiolably hee kept it, I will not conceale from you. About a two howres after, when he felt his craw emptie, and his stomacke began to wamble, hee writ a Supplication to his Hostesse, that he might speak with her; to whome (at her approaching) hee recited what a rash vow he had made, and what a commotion there was in his entrayles or pudding-house, for want of food; wherefore, if she would steale to him a byt secretly and let there be no words of it, hee would, I, marry, would hee, (when hee was releast,) perfourme mountaines. She

(in pittie of him) seeing him a brain-sicke bedlam and an innocent, that had no sense to gouerne himselfe, being loth he should be damnd and go to hell for a meales meate, hauing vowd and through famine readie to breake it, got her husband to go forth with him out of dores, to some Cookes shop at *Pye-corner* there-abouts, or (as others will haue it) to the Tap-house vnder the Prison; where hauing eaten suf-|ficient his hungrie bodie to sustaine, the diuell Q 1
a scute had he to pay the reckoning, but the Keepers credite must goe for it. How he got out of this Castle dolorus, if anie be with childe to know, let them enquire of the Minister then seruing at *Saint Albanes* in *Wood-street*, who in Christian charitie, onely for the names sake (not being acquainted with him before), enterd bõd for him to answere it at law, & satisfied the House for his lodging and *Mangerie*. But being restored to the open aire, the case with him was little altred, for no roofe had he to hide his noddle in, or whither he might go to set vp his rest, but in the streets vnder a bulk he should haue been constraind to haue kenneld, & chalkt out his cabbin, if the said Minister had not the second time stood his friend, and preferd him to a chamber at one *Rolfes*, a Serieants in *Wood-streete*; whom (as I take it) he also procured to be equally bound with him for his new cousens apparance to the law, which he neuer did, but left both of them in the lurtch for him; and, running in debt with *Rolfe* beside for house-roome and diet, one day when he was from home, he closely conuaid away his truncke foorth of doores, and shewde him a fayre paire of heeles. At *Saffron-walden* (for the most part) from that his flight to this present hath hee mewd and coopt vp himselfe inuisible, being counted for dead & no tidings of him, till I came in the winde of him at *Cambridge*. And so I winde vp his thrid of life, which, I feare, I haue drawne out too large, although in three quarters of it (of purpose to curtall it) I haue left descant, and taskt me to plaine song: whereof, that it is

11 Dolorus *Coll., Gro.*

anie other than plaine truth let no man distrust, it being by
Q 1v good men and true (word for word as I let it fly a-|mongst you) to mee in the feare of God vttred, all yet aliue to confirme it: wherefore settle your faith immoueably, and now you haue heard his life, iudge of his doctrine accordingly.

Carnead: *His life and doctrine may both be to vs an ensample, for since the raigne of* Queen Gueniuer *was there neuer seene worse.*

Import: *Yet for all he is such a vaine* Basilisco *and* Captaine Crack-stone *in all his actions & conuersation, & swarmeth in vile Canniball words, there is some good matter in his booke against thee.*

Respond: We will trie that matter immediately, for my minde euer giuing mee that wee should haue you, and such like Humorists of your Faction, runne from one matter to another, & from the matter to the manner, and from the manner to the forme, and from the forme to the cause, and from the cause to the effect, I prouided to match you at all weapons. And here, next his life, I haue drawen an Abridgement or Inuentorie of all the materiall Tractates and Contents of hys Booke.

Import: *Then thou hast done well, for it is it that I all this while lookt for. I pray thee, let me read it my selfe.*

A Summarie or breife Analysis of ~~such matters as~~ are handled in the Doctors Booke.

IN*primis*, one Epistle, of a sheete and more of paper, to his gentle & liberall frends, *Master Barnabe Barnes, Master Iohn Thorius, Master Anthonie Chute*, and euerie fauourable Reader. |

Q 2 Carnead: *O ho, those whom hee calls the three orient wits. Mine eyes are partly accessarie vnto it. It is to thanke them for their curteous Letters and commendatorie Sonnets, writ to him from a farre, as namely, out of the hall into the kitchin at* Wolfes, *where altogether at one time they lodged and boorded. With a great manie maidenly*

4 it. Wherefore *Coll., Gro.*

excuses of Tis more of your gentlenes than my deseruing, and I cannot without blushing repeate, and without shame remember. Then he comes vpon thee with I'le, I'le, I'le.

Respond: What should I say, *I will and commaund*, like a Prince? hee might as well write against *Poules* for hauing three Iles in it.

Carnead: *Hee calls thee the greene Popiniay, & saies thou art thine owne idoll.*

Respond: Let him either shew how or wherein, or I will not beleeue him; & my negatiue (in any ground in *England*) is as good as his affirmatiue.

Carnead: *And so proceeds with complement and a little more complement, and a crust of quippes, and a little more complement after that: then he falls in exhorting those his three Patrons to goe forward in maturitie, as they haue begun in pregnancie; whose* Parthenophils *and* Parthenopes *embellished, and* Shores Wife *eternized, shall euerlastingly testifie what they are.*

Respond: And so haue I testifide for them what they are, which will last time enough.

Carnead: *Hee bids* Barnabe of the Barnes *bee the gallant Poet like* Spencer, *or the valiant Souldiour like* Baskeruile; *and euer remember his French Seruice vnder such a Generall.*

Respond: What his Soldiourship is I cannot iudge, | but Q 2v
if you haue euer a chaine for him to runne awaye with, as
hee did with a Noble-mans Stewards chayne at his Lords
enstalling at *Windsore*; or if you would haue anie rymes
to the tune of *stink-a-pisse*, hee is for you; in one place of
his *Parthenophill and Parthenope* wishing no other thing
of Heauen but that hee might bee transformed to the
Wine his Mistres drinks, and so passe thorough her.

Bentiu: *Therein hee was verie ill aduisde, for so the next time his Mistres made water, he was in danger to be cast out of her fauour.*

Respond: Of late he hath set foorth another Booke,

1 *excuses, of tis Q.* 29 you; in] *Coll.*: you. In *Q*, *Gro.*

which hee entitles no lesse than *A deuine Centurie of Sonets,* and prefixeth for his Posie,

Altera Musa venit, quid ni sit & alter Appollo?

As much to say as why may not my Muse bee as great an *Appollo* or God of Poetrie as the proudest of them? but it comes as farre short as *Paris Garden* Cut of the heigth of a Cammell, or a Cocke-boate of a Carricke: such another deuice it is as the godly Ballet of *Iohn Carelesse*, or the Song of *Greene sleeues* moralized.

Carnead: *For his Caualiership, since thou art not instructed in it, let mee tell thee, it is lewder by nine score times than his Poetry; since his doughtie seruice in* France *fiue yeares agoe, I not forgetting him; where, hauing followd the Campe for a weeke or two, and seeing there was no care had of keeping the Queenes Peace, but a man might haue his braines knockt out, and no Iustice or Cunstable neere hand to send foorth precepts, and make hue and crie after the murdrers; without farther tarrying or consultation, to the Generall he went, and told him he did not like of this quar-*

Q 3 *relling kinde of life, and common oc-*|*cupation of murdring, wherein (without anie Iurie or triall, or giuing them so much leaue as to saye their praiers) men were run thorough and had their throats cut, both against Gods lawes, her Maiesties lawes, & the lawes of all Nations: wherefore hee desir'd license to depart, for hee stood euerie howre in feare and dread of his person, and it was alwaies his praier,* From suddain death, good Lord, deliuer vs. *Vpon this motion, there were diuers warlike Knights and principall Captaines, who, rather than they would bee bereau'd of his pleasant companie, offred to picke out a strong guard amongst them for the safe engarisoning and better shielding him from perrill. Two stept foorth and presented themselues as musketiers before him, a third and fourth as targatiers behinde him, a fifth and sixt vowd to trie it out at the push of the pike before the malicious foe should inuade him. But*

6 *Qy. read* as a *Paris Garden* Cut?

home hee would, nothing could stay him, to finish Parthenophil and Parthenope *and write in praise of* Gabriell Haruey.

Consil: *Hee was wise, hee lou'd no blowes: but what said the Doctor to his other two copesmates?*

Carnead: *Why, thus: Be thou,* Iohn, *the many tungd linguist like* Androwes, *or the curious Intelligencer like* Bodley; *& neuer forget thy Netherlandish Traine vnder him that taught the Prince of* Nauarre, *now the valorous King of* France.

Respond: Of this *Iohn Thorius* more sparingly I wil speake, because hee hath made his peace with mee, & there bee in him sundrie good parts of the Tungs and otherwise; though thirtie parts comming behinde & limping after Doctor *Androwes*: who (if it bee no offence so to compare him) is *tanquam Paulus in Cathe-*|*dra*, powerfull Q 3v preaching like *Paul* out of his chaire; and his Church another *Pantheon*, or *Templum omnium deorum*, the absolutest Oracle of all sound Deuinitie heere amongst vs; hee mixing the two seuerall properties of an Orator and a Poet both in one, which is not onely to perswade, but to win admiration. *Thorius*, being of that modestie and honestie I ascribe to him, cannot but bee irksomly ashamed, to bee resembled so hyperborically, and no lesse agreeu'd than Master *Bodley* (a Gentleman in our Common-wealth of singular desertiue reckoning & industrie, beeing at this present her Maiesties Agent in the Low countries) ought he to bee at the hellish detested *Iudas* name of an Intelligencer, which the Doctor in the waye of friendship hath throwne vpon him. Master *Bodley* calls him rascall & villaine for his labour, and before his going ouer was mad to know where he might hunt him out to bee reuengd: which both hee and *Thorius* haue reason for, since but to be couertly suspected for an Intelligencer (much more to be publikely registred in Print for such a flearing false brother or *Ambodexter*) is to make eyther of them worse pointed and wondered at than a cuckold or wittall, and

set them vp as common marks for euerie iackanapes Prentise to kicke, spit, or throw durt at. To bee an Intelligencer is to haue oathes at will, and thinke God nere regards them; to frame his religion and alleageance to his Prince according to euerie companie he comes in. A Iew he is, that but for the spoile loues no man; a curre, that flatters & fawns vpon euerie one, low crowching by the ground like a tumbler, till hee may spie an aduantage, and pluck out his throate. An ingratefull slaue, that there
Q 4 spendeth | the bitterest of his venome, where hee hath receiued most benefites; a hang-man, that dispatcheth all that come vnder his hands; a drunken serieant or sumner, that could not liue if (like the diuell) hee did not from time to time enquire after the sinnes of the people; a necessarie member in a State to bee vsde to cut off vnnecessarie members. Such fame hath he preferd Master *Bodley* too, and wisheth *Thorius* to emulate. By his Netherlandish trayne vnder him that taught the Prince of *Nauarre*, now the valorous King of *France*, is not to bee gathered that hee was schoole-fellow to the King of *France*, as he would faine put the world in a fooles Paradice, because hee hath sonnetted it in hys praise, but that hee was Doctor *Coranus* sonne of *Oxford*, who was Tutor to the said King, as well he might bee, and that no argument his sonne should be so well improou'd as he is.

Carnead: *The last of them is* Chute, *to whome hee thus dilateth.* Be thou, *Anthonie*, the flowing Oratour, like *Doue*, and the skilfull Herald, like *Clarencius*; and euer remember thy *Portugall* Voyage vnder *Don Anthonio.*

Respond: Chute, is hee such a high Clearke in hys Bookes? I knew when hee was but a low Clarke, and carried an Atturnies bookes after him. But this I will say for him, though hee bee dead and rotten, and by his obsequies hath preuented the vengeaunce I meant to haue executed vpon him: of a youth that could not vnderstand a word of Latine, hee lou'd lycoras, and drunke posset curd, the best

5–6 in: a *Coll., Gro.*

that euer put cuppe to mouth; and for his Oratorship, it was such that I haue seene him *non plus* in giuing the charge at the creating | of a new Knight of *Tobacco*; Q 4v
though, to make amends since, he hath kneaded and daub'd vp a Commedie, called The transformation of the King of *Trinidadoes* two Daughters, Madame *Panachæa* and the Nymphe *Tobacco*; and, to approue his Heraldrie, scutchend out the honorable Armes of the smoakie Societie. His voiage vnder *Don Anthonio* was nothing so great credit to him as a French Varlet of the chamber is; nor did he follow *Anthonio* neither, but was a Captaines Boye that scornd writing and reading, and helpt him to set downe his accounts and score vp dead payes. But this was our *Graphiel Hagiels* tricke of *Wily Beguily* herein, that where-as he could get no man of worth to crie *Placet* to his workes, or meeter it in his commendation, those worthlesse Whippets and Iack Strawes hee could get, hee would seeme to enable and compare with the highest. Hereby hee thought to connycatch the simple world, and make them beleeue that these and these great men, euerie waye sutable to Syr *Thomas Baskeruile*, Master *Bodley*, Doctor *Androwes*, Doctor *Doue*, *Clarencius*, and Master *Spencer*, had seperately contended to outstrip *Pindarus* in his *Olympics* and sty aloft to the highest pitch, to stellifie him aboue the cloudes and make him shine next to *Mercury*. Here some little digression I must borrow, to reuenge his base allusion of Sir *Thomas Baskeruile*, euen as I haue done of Doctor *Androwes*; neither of them being men that euer saluted mee, or I rest bound vnto in anie thing; otherwise than, by Doctor *Androwes* own desert and Master *Lillies* immoderate commending him, by little and little I was drawne on to bee an Auditor of his: since when, whensoeuer I heard him, I | thought it was but hard and scant allowance that R 1
was giu'n him, in comparison of the incomparable gifts that were in him. For Sir *Thomas Baskeruile*, *France*, *England*, the *Low Countries*, & *India* acknowledgeth him; and

5 Transformation *Coll., Gro.* 23 *Olympicis Q, Coll., Gro.*

though it was neuer my hap, but once in a young Knights Chamber in the *Strand* (none of my coldest well-wishers), to light in his companie, yet, for Syr *Roger Williams* testimonie of him, (a noble Gentleman that a yeare and a halfe before his death I was excessiuely beholding too, & on whom I haue vowd, when my busines are a little ouercome, to bestow a memoriall Epitaph, such as *Plato* would in no more but foure verses to bee set vpon the graues of the dead,) downe his throate I will thrust this turn-broach comparison of a chicken and a chrisome with one of the most tryed Souldiours of Christendome. Doctor *Doue* and *Clarencius* I turne loose to bee their owne Arbitratours and Aduocates; the one being eloquent inough to defend himselfe, and the other a Vice roy & next Heyre apparant to the King of Heralds, able to emblazon him in his right colours, if hee finde hee hath sustained any losse by him: as also, in like sort, Master *Spencer*, whom I do not thrust in the lowest place because I make the lowest valuation of, but as wee vse to set the *Summ' tot'* alway vnderneath or at the bottome, he being the *Sum' tot'* of whatsoeuer can be said of sharpe inuention and schollership.

Consil: *Of the Doctor it may be said, as* Ouid *sayth of the Scritch-owle,*

Alijsque (dolens) fit causa dolendi;

Hee cannot bee content to bee miserable himselfe, but hee must draw others to miscarrie with him. And as Plato |
R 1v *had his best beloued Boy,* Agatho, Socrates *his* Alcibiades, Virgill *his* Alexis; *so hath hee his* Barnabe *and* Anthony *for his minions and sweet-harts: though therein I must needes tell him* (*as* Fabritius *the Romane Consull writ to* Pirrhus *when hee sent him back his Phisition that offred to poyson him*) *hee hath made as ill choyce of frends as of enemies; seeking, like the Panther, to cure himselfe with mans dung, and with the verie excrements of the rubbishest wits that are, to restore himselfe to his bloud, and repaire his credit and estimation.*

24 dolendi. *Q, Coll., Gro.*

Bentiu: *If his Patrons bee such* Peter Pingles *and* Moundragons, *hee cannot chuse but bee sixtie times a more poore Slauonian arse-worme.*

Respond: Tender itchie brainde infants, they car'd not what they did, so they might come in print: and of that straine are a number of mushrumpes more, who pester the World with Pamphlets before they haue heard of *Terence Pamphilus* & can construe & pearse *Proh Dii immortales*; being like those barbarous People in the hot Countries, who, when they haue bread to make, doo no more but clap the dowe vpon a poast on the out-side of their houses, and there leaue it to the Sunne to bake; so their indigested conceipts (farre rawer than anie dowe) at all aduentures vpon the poastes they clap, pluck them off who's will: and if (like the Sunne) anie man of iudgement (though in scorne) do but looke vpon them, they thinke they haue strooke it dead, and made as good a batch of Poetrie as may be. Neither of these princockesses (*Barnes* or *Chute*) once cast vp their noses towards *Powles Church-yard*, or so much as knew how to knock at a Printing-house dore, till they consorted themselues with *Haruey*, who infe-|cted them R 2
within one fortnight with his owne spirit of Bragganisme; which after so increased and multiplied in them, as no man was able to endure them; the first of them (which is *Barnes*) presently vppon it, because hee would bee noted, getting him a strange payre of *Babilonian* britches, with a codpisse as big as a *Bolognian* sawcedge, and so went vp and downe Towne, and shewd himself in the Presence at Court, where he was generally laught out by the Noble-men and Ladies: and the other (which is *Chute*) because *Haruey* had praised him for his Oratorship & Heraldry, to approue himselfe no lesse than hee had giu'n his word for him, sets his mouth of a new key, and would come foorth with such *Kenimnæwo* compt metaphors and phrases, that *Edge* was but a botcher to him; and, to emblazon his Heraldrie, he painted himself like a Curtizan, which no

24 them. The *Q, Coll., Grv.*

Stationers boy in *Poules Church-yard* but discouerd and pointed at. One of the best Articles against *Barnes* I haue ouer-slipt, which is, that he is in Print for a Braggart in that vniuersall applauded Latine Poem of Master *Campions*; where, in an Epigram entituled *In Barnum*, beginning thus,

Mortales decem tela inter Gallica cæsos,

he shewes how hee bragd when he was in *France* he slue ten men, when (fearfull cowbaby) he neuer heard peice shot off but hee fell flat on his face. To this effect it is, though the words somwhat varie.

Carnead: Alloune, alloune, *let vs march, and from armes and skirmishing cast thy selfe in the armes of a sweete Gentlewoman, that here at the end of the Epistle stands readie to embrace thee.* Gabriell *calls her* the excellent Gentlewoman, *his patronesse or rather champio-*|
R 2v *nesse in this quarrell*, meeter by nature, and fitter by nurture, to bee an inchaunting Angell with a white quill, than a tormenting furie with her blacke incke.

Respond: What, is he like a Tinker, that neuer trauailes without his wench and his dogge? or like a *Germane*, that neuer goes to the warres without his *Tannakin* and her Cocke on her shoulder? That Gentlewoman (if she come vnder my fists) I will make a gentlewoman, as Doctor *Perne* said of his mans wife.

Tunc plena voluptas,
Cum pariter victi fœmina virq; iacent;

Then it is sport worth the seeing, when he and his woman lye crouching for mercie vnder my feete. I will bestow more cost in belabouring her, because, throughout the whole pawnch of his booke, hee is as infinite in commending her as Saint *Ierome* in praise of Virginitie; and oftener mentions her than *Virgill* & *Theocritus Amarillis*. In one place he calls her *the one shee*, in another *the credible Gentlewoman*, in a third *the heauenly*

25 wife, *Coll., Gro.* 27 *iacent. Q, Coll., Gro.*

plant, and the fourth *a new starre in Cassiopeia*, in the fifth *the heauenly creature*, in the sixth *a Lion in the field of Minerua*, in the seuenth *a right Bird of* Mercuries *winged chariot*, with a hundred such like: he saith, *shee hath read* Homer, Virgill, *the diuine Architipes of Hebrue, Greeke, and Romane valour*, Plutarch, Polien, Agrippa, Tyraquell.

Bentiu: *I haue found him, I haue the tract of him: hee thinkes in his owne person if hee should raile groscly, it will bee a discredit to him, and therefore hereafter hee would thrust foorth all his writings vnder the name of a Gentlewoman; who, howsoeuer shee scolds and playes the vixen neuer so, wilbe borne with: and to preuent that he | be* ¶ 3 *not descride by his alleadging of Authors, (which it will hardly bee thought can proceed from a woman,) hee casts forth this* Item, *that she hath read these and these books, and is well seene in all languages.*

Consil: *Shall wee haue a Hare of him then? a male one yeare, and a female another: or, as* Pliny *holds there is male and female of all things vnder heauen, and not so much but as of trees and precious stoanes; so cannot there be a male Confuter, but there must be a female confuter too; a* Simon Magus, *but hee must haue his whoore* Silenes; *an* Aristotle *that sacrificed to his harlot* Hermia, *but euerie* Silius Poeta *must imitate him? Doth he, when his owne wits faile, crie* Da, Venus, consilium, *Holy Saint* Venus, *inspire mee? But as* Bentiuole *hath wel put in,* Pars minima est ipsa puella sui. *I beleeue it is but a meere coppy of his countenaunce, and onely hee does it to breed an opinion in the world, that he is such a great man in Ladies and Gentlewomens bookes that they are readie to run out of their wits for him, as in the Turkes* Alchoron *it is written that 250. Ladies hanged themselues for the loue of* Mahomet, *and that, like another* Numa Pompilius, *he doth nothing without his Nymph* Egeria.

Imp: *Nay, if* Iupiter *ioynd with the Moone* (Haruey

1 and] in *Coll., Gro.* 13 *bee c.w.* 26 consilium ! *Holy Q, Gro.*

and his Gentlewoman) conspire against thee, & that, like another Messier Gallan, *the Hang-man of* Antwerp, *he hath a whole* Burdeil *vnder his gouernement, it cannot chuse but goe hard with thee. She will say, as the Italian Lady did, Kill my children as long as thou wilt, here is the mould to make more.*

Consil: *We read that* Semiramis *was in loue with a Horse, but for a Gentlewoman to bee in loue with an* | R 3v *Asse is such a tricke as neuer was.*

Respond: It would doo you good to heare how he gallops on in commending her; hee sayes shee enuies none but art in person and vertue incorporate, and that she is a *Sappho*, a *Penelope*, a *Minerua*, an *Arachne*, a *Iuno*, yeelding to all that vse her and hers well, that she stands vpon masculine and not feminine termes, & her hoatest fury may bee resembled to the passing of a braue Careere by a *Pegasus*, and wisheth hartily that he could dispose of her recreations.

Carnead: *Call for a Beadle and haue him away to Bridewell, for in euery sillable he commits letchery.*

Resp: He threats shee will strip my wit into his shirt, were that fayre body of the sweetest *Venus* in print, & that it will then appeare, as in a cleare Vrinall, whose wit hath the greene sicknes.

Bent: *If she strip thee to thy shirt, if I were as thee, I wold strip her to her smocke.*

Carnead: *That were to put that fayrest body of* Venus *in Print indeede with a witnes, and then shee neuer need to haue her water cast in an vrinall for the greene sicknes.*

Respond: She may be Queene *Didoes* peere for honestie for anie dealings I euer yet had with her; but anie Gentlewomans name put in his mouth, it is of more force to discredite it than *Licophrons* penne was to discredite *Penelope*, who, notwithstanding *Homers* praises of her, saith shee lay with all her wooers.

Consil: *Whether shee bee honest or no, he hath done enough to make her dishonest, since, as* Ouid *writes*

to a Leno, Vendibilis culpa facta puella sua est, *he hath set her commonly to sale in* Poules Church-yard. |

Import: *Let vs on with our Index or Catalogue, and* R 4
descant no more of her, since I am of the minde that, for all the stormes & tempests Haruey *from her denounceth, there is no such woman, but tis onely a Fiction of his, like* Menanders *Fable or Comedie cald* Thessala, *of women that could pluck back the Moone when they listed; or* Ennius *inuention of* Dido, *who, writing of the deedes of* Scipio, *first gaue life to that Legend. The Epistle Dedicatorie past, the Gentlewomans demurre or Prologue staggers next after, the first line whereof is stolne out of the Ballet of* Anne Askew; *for, as that begins,*

I am a woman poore and blinde,

so begins this,

O Muses, may a woman poore and blinde,

and goes on,

Ist possible for puling wench to tame
The furibundall champion of fame?

Bids thee hazard not, panting quill, thy aspen selfe, *calls thee* bombard-goblin, *and* most railipotent for euerie raine; *then followeth shee with a counter Sonnet or correction of her owne preamble, where there is nothing but* braggardous affronts, white liuerd tronts, where doth the vranie or furie ring, pulcrow implements, *Danters* scar-crow Presse; *and endes with* Vltrix accincta flagello.

Respond: Yea, Madam *Gabriela*, are you such an old ierker? then Hey ding a ding, vp with your petticoate, haue at your plum-tree: but the style bewraies it, that no other is this goodwife *Megara* but *Gabriel* himself; so doth the counter-sonnet and the correction of preambles, which is his methode as right as a fiddle. I will neuer open my lips to confute anye rag of it, it confu-|ting R 4v it selfe sufficiently in the verie rehearsall. And so doth

that which is annexed to it, of her olde Comedie new intituled, where she saith *her prose is as resolute as* Beuis *sword*, calls mee *rampant beast in formidable hide*, with I wot not what other *Getulian* slabberies; scarre-bugges mee with a Comedie, which shee hath scrawld and scribeld vp against mee. But wee shall lenuoy him, and trumpe and poope him well enough if the winde come in that doore, and he will needes fall a Comedizing it. Comedie vpon Comedie he shall haue, a Morall, a Historie, a Tragedie, or what hee will. One shal bee called *The Doctors dumpe*, another, *Haruey and his excellent Gentle-woman, Madame Whipsidoxy*, a third, *The triumphes of Saffron-walden, with the merrie conceipts of Wee three*, or, *The three Brothers;* a fourth, *Stoope Gallant*, or *The Fall of pride;* the fifth and last, *A pleasant Enterlude of No foole to the old Foole*, with a Iigge at the latter ende in English Hexameters of *O neighbour Gabriell, and his wooing of Kate Cotton.* More than half of one of these I haue done alreadie, and in *Candlemas Tearme* you shal see it acted, though better acted than hee hath been at *Cambridge*, hee can neuer bee; where vpon euerie Stage hee hath beene brought for a Sicophant and a Sow-gelder.

Bent: *Wilt thou haue nere a plucke at him for* Danters scar-crow Presse, *and so abusing thy Printer?*

Resp: In pudding time you haue spoken: my Printer, who euer, shall sustain no damage by me: & where hee tearmeth his Presse a *Scar-crow Presse*, he shall find it will *scare* & *crow* ouer the best Presse in *London* that shall Print a Reply to This. Hee that dares most, let him trie it, (as none will trie it that hath a care to liue | by his trade, not a hundred of anie Impression of the Doctors bookes euer selling.) My Printers Wife too hee hath had a twitch at in two or three places about the midst of his booke, and makes a *maulkin* & a shoo-clout of her, talkes of her *moody tung*, and *that she wil teach the storme winde to scolde English;* but let him looke

S 1

15 *Pride Coll., Gro.* 16 *No Foole Coll., Gro.*

to himselfe, for though in all the time I haue lyne in her House, and as long as I haue knowen her, I neuer saw anie such thing by her, yet since hee hath giu'n her so good a cause to finde her tung, and so vniustly & despitefully prouokt her, shee will tell him such a tale in his eare, the next time shee meetes him, as shall bee worse than a Northern blast to him, and haue a hand-full of his beard (if hee defend not himselfe the better) for a *maulkin* or wispe to wype her shooes with.

Import: *The Gentlewoman hauing taken her Lenuoy or Farewell,* Barnabe Barnes *steps in with* An Epistle to the right Worshipfull his especiall deare Frend, M. *Gabriell Haruey*, Doctor of the Law.

Respo: It were no booke else, if one or other were not drawne in to call him *Right Worshipfull*: & when hee hath no bodie to help him, he gets one of his Brothers to Epistle it to him, or, in their absence, faines an Epistle in their names, where his stile to the ful shalbe set in great letters, like a Bill for a House to be let: and, vppon paine of excommunication with bell, book, & candle, none of his Brothers must publish anie thing, but to his Dottrelship they must frame the like dedication.

Import: *The tenure of that* scrimpum scrampum *of* Barneses *is no more but this, to exhort the sweet Doctor (as hee names him) to .confound those viperous criticall monsters; whereto hee is manifestly vrged; though he bee | fitter to encounter some more delicate Paranymphes,* S 1v *and honour the* Vrany *of* Du Bartas. *Hee hath a Sonet with it, wherein hee inuokes and coniures vp all* Romes *learned Orators, sweete Grecian Prophets, Philosophers, wisest States-men, reuerend general Councells, all in one, to behold* the Doctors ennobled Arts, as precious stones in gold. *At the foote of that (like a right Pupill of the Doctors bringing vp) hee inserteth his post-script or correction of his Preamble, with a Counter-sonnet, superscribed* Nash, or the confuting Gentleman. *In which hee besmeares & reuiles thee with all the cutpurse names that is possible,*

and sayes hee cannot bethinke him of names ill enough, since thou raylst at one whom Bodine *&* Sidney *did not flatter.*

Respond: No more will I flatter him; hee may build vpon it. Thus it is: there was sometimes some prety expectation of this *Patter-wallet* & *Megiddo* that now I am a salting and poudring of; and then Sir *Philip Sidney* (as he was a naturall cherisher of men of the least towardnes in anie Arte whatsoeuer) held him in some good regard, and so did most men; & (it may be) some kinde Letters hee writ to him, to encourage and animate him in those his hopefull courses he was entred into: but afterward, when his ambitious pride and vanitie vnmaskt it selfe so egregiously, both in his lookes, his gate, his gestures, and speaches, and hee would do nothing but crake and parret it in Print, in how manie Noble-mens fauours hee was, and blab euerie light speach they vttred to him in priuate, cockering & coying himselfe beyond imagination; then Sir *Philip Sidney* (by little and little) began to looke askance on him, and not to care for him, though vtterly
S 2 shake him off | hee could not, hee would so fawne & hang vpon him. For M. *Bodines* commendation of him, it is no more but this, one cõplementarie Letter asketh another; & *Gabriell* first writing to him, and seeming to admire him and his workes, hee could doo no lesse in humanitie (beeing a Scholler) but returne him an answere in the like nature. But my yong Master *Barnabe* the bright, and his kindnes (before anie desert at all of mine towards him might plucke it on or prouoke it), I neither haue nor will bee vnmindfull of.

Import: *Here is another Sonet of his, which hee cals* Haruey, *or* The sweete Doctour, *consisting of* Sidney, Bodine, Hatcher, Lewen, Wilson, Spencer; *that all their life time haue done nothing but conspire to lawd and honour Poet* Gabriell.

Respond: Miserum est fuisse fælicem. It is a miserable

32 Sweete *Coll., Gro.*

thing for a man to be said to haue had frends, and now to haue nere a one left.

Import: *What saist thou to the Printers Aduertisement to the Gentleman Reader?*

Respond: I say, ware you breake not your shins in the third line on *preambles* and *postambles*; and that it is not the Printers, but *Harueys.*

Imp: *In it he makes mention of* Thorius *&* Chutes *sonets to bee added, prefixed, inserted, or annexed at the latter ende.*

Respond: The latter end? but the beginning of the tyde it may bee for the flowing.

Import: *As also a third learned French Gentlemans verses,* Monsieur Fregeuile Gautius, *who, both in French and Latine, hath publisht some weightie Treatises.*

Respond: Were they weightie Treatises? the Prin-|ters S 2v purse neuer so; but in this respect they might bee tearmd to be weightie, that they were so heauie, they would nere come out of *Poules Church-yard.* I will haue a sound lift at him anone, for all his Mathematical deuices of his owne inuention, wherewith hee hath acquainted Ma. Doctour *Haruey*, nothing so good as a knife with prickles in the haft, or these Boyes paper-dragons that they let fly with a packthrid in the fields.

Import: *His booke—*

Respond: Hand off, there is none but I will haue the vnclasping of that, because I can doo it nimblest. It is deuided into foure parts; one against mee, the second against M. *Lilly*, the third against *Martinists*, the fourth against D. *Perne.* Neither are these parts seuerally distinguished in his order of handling, but, like a Dutch stewd-pot, iumbled altogether, and linsey-wolsey wouen one within another. But one of these parts falleth to my share, I being bound to answer for none but my selfe; yet if I speake a good word now & then for my frends by the way, they haue the more to thanke mee for.

13 Imort: *Q.* 25 *booke—*] *Coll.*: *booke. Q, Gro.*

Incipit Caput primum.

I was euer vnwilling to vndertake anie thing, &c.

You ly, you ly, *Gabriell*, I know what you are about to saye, but Ile shred you off three leaues at one blowe. You were most willing to vndertake this controuersy, for els you would neuer haue first begun it; you wold neuer haue lyne writing against mee here in *London*, in the verie hart of the Plague, a whole Summer; or after (through your Frends intreatie) wee were reconcilde, popt out your Booke against me. Now say what you will of *being vrgd*,
S 3 *loosing of time, impudencie and slan-|der*, & *another Table Philosophie* that ye fancy; for there is not a dog vnder the table that will beleeue you.

Sa ho: hath *Apuleius* euer an Atturney here? One *Apuleius* (by the name of *Apuleius*) he endites to be an engrosser of arts and inuentions, putting downe *Plato*, *Hippocrates*, *Aristotle*, and the *Paragraphs* of *Iustinian*. *Non est inuentus:* there's no such man to be found; let them that haue the Commission for the Cõcealments looke after it, or the Man in the Moone put for it. *Gabriell* casts a vile learing eye at me, as who should saye he quipt me secretly vnder it, if he durst vtter so much. Also in that which succeedeth of *One that is a common contemner of God and man, stampes and treades vnder his foote the reuerentest old and new Writers, opposeth himselfe against Vniuersities, Parliaments, and generall Councells, encloseth all within his owne braine*, and is *a changer, an innouater, a cony-catcher, a rimer, a rayler, that out-faceth heauen and earth.* But soft you now, how is all this or anie part of this to bee prou'd? make account he will (vpon his oath) denie it. Hath he spoken, printed, written, contriued, or imagined, or caused to bee spoken, written, printed, contriued, or imagined, anie thing against these? or exprest in his countenaunce the least wincke of dislike of them? Let some instance of that be produced,

2 *euer*] *neuer Gro.*

and he be not able to refute it, Ile vndertake for him (which is the most ignominious imposition he can tie himselfe to) he shall giue thee his tung for a rag to wype thy taile with, and haue his right hand cut off for thy Mother to hang out for an ale-house signe. Cannot a man declaime against a *Catalonian* and a *Hethite*, a *Moabite* *Gabriell* and an *Amorite Dicke*, but all the ancient Fathers, all the renou-|med Philosophers, Orators, Poets, S 3v Historiographers, and old & new excellent Writers must bee disparaged and trode vnder foote, God and man contemned and set at nought? Vniuersities, Parliaments, general Councells oppugned? and he must be another Romane *Palemon*, who vaunted all Science began and ended with him? a changer, an innouater, a cony-catcher, a railer, and out-facer of heauen and earth.

Is there such high treason comprehended vnder calling a foppe a foppe, & cudgelling a curre for his snarling? Or is it thus? our iracundious *Stramutzen Gabriell*, standing much vpon his reading, and that all the Libraries of the auncient Fathers, renowmed Philosophers, Poets, Orators, Historiographers, and olde and new excellent Writers, are hoorded vp in the *Amalthæas* Horne of his braine, with whatsoeuer Constitutions and Decretalls of generall Councells and Parliaments, and for he hath commenst in both Vniuersities, therefore he concludes, He which writes against him must write against them all, & so (*per consequens*) vaunt him aboue all; and if he vaunts him aboue them all, he is *a changer, an innouater, an impostor, a railer at all*, & *confounds heauen and earth.* This is the tydiest Argument he can frame to make his matter good, though it followes no more than that a man should bee helde a traitor and accused to haue abusde the Queene and Counsaile and the whole State, for calling a fellowe knaue that hath read the Booke of Statutes, since by them all in generall they were made.

15 railer, an out-facer *Coll., Gro.* 18 is it] *Coll., Gro.*: it is *Q.* thus, our *Q, Coll., Gro.* 24 Parliaments? and *Coll., Gro.*

Carn: *Thou art vnwise to canuase it so much, for hee thrust it in but for a Rhetoricall figure of amplification.*

Respond: Rhetoricall figure? and if I had a hundred |
S 4 sonnes, I had rather haue them disfigur'd, & keep them at home as cyphers, than send them to schoole to learn to figure it after that order.

Carnead: *You may haue them worse brought vp, for so you should be sure neuer to haue them counted lyers, since Rhetoricians, though they lye neuer so grosely, are but said to haue a luxurious phrase, to bee eloquent amplifiers, to bee full of their pleasant Hyperboles, or speake by Ironies; and if they raise a slaunder vpon a man of a thing done at home, when hee is a 1000. mile off, it is but* Prosopopeya, personæ fictio, *the supposing or faining of a person: and they will alledge* Tully, Demosthenes, Demades, Aeschines, *and shew you a whole* Talæus & Ad Herennium *of figures for it, foure and fiftie times more licentious. These Arithmetique figurers are such like iugling transformers, lying by Addition and Numeration, making frayes and quarrelling by Diuision, getting wenches with childe by Multiplication, stealing by Substraction; and if in these humors they haue consumd all, and are faine to breake, they doo it by Fraction.*

Respond: That last part of Arithmetique (which is Fraction or breaking) I intend to teach *Gabriel*; thogh to all the other, as Addition, Deuision, Rebating or Substraction, of his owne ingrafted disposition hee is apt inough; and so hee is to Multiplication too, hee hauing, since I parted with him last, got him a Gentlewoman.

Bentiu: *Both thou and hee talke much of that Gentlewoman, but I would we might know her, and see her vnhukt and naked once, as* Paris, *in* Lucians Dialogues, *desires* Mercury *hee might see the three Goddesses naked, that stroue for the golden Ball.* |

S 4v Carnead: *The* Venus *shee is that would win it from them all, if the controuersie were now afloate againe: and, which*

18 *figures Gro.* *such, like Coll., Gro.* 31 *vnhukt*] *vnbuskt Coll., Gro.*

thou pretermittedst before, he puts her in print for a Venus, *yet desires to see her a* Venus *in print; publisheth her for a strumpet* (*for no better was* Venus) *and yet he would haue her a strumpet more publique.*

Respond: By that name had hee not so publisht her, yet his peacocke-pluming her like another *Pandora*, (from Poets too parasiticall commending of whome first grew the name of *Pandare*, though Sir *Philip Sidney* fetcheth it out of *Plautus*,) through his incredible praising of her, I say, (wherein one quarter of his Book is spent,) he hath brought all the world into a perswasion that shee is as common as Rubarbe among Phisitions; since (as *Thucidides* pronounceth) shee is the honestest woman, of whose praise or dispraise is least spoken. My pen, he prodigally insulteth, shee shall pumpe to as drie a spunge as anie is in Hosier Lane, and wring our braines like emptie purses. *Idem per idem* in sense he speakes, though it be not his comparison, and, *Tamburlain*-like, hee braues it indesinently in her behalfe, setting vp bills, like a Bear-ward or Fencer, what fights we shall haue and what weapons she will meete me at.

Con: Fasilia, *the daughter of* Pelagius, *King of* Spain, *was torne in peices by a Beare: & so I hope thou wilt tear her and tug with her, if she begin once to playe the* Deuill of Dowgate: *but as there was a woman in* Roome *that had her childe slaine with thunder and lightning in her wombe ere she was deliuerd, so it is like inough hers will bee, and proue an* Embrion, *and we shall neuer see it: or if wee doo, looke for another armed* Pallas *issuing out of* Ioues *braine, or an* Amazonian Hippolite, *that will bee* | *good inough for* T 1 Theseus; *or the female of the* Aspis, *who* (*if her mate be kild by any passenger in the way*) *thorough fire, thorough the thickest assembly she will pursue him, or anie thing but water.*

Bentiu: *In some Countreys no woman is so honorable as she that hath had to doo with most men, and can giue the*

1 *pretermittedst before,*] *b, Coll., Gro.: pretermittedst too before, a.*

lustiest striker odds by 25. times in one night, as Messalina *did; and so it is with this his* bratche, *or bitch-foxe.*

Consil: Agelastus, *Grand-father to* Crassus, *neuer laught but once in his life, and that was to see a mare eate thistles; so this will be a iest to make one laugh that lyes a dying, to see a* Gillian *draggell taile run her taile into a bushe of thornes, because her nailes are not long inough to scratch it, & play at wasters with a quil for the britches.*

Carn: Multi illum iuuenes, multæ petiere puellæ, *Boyes, wenches, and euerie one pursue him for his beauty.*

Non caret effectu, quod voluere duo,

Thou canst neuer hold out, if thou wert Hercules, *if two to one encounter thee.*

Respo: Quis nisi mentis inops teneræ declamat amicæ? Who but an ingram cosset would keepe such a courting of a Curtezan to haue her combat for him; or doo as *Dick Haruey* did, (which information piping hot in the midst of this line was but brought to mee,) that, hauing preacht and beat downe three pulpits in inueighing against dauncing, one Sunday euening, when hys Wench or Friskin was footing it aloft on the Greene, with foote out and foote in, and as busie as might be at *Rogero, Basilino, Turkelony, All the flowers of the broom, Pepper is black, Greene sleeues, Peggie Ramsey,* he came sneaking behinde a tree and lookt on, and though hee was loth to be seene to countenance
T 1v the sport, hauing | laid Gods word against it so dreadfully, yet, to shew his good-will to it in hart, hee sent her 18. pence in hugger mugger to pay the fidlers? let it sink into ye, for it is true & will be verefide. Let *Gabriel* verefie anie one thing so against mee, and not thinke to carrie it away with hys *generall extenuatings, ironicall amplifications,* and *declamatorie exclamations.* Nor let him muckehill vp so manie pages in saying he lookt for *termes of aqua fortis and gunpowder,* and that *I haue thundred and giu'n out tragically, when nought appeares but the sword of*

1 *lusteest Q.*

cats-meate, and the fire-brand of dogs-meate, and *Aut nunc aut nunquam*, and *two staues and a pike*: but let him shew what part of that his first Booke I haue not, from the crowne to the little toe, confuted, and laid as open as a custard or a cowsheard; and if my Booke bee *cats-meate and dogs-meate*, his is much worse, since on hys mine hath his whole foundation and dependance, and I doo but paraphrase vpon his text. Something that he grounds this *cats-meate and dogs-meate* on, I will not with-stand but I haue lent him; as in my Epistle to *Apis lapis*, where I wish him *to let* Chaucer *be new scowrd against the day of battaile, and* Terence *but come in now and then with the snuffe of a sentence and* Dictum puta, *wee'l strike it as dead as a doore-naile*, Haud teruntij estimo, *we haue cats-meate & dogs-meate inough for these mungrels.* Hence, as if I had continually harpt vppon it, in euerie tenth line of my Book he saith I do nothing but assaile him with *cats-meat & dogs-meat*, when there is not anie more spoken of it than I haue shewd you. So *Aut nunc aut nunquam* he brings in for a murdring shot, beeing neuer my Posie, but *Aut nunquam tentes, aut perfice*, at the latter end of my *Foure Letters*; | speaking to him, that he shuld not go about to T 2 answere me, except he set it soundly on; for, otherwise, with a sound counterbuffe I would make his eares ring againe, and haue at him with two staues & a pike, which was a kinde of old verse in request before he fell a rayling at *Turberuile* or *Elderton*. Some *Licosthenes* reading (which showes plodding & no wit) he hath giu'n a twinckling glimps of, &, like a school-boy, said ouer his gear to his vnckles & kinsfolk, and tels what Authours he hath read, when he floted in the sea of encounters; which, for ought he hath alleadgd out of them, he may haue stolne by the whole sale out of *Ascanius*, or *Andrew Maunsells* English Catalogue. No villaine, no Atheist, no murdrer, no traitor, no Sodomite hee euer read of but he hath likend mee too, or in a superlatiue degree made me a monster beyond him, for no other reason in the earth but because I would not let

him go beyond me, or be won to put my finger in my mouth & crie mumbudget, when he had baffuld mee in print throughout *England*. The victorioust Captaines and Warriours, the inuinciblest *Cæsars* and Conquerours, the satyricallest confuters and *Luthers* (like whom the *Germanes* affirme neuer anie in their tung writ so forcible) in an Alphabet he trowles vp, and sayes I out-strip them all, I set them all too schoole. The *quorsum* or *quare*, if you demaund, is this, I haue out-stript and set him to schoole, and he is sure he is a better man than anie of them. The verie guts and garbage of his Note-book he hath put into this tallow loafe, & not left anie Frezeland, Dutch, or Almain scribe (where they Commence and doo their Actes with writing Bookes) that hath but squibd foorth a Latin
T 2v *Puerilis* in Print, or | set his name to a Catechisme, vncõpared or vnscoard. A true Pellican he is, that peirceth his breast & lets out all his bowels to giue life to his yong. No Author but himselfe and *Nashe* heereafter he can cyte, which hee hath not stalified worse than *Sapiẽs dominabitur astris*, the ordinarie Posie for all Almanackes, or the presenting of *Artaxerxes* with a cup of water, vsde in euerie Epistle Dedicatorie; and those two hee hath wrought reasonably vpon, hauing worne the first (which is himselfe) naplesse, & the other owes him nothing. Against blasphemous *Seruetus* or *Muretus* or *Surius*, that haue been so bold with her Maiestie and this State, was thys Inuectiue of his first armd and aduanced; which (vppon the missing his preferment or aduauncement in Court) he supprest, and in the bottom of a rustie hamper let it lye asleepe by him, (euen as he did the Aduertisement against *Pap-hatchet* & *Martin*, which he hath yoakt with it, by his own date, euer since 89.) and now, with putting in new names here and there of *Nashe* & *Piers Pennilesse*, he hath so pannyerd and drest it that it seemes a new thing, though there be no new thing in it that claimes anie kindred of mee, more than

2 he] be *Q.* 13 and and *Q.* 19 stalified] stellified *Q. Corr. in Errata on* X 3v. 25 *Surius*] *Sunius Q. Corr. in Errata on* X 3v.

a dozen of famisht quips, but, like a lose French cassock or gabberdine, would fit any man. Those more appropriate blowes ouer the thumbe are these. *My praising of Aretine;* so did he before me, the verie words whereof I haue set downe in my other Booke: *my excepting against his Doctorship;* better Doctors than euer he wil be put it in my head, and if therein I misreport, I erre by authoritie. *My calling him a fawne-guest messenger betwixt M.* Bird *and M.* Demetrius, *in the companie of one of which he neuer din'd nor supt this 6. yeres; & for | the other, he neuer drunke* T 3 *with to this day:* he may be a fawn-guest in his intent neuertheles, and if he neither eate nor drunck at M. *Demetrius*, why did he so familiarly write to him, *M.* Demetrius, *in your absence I found your wife verie curteous?* For a great trespasse he layes it to me, in that *I haue praised her Maiesties affabilitie towards Schollers, and attributed to Noble-men so much pollicy & wisdome as to haue a priuy watch word in their praises, and crossing his sleight opinion of Inuectiues & Satyres.* Like Sophisticall Disputers that only rehearse, not answere, he runs on telling how *I haue fatherd on him a new Part of* Tully, *which he fetcht out of a wall at* Barnwell, *euen as* Poggius *in an old Monasterie found out a new Part of* Quintillian, *after it had bin manie hundred yeres lost; my taking vpon me to be* Greenes *aduocate; my threatning so incessantly to haunt the Ciuilian & the Deuine, that, to auoid the hot chase of my fierie quill, they shall be constrained to enskonse themselues in one of their Phisition Brothers old vrinall cases: my calling him butter-whore, & bidding him, Rip, rip, you kitchin-stuffe wrangler; my accusing him of carterly derisions and milk-maids girds, as, Good beare, bite not, A man's a man thogh he hath but a hose on his head. Pulchre mehercule dictum, sapienter, lautè, lepide, nil suprà,* nothing so good as the iests of the Councell Table asse, *Richard Clarke.* Carnead: *Yes, that he doth more than rehearse, for he*

10 *for* Q. 16 *Shollers* Q. 30 *kitchin-stuffe*] *kitchin-stufle* Q: *kitchin-stufie Coll., Gro.*

maintains them to be the Ironies of Socrates, Aristophanes, Epicharmus, Lucian, Tully, Quintillian, Sanazarius, *K.* Alphonsus, Cardan, *Sir* Th. Moore, Isocrates; *looke the first 156. Page of his Booke, & ye shal finde it so.*

Bentiu: *What, had they no better iests than* Good beare, bite not, *or* A man is a man though he hath but a | hose on his head, Pulchre mehercule dictum? *O, dishonor to the house from whence they come!* T 3v

Resp: He chargeth mee *to haue derided and abused the most valorous Mathematicall Arts;* let him shewe me wherein, and I will answere: *of palpable Atheisme he condemnes me, for drinking a cup of lambswooll to the health of his Brothers Booke, cald* The Lamb of God & his Enemies; then what Atheists are they that turne it to wast paper and goe to the priuy with it? as to no other vses it is conuerted, it lying dead & neuer selling: and againe with the *Atheist* he spur-gals mee, in that *I iested at heauen, calling it the hauen where his deceased Brother is arriued.*

Carnead: *Is it a iest that his brother is arriu'd in heauen? he is in hell then belike.*

Consil: *A more likelier peice of Atheisme thou maist vrge against him, where he saith in one leafe* that one acre of performance is worth twentie of the Land of Promise: *as though God had not performd to the Children of* Israel *the Land of Promise he vowd to them.*

Resp: The deepe cut out of my grammer Rules, *Astra petit disertus,* he hits me with. I am sorry for it I slanderd him so, for he was neuer eloquent; if he bee not aboue the starres, I would hee were. Hee complaines *I doo not regard M.* Bird, *M.* Spencer, Mounsieur Bodin. In any thing but in praising him, and therin as *Aristotle non vidit verum in spiritualibus,* nor *Barnard* all things; so they may haue theyr eyes dazeled. To a bead-roll of learned men and Lords hee appeales, *whether he be an Asse or no,* in the forefront of whom he puts M. *Thomas Watson,* the Poet. A man he was that I dearely

4 *of*] *as Q.* 11 *palbable Q.* 36 Poet. A] *Coll., Gro.*: Poet: A *Q.*

lou'd and honor'd, and for | all things hath left few his T 4
equalls in *England*: he it was that, in the company of diuers Gentlemen one night at supper at the Nags head in *Cheape*, first told me of his vanitie, and those Hexameters made of him,

But, o, what newes of that good Gabriell Haruey,
Knowne to the world for a foole and clapt in the Fleet for a Rimer?

For the other graue men, they all speak as their fore-man. *His imprisonment in the Fleete, he affirmes, is a lewd supposall* (the Hexameter vearse before prooues it), as also his writing *the welwillers Epistle* in praise of himselfe, before his first *foure Letters* a yeare ago. The Compositor that set it swore to mee it came vnder his owne hand to bee printed. *Hee bids the world examine the Preamble before the* Supplication to the diuell, *and see if I doo not praise my selfe, and that the tenour of the stile & identity of the phrase proues it to be mine.* He needed not go so far about to sent me out by my *stile* and my *phrase*, for if he had euer ouerlookt it he would haue seene my name to it, and besides, another argument that he neuer read it is (which whosoeuer shal peruse it wil finde) it is altogether in my owne dispraise and disabling, and grieuing at the imperfect printing and misinterpreting of it; let him shewe mee but one tittle or letter in it tending to any other drift. *He vpbraides me by the poore fellow my Fathers putting me to my scribling shifts*, and *how I am beholding to the Printing-house for my poore shifts of apparaile:* My Father put more good meate in poore mens mouthes than all the ropes & liuing is worth his Father left him, together with his mother and two brothers; and (as another Scholler) he brought me vp at *S. Iohns*, where | (it is well knowen) I might haue been T 4v
Fellow if I had would: and for deriuing my maintenaunce from the Printing-house, so doo both Vniuersities, and whosoeuer they be that come vp by Learning, out of

16 Diuell *Coll., Gro.* 22 is, which (whosoeuer *Q.*

Printed Bookes gathering all they haue; and would not haue furre to put in their gownes, if it, or writing, were not. But if hee meane that from writing to the Presse I scrape vp my exhibition, let him scrape it out for a lye; till the Impression of this Book, I hauing got nothing by Printing these three yeres. But when I doo play my Prizes in Print, Ile be paid for my paines, that's once; & not make my selfe a gazing stocke and a publique spectacle to all the world for nothing, as he does, that giues money to be seene and haue his wit lookt vpon, neuer Printing booke yet for whose Impression he hath not either paid or run in debt. Printers (aboue all the rest) haue nothing to thanke him for, in his *Praise of the asse* he putting in *the Presse for the arrantest Asse of all*, because it is such a meanes to presse him to death, and confound him. *Danters* Presse sweares after three Forme a day, since he hath giuen it the Presse and disgrac't them, it will (how euer others neglect it) neuer haue done ‡ beating vppon him; nor hath it acquited him for calling me *Danters gentleman*, who is as good at all times as *Wolfes right worshipfull* Gabriell, or the gentleman he brings in reading a Chapter (Colledge fashion at dinner time) *against* Piers *& his proceedings*, and *the approbation of his Docterly reincounter*. Applaud and partake with him who list, this is my definitiue position; which *Anaxandrides*, a Comick Poet, said of the Aegyptian superstition, *Maximam Anguillam, quam Deum putant, comedo;* V 1 *canem quem colunt ver-|bero:* They worship the great Eele for a God, which I eate or disgest; and the Dog they adore, I spurne or driue out of dores. *Hidras* heads I should go about to cut off, (as *Tacitus* saies of them that thinke to cut off all discommodities or inconueniences from the Lawes,) if I should vndertake to run throghout all the foolish friuolous reprehensions & cauils he hath in his Booke. I will take no knowledge of his *tale of ten egs for*

Printers ‡ating ith inke ılles.

1 Boookes *Q.* 13 *Asse Coll., Gro.* 28 *ver-|bero.* They *Q*: *verbero:* they *Coll., Gro.* 29 Eeele *Q.*

a penny, and nine of them rotten; a gormandizing breakfast, he saies, *I was at of egs and butter;* which if he can name where, when, or with whom, I will giue him an annuitie of eg-pyes. No more will I of his calling me *Captaine of the boyes*, and *Sir Kil-prick*; which is a name fitter for his *Piggen de wiggen*, or gentlewoman: or els, because she is such a hony sweetikin, let her bee *Prick-madam*, of which name there is a flower; & let him take it to himselfe, and raigne intire *Cod-pisse Kinko*, and Sir *Murdred* of placards, *durante bene placito*, as long as he is able to please or giue them geare. Likewise the Captainship of the boyes I tosse backe to him, he hauing a whole Band of them to write in his praise: but if so he terme me in respect of the minoritie of my beard, he hath a beard like a Crow with two or three durtie strawes in her mouth, going to build her neast. See him & see him not I will, about that his meazild inuention *of the Good-wife my mothers finding her daughter in the ouen, where she would neuer haue sought her, if she had not been there first her selfe:* (a hackny prouerb in mens mouths euer since K. *Lud* was a little boy, or *Belinus*, *Brennus* brother, for the loue hee bare to oysters built *Billinsgate*;) therfore there is no more to be said to it, but if he could haue told how to haue made | a better lye he would. I will not V 1ᵛ present into the Arches or Commissaries Court what *prinkum prankums* Gentlemen (his nere neighbors) haue whispred to me of his Sister, and how shee is as good a fellow as euer turnd belly to belly; for which she is not to be blam'd, but I rather pitie her and thinke she cannot doo withall, hauing no other dowrie to marie her. Good Lord, how one thing brings on another; had it not bin for his baudy sister, I should haue forgot to haue answerd for the *baudie rymes* he threapes vpon me. Are they *rimes*? and are they *baudie*? and are they *mine*? Well, it may be so that it is not so; or if it be, men in their youth (as in their sleep) manie times doo something that might haue been better done, & they do not wel remember.

O Yes. Be it knowen vnto all men by these presents, that whatsoeuer names of *Duns*, *asse*, or *Dorbell* I haue giu'n *Gabriel Haruey*, or of *a kitchin stuffe wrangler*, and *reading the Lecture of Ram alley*, I will still perseuer and insist in; as also, that I wilbe as good as my word in defending any (but abhominable Atheists) that shall write against him; that I wil still maintaine *there is in court but one true Diana*, & so wil all that are true subiects to her Maiestie; that I think as reuerently of *London* as of any Citie in *Europe*, though I doo not cal it the ‡ *Madam Towne of the Realme*, as he hath done, and that I hold no place better gouerned, how euer in so great a sea of all waters there cannot chuse but be some quick-sands and rockes & shelues; that I neuer so much as in thought detracted from *Du Bartas*, *Buchanan*, or anie generall allowed moderne Writer, howere *Gnimelfe Hengist* here giues out, with-|out naming time, place, or to whome I did, how *I vowd to confute them all;* that Mast. Lilly *neuer procur'd* Greene *or mee to write against him*, but it was his own first seeking and beginning in *The Lamb of God*, where he and his Brother (that loues dauncing so wel) scummerd out betwixt thē an *Epistle to the Readers* against all Poets and Writers; & M. *Lilly* & me by name he beruffianizd & berascald, cōpar'd to *Martin*, & termd vs *piperly make-plaies and make-bates*, yet bad vs *holde our peace & not be so hardie as to answere him, for if we did, he would make a bloodie day in* Poules Church-yard, *& splinter our pens til they stradled again as wide as a paire of Compasses.* Further be it knowen vnto you, that before this *I praisde him* (after a sort) *in an Epistle in* Greenes Menaphon.

‡ He might as well haue cald it the Countesse or Duches Towne.

V 2

Bentiu: *But didst thou so?*

Respon: O, what do you meane to hinder my Proclamation? I did, I did, as vnfainedly and sincerely as, in his first butter-fly Pamphlet against *Greene*, he praisd me for *that proper yong man*, Greenes *fellow Writer*, *whom*

17 with | out Q.

(*in some respects*) *he wisht well too;* as also in hys Booke he writ against *Greene* and mee, he raild vppon me vnder the name of *Piers Pennilesse*, and for a bribe that I should not reply on him praisd me, and reckond me (at the latter end) amongst the famous Schollers of our time, as S. *Philip Sidney*, M. *Watson*, M. *Spencer*, M. *Daniell*, whom he hartily *thankt*, & promised *to endow with manie complements for so enriching our English Tongue.*

Consil: *Then what an Asse is hee to call thee* an Asse for praising him, *& after thou hadst praisd him* (*though it was but pretie and so, for a Latine Poet after others*) | *vpon* V 2ᵛ *a good turn done him* (*& no iniurie fore-running*) *to build the foundation of a quarrell.*

Resp: Further than further bee it knowne (since I had one further before) I neuer abusd *Marloe*, *Greene*, *Chettle* in my life, nor anie of my frends that vsde me like a frend; which both *Marloe* and *Greene* (if they were aliue) vnder their hands would testifie, euen as *Harry Chettle* hath in a short note here.

I *Hold it no good manners* (*M.* Nashe), *being but an Artificer, to giue D.* Haruey *the ly, though he haue deseru'd it by publishing in Print you haue done mee wrong, which priuately I neuer found: yet to confirme by my Art in deed, what his calling forbids mee to affirme in word, your booke being readie for the Presse, Ile square & set it out in Pages, that shall page and lackey his infamie after him* (*at least*) *while he liues, if no longer.*

Your old Compositer,
Henry Chettle.

Impo: *Yes*, Greene *he conuinces thee to haue abused, in that* thy defence of him is a more biting commendation than his reproofe.

Respond: It is so hereticall a falsifier, a man had not need talke with him without a Bible in the roome; for it may be he hath some care of his oath, if it be not in a matter of reconciliation, or repaying of money, as to *Dexters*

man: but his *ipse dixit*, his report, otherwise is nothing so currant as beggers about the Courts remoue. Nere tell me of this or that he sayes I spake or did, except he particularize and stake downe the verie words, and, catching them
V 2 by the throate like a theefe, | say, these are they that did the deed, I arrest you, and I charge you all, gentle Readers, to aid me. What truly might be spoken of *Greene*, I publisht, neither discommending him, nor too much flattering him (for I was nothing bound to him); whereas it maye be alleadgd against *Gabriel*, as it was against *Paulus Iouius*, *Quæ verissime scribere potuit noluit, & quæ voluit non potuit:* Those things which hee might haue related truely hee would not, and those which he would hee could not, for want of good intelligence. How he hath handled *Greene* and *Marloe* since their deaths, those that read his Bookes may iudge: and where, like a iakes barreller and a *Gorbolone*, he girds me *with imitating of* Greene, let him vnderstand, I more scorne it than to haue so foule a iakes for my groaning stoole as hys mouth; & none that euer had but one eye, with a pearle in it, but could discern the difference twixt him & me; while he liu'd (as some Stationers can witnes with me) hee subscribing to me in any thing but plotting Plaies, wherein he was his crafts master. Did I euer write of Conycatching? stufft my stile with hearbs & stones? or apprentisd my selfe to running of the letter? If not, how then doo I imitate him? A hang-by of his (one *Valentine Bird*, that writ against *Greene*) imitated me, & would embezill out of my *Piers Pennilesse* sixe lines at a clap, and vse them for his owne. Nay, he himselfe hath purloyned something from mee, and mended his hand in confuting by fifteen parts, by following my presidents. There is two or three mouth fulls of my *Oo yes* yet behinde, which, after I haue drawne out at length, you shall see me (like a Crier, that when he hath done kire-elosoning it, puts of his
V 3v cap, and cries God saue the | Queene, & so steps into the next ale-house) steale out of your companie before you bee aware, and hide my selfe in a Closet no bigger than would

holde a Church Bible, till the beginning of *Candlemas Terme*, and then, if you come into *Poules Church-yard*, you shall meete mee.

Oo yes, be it knowne, I can ryme as wel as the Doctor, for a sample whereof, in stead of his

Noddy Nash, whom euerie swash, and

his *occasionall admonitionatiue Sonnet*, his *Apostrophe Sonnet*, and tynie titmouse *Lenuoy*, like a welt at the edge of a garment, his goggle-eyde *Sonnet of Gorgon* and the *wonderfull yeare*, and another *Lenuoy* for the chape of it, his *Stanza declaratiue*, *Writers post-script in meeter*, his *knitting vp Cloase*, and *a third Lenuoy*, like a fart after a good stoole; In stead of all these (I say) here is the tufft or labell of a rime or two, the trick or habit of which I got by looking on a red nose Ballet-maker that resorted to our Printing-house. They are to the tune of *Labore Dolore*, or the Parlament tune of a pot of ale and nutmegs and ginger, or *Eldertons* ancient note of *meeting the diuell in coniure house lane*. If you hit it right, it will go maruellous sweetly.

Gabriel Haruey, fames duckling,
hey noddie, noddie, noddie:
Is made a gosling and a suckling,
hey noddie, noddie, noddie.

Or that's not it, I haue a better.

Dilla, my Doctor deare,
sing dilla, dilla, dilla:
Nashe *hath spoyled thee cleare*
with his quilla, quilla, quilla.|

What more haue I in my Proclamation to yalp out? No more but this, that in both my bookes I haue obiected some perticular vice more against him than *pumps and pantofles*, which those that haue not faith inough to beleeue may toote & superuize when they haue any literall idle leysure. *The Tragedie of wrath*, or *Priscianus vapulans*, pro- v 4

12 *Cloase*] *Qy. read Gloase?*

mised in the epilogue Sonnet of my *Foure Letters*, (three or foure words wherof, as *Awayte*, and *paint*, and *tread no common path*, he mumbles and chewes in his mouth like a peece of Allom, or the stone of a horse-plum to sucke off all the meate of it,) let him take this for it, whereby I am out of his debt, if not ouer-plus. And where he terrefies mee with insulting *hee was* Tom Burwels, *the Fencers, Scholler, and that he will squeaze and mazer me whensoeuer he met me*, why did hee it not when hee met me at *Cambridge*, we lying backe to backe in the same Inne, and but two or three square trenchours of a wainscot dore betwixt vs? By our reconciliation he cannot excuse it, since the law-day was out, and the feude open againe by his breach of truce, and my defiance to him in an Epistle to the Reader in *Christs tears*. But let him henceforth prouide him of two or three sturdie Plow men (such as his swines fac't blue-coate was) when I legerd by him in the *Dolphin*, for otherwise not all the fence he learnd of *Tom Burwell* shall keepe mee from cramming a turd in his iawes (and no other bloud will I draw of him): I haue bespoken a boy and a napkin already to carry it in. Last of all, *there is nothing I haue bragd of my writing in all humors*, no, not so much as of his fleshly humours, but shall be anuilde for true steele on his standish, I making an indenture twixt God
V 4v and | my soule, to consume my bodie as slender as a stilt or a broome-staffe, and my braine as poore and compendius as the pummell of a scotch saddle, or pan of a *Tobacco* pipe, but as the Elephant and the Rinoceros neuer fight but about the best pastures, so will I winne from him his best Patrons, and driue him to confesse himselfe a *Conundrum*, who now thinks he hath learning inough to proue the saluation of *Lucifer*; Apologize it for him as many *Chutes*, *Barneses*, or vile friggers, or *Fregeuiles*, as there will.

Bentiu: *Thou promisedst to haue a dead lift at that* Fregeuile.

20 him): I] *Coll.*, *Gro.*: him.) I *Q.* 26 compendius] *b*, *Coll.*, *Gro.*: compendent *a*.

Resp: I, here I am come to his verses, but let mee take them in order as they lie; *Thorius* is first, with a *Letter* and *Sonnet*, and *Post-script* of *Chutes*.

Carnead: *More Post-scripts* and *preambles: hath he* (*as with his* Thrasonisme) *infected them all with his methode of* Lenuoyes, Post-scripts *and* Preambles?

Respond: From Master *Thorius* I haue a Letter vnder his owne hand, which hee sent mee to be printed, vtterly disclaiming the wrong which the Doctour (vnder his name) hath thrust out against mee. This is the counterpaine of it.

To my very good friend, M. *Nashe.*

MAster Nashe, *I pray you to let my carriage towardes you alwaies beget but thus much in your opinion, that I would neuer haue beene led with so much indiscretion as to raile against any man vnprouoked, or to offer | him wrong* X 1 *that neuer offended mee. Truely, vpon the sight of fiue or six sheets of Doctor* Harueyes *Booke, I wrote certaine verses in his commendation; but that* Sonnet *which in his booke is subscribed with my name is not mine, and I gesse at the mistaking of it. Indeed the* Stanzaes *are, though altred to your disgrace in some places. To vse many words were vaine, and to ende writing and leaue you vnsatisfied were to write to no end, and to leaue my selfe discontented. But if you consider how I was as much offended with the vniust vaineglorious Print as your selfe, wee shall both rest contented. Little did I think the booke should haue had so famous a Title, or so many Prefaces, or so many Letters and Preambles; amongst which some of mine, blushing to looke vppon so contẽptible a person they were directed too, could not but be exceedingly ashamed to bee presented to the eyes of a whole world. I could mislike other things, but I will leaue them as trifles:* Farewell.

Yours to vse,

I. Thorius. |

10 counterpaine *Q.* 12–35 *In larger type. Q.* 31 *too*] *ioo Q.*

X 1v *Chute,* that was the bawlingest of them all, & that bobd me with nothing but *Rhenish furie, Stilliard clyme, oyster whore phrase, claret spirit,* and *ale-house passions,* with talking so much of drinke within a yere and a halfe after died of the dropsie, as diuers Printers that were at his buriall certefide mee. Beeing dead, I would not haue reuiu'd him, but that the Doctor (whose Patron he was) is aliue to answere for him. *Mounsieur Fregusius,* or *Mounsieur Fregeuile Gautius,* that prating weazell fac'd vermin, is one of the Pipers in this consort, and he is at it with his *Apologie of the thrice learned and thrice eloquent Doctour* Haruey, *befooles and besots mee* in euerie line, pleads *the Doctors innocence,* and *the lawfulnes of his proceedings,* praiseth *his moderate stile,* saies *he is sorie he is so vniustly pusht at, and, being pusht at, glad he hath so acquited him,* and that *his Answere is reasonable and eloquent.*

I am sorie I haue no more roome to reason the matter with him; for if I had, I did not doubt but to make him a fugitiue out of *England* as well as he is out of his owne Countrey: & in this great dearth in *England* we haue no reason but to make him a Fugitiue or banish him, since he is the rauenousest slouen that euer lapt porredge; and out of two Noblemens houses he had his Mittimus of ye may be gone, for he was such a peruerse *Ramisticall* heretike, a busie reprouer of the principles of all Arts, and sower of seditious Paradoxes amongst kitchen boyes.

My clue is spun, the Tearme is at an end, wherefore here I wil end and make Vacation: but if you wil haue a word or two of Doctour *Perne* and Master *Lilly,* in stead of one
X 2 of *Gabriels* Apostrophe Sonnets or Len-|uoyes, by *Struthio Belliuecento de Compasso Callipero,* and the Contents of it, I protest and adiure, you shall.

Against Doctor *Perne* our *Poditheck* or *Tolmach* hath in his booke twilted and stitcht in a whole penny-worth of paper, which his Gossipship, that had the naming of the child, dubs *the Encomium of the Foxe.* In it he endorseth him *the puling Preacher of* Pax vobis *& humilitie,* (to both

of which *Gabriell* alwaies was an enemie, euen as Doctor *Perne* was to his loue-lockes & his great ruffes and pantofles,) *the triangle turne-coate*, (I wold he had anie coat to turne but that he weares: and for triangles, one angle or corner he wilbe glad of to hide him in after this Booke is out, & brickil & ouen vp his stinking breath, (which smells like the greasie snase of a candle,) that I maye not come within eleuen-teene score nose length of it.) *He brings in his coffin to speake:* what a wodden iest is that? *An apostata, an hipocryte, a Machauill, a cousner, a iugler, a letcher hee makes him*, and saies *he kept a Cubbe at* Peterhouse; that *his hospitalitie was like Ember weeke or good Friday:* & if a man should haue writ against *Sergius*, that was the first setter vp of *Mahomet*, he could not haue parbraked more vilenes, than he hath done against him. *Vincit qui patitur*, he saith, (or a great Counseller that giues that Posie,) *can vnrip the whole packet of his knauerie*, making him a broker to his scutcherie. The whole Quire thankes you hartily. Doctor *Perne* is caskt vp in lead, and cannot arise to plead for himselfe: wherefore this (as dutie to those some way bindes mee that were somwhat bound to him) I wil commit to inke & paper in his behalfe. Few men liu'd better, though, like | *Dauid* or X 2v *Peter*, he had his falls, yet the Vniuersitie had not a more carefull Father this 100. yeare, and if in no regard but that a chiefe Father of our Common-wealth lou'd him, (in whose house he died,) hee might haue spar'd and forborne him.

His *hospitalitie* was as great as hath bin kept before or euer since vpon the place he had, and for his wit & learning, they that mislike want the like wit and learning, or else they would haue more iudgement to discerne of it. For Master *Lillie* (who is halues with me in this indignitie that is offred) I will not take the tale out of his mouth, for he is better able to defend himselfe than I am able to

2 pantostes *Q.* 4 weares:) and *Q, Gro.*: weares!) and *Coll.* 5 in] iu (*turned* n) *Q.* 8 aleuenteene *Q.* it. *Ha Q, Coll., Gro.* 25 in] *om. a, Coll., Gro.*

say he is able to defend himselfe, and in as much time as hee spendes in taking *Tobacco* one weeke, he can compile that which would make *Gabriell* repent himselfe all his life after. With a blacke sant he meanes shortly to bee at his chamber window for calling him *the Fiddle-sticke of Oxford.* In that he twatleth, *it had bin better to haue confuted* Martin *by Reuerend* Cooper than such leuitie; tell mee why was hee not then confuted by Reuerend *Cooper*, or made to hold his peace, till Master *Lillie* and some others with their pens drew vpon him? A day after the faire, when he is hangd, *Haruey* takes him in hand, but if he had beene aliue now, euen as he writ *more worke for the* Cooper, so would hee haue writte *Harueys* whoope *diddle*, or *the non-suting or vncasing of the animaduertiser.* I haue a laughing hickocke to heare him saye, *hee was once suspected for* Martin, when there is nere a Pursiuant in England, in the pulling on his boots,
X 3 euer thought of him or imputed to him so much wit. The bangingest thinges which I can | picke out, wherein he hath festered *Martin* or defended Bishops, are these: *For a polished stile few goe beyond Cartwright; his rayling at mee for speaking against* Beza, *the grand Champion against Bishops;* his malicious defamation of Doctour *Perne;* where, after hee hath polluted him with all the scandale hee could, hee saies, *The Clergie neuer wãted excellent fortune-wrights, and he was one of the cheefest:* as though the Church of *England* were vpheld and Atlassed by corruption, Machauelisme, apostatisme, hipocrysie and treacherie; in all these hee making him notorious in the highest kinde, dooth giue out, that *he was one of the Churches cheife fortune-wrights:* and besides (to mend the matter) he asks, *What Bishop or Politician in* England *was so great a Temporiser as hee?* I hope there be some Bishops within the compasse of the two Metrapolitane Seas, that can fish out a shamefull meaning out of this word

15 *animaduertiser*, I *Q.* 19 pick *c.w.* 29 hee, making *Coll., Gro.* 30 kinde, dooth giue out] *b, Coll., Gro.*: kinde, after he giues out *a.*

Temporiser, and doo disdaine their high Calling should be so Gnathonically compar'd, for such is a *Temporiser*; and with their profession it stands to bee no state Politicians, but onely to meddle with the state of heau'n. Then he hath a tale out of *Pontane* against *Bishops, for their riding vpon horses, & not asses as Christ did:* aswel he might restrain them to ride vpon mares, as *Iohn Bale* saith our English Bishops wer limitted too heretofore. Such another tale of a Horse hee hath of *Gelo*, a Tyrant of *Sicily*, whom he termes *the politique Tyrant, for bringing in his great horse, in stead of a harper, into his Banquetting-house;* to dung and stale amongst his guests. It is a stale stinking Apotheg; but *Benè olet hostis interfectus* (as *Vitellius* said); the sweete sauer of an enemie slaine takes away the smell of it. |

More battring engins I had in a readines prepared to X 3v *shake his walles, which I keepe backe till the next Tearme, meaning to insert them in my* Foure Letters Confuted, *which then is to be renewed and reprinted againe.*

So be your leaue, God be with you, I was bold to call in. Spectatores, *the faults escaped in the Printing I wish may likewise escape you in reading. In the Epistle Dedicatorie correct* Willington *and put in* Williamson: *in the midst of the Booke* vide *make* vidi: *about the latter end* stellified stalified, *and* Sunius Surius: *with as many other words or letters too much or too-wanting as ye will.*

The Paradoxe of the Asse, *M.* Lilly *hath wrought vppon; as also to him I turne ouer the Doctors Apothecarie tearmes he hath vsed throughout, & more especially in his last* Epistle of notable Contents.

Herewith the Court breakes vp and goes to dinner, all generally concluding with Traian; *The Gods neuer suffer anie to be ouer-come in battail, but those that are enemies to peace.*

Tu mihi criminis
Author.

FINIS.

14 the the smell *Q.* 19–20 *in*, Spectatores, *the Coll.*: *in*, Spectatores. *The Gro.*

NASHES LENTEN STVFFE

Entry in the Stationers' Register:

11 Ianuarii [1598–9]

Cutbert Burby Entred for his copie in full Court holden this Daie a booke called the praise of the Redd herringe vpon Condicon that he gett yt Laufully Aucthorised. . . vj[d]

To the whiche copie master Harsnettes hand is sett for th[e] allowance thereof with the wardens handes

(*S. R.*, ed. Arber, III. 134.)

Editions: (1) *Early:*

1599. NASHES | Lenten Stuffe, | Containing, | The Deſcription and firſt Procrea-|*tion and Increaſe of the towne of* | Great Yarmouth in | Norffolke: | With a new Play neuer played before, of the | praiſe of the RED | HERRING. | *Fitte of all Clearkes of Noblemens Kitchins to be* | *read: and not vnneceſſary by all Seruing men* | *that haue ſhort boord-wages, to be remembred.* | *Famam peto per vndas.* | [ornament] | *LONDON* | Printed for N. L. and C. B. and are to be | ſold at the weſt end of Paules. | 1599. |

No colophon. Quarto. Paged (correctly) from B1 (1–75).

Collation: A–K[4], L[2]. (A 1) Title, *v.* blank. *A* 2 'To his worthie good patron, Lu-*stie Humphrey, . . .*' *Ital. and Rom.* R-T. The Epistle | Dedicatorie. (A 4) 'To his Readers . . .' *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. *To the Reader.* B. 'THE PRAISE OF the red herring.' *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. *The prayse of* | *the red Herring.* (L 2)[v] blank.

The epistle to the readers is in a larger type than the rest. Signatures are in Roman, except A 2 and A 3, of which the letters are Italic,

the numerals Roman. B 4, C 4, D 4, E 4, F 4 are signed, other fourth leaves unsigned, L 2 is unsigned.

Catch-words: A 2. *cleane* A 3. *constable,* B 1. *Bar-(bers)* C 1. mile D 1. if E 1. be, F 1. standerds G 1. wil H 1. yet I 1. (propha-)ning K 1. This L 1. (Philo-)sopher

Copy used: That in the British Museum (1029. e. 21). The text has also been read throughout with the other copy in the same library (96. b. 17. (3.)), which, in certain sheets, has a few variations of reading, generally for the better. In this copy, however, several of the side-notes are partially cut off. When it is required to distinguish these two copies 1029. e. 21 is referred to as a and 96. b. 17. (3.) as b.

(2) *Modern Editions:*

1745 (Harl.[1]) The Harleian Miscellany: or, a Collection of Scarce . . . Tracts . . . Found in the late Earl of Oxford's Library . . . London: for T. Osborne. 1744–6. Vol. vi, pp. 129–162.

In modern spelling. No notes except the side-notes of the original, here given at the foot of the page.

1809 (Harl.[2]) The Harleian Miscellany . . . London: for Robert Dutton. 1808–11. Vol. ii, pp. 288–334.

This is a reprint of the first edition of the Miscellany, with the tracts arranged in chronological order. It is said to have been edited by J. Malham, who wrote a preface for the first volume. The notes are the same as in the earlier edition.

1810 (Harl.[3]) The Harleian Miscellany . . . with . . . annotations . . . by the late William Oldys, Esq. and some additional notes by Thomas Park, F.S.A. London: for White and Co., &c. 1808–13. Vol. vi, pp. 143–181.

In the original spelling except as regards u and v, i and j. The punctuation is modern and the paragraph arrangement has in some cases been altered. So far as I have used this edition it seems to be, for its date, a very good piece of work, though certain emendations which do not seem strictly necessary are introduced. There are some notes.

1871 (Hind.) Miscellanea Antiqua Anglicana. The Old Book Collector's Miscellany . . . Edited by Charles Hindley. Part I. Nash's Lenten Stuff . . . London: Reeves and Turner. pp. xix and 113. Vol. i, No. 7.

In modern spelling. This seems to be substantially a reprint of Harl.[1] or Harl.[2] There is an introduction of six pages dealing with Nashe, and notes, partly taken from Harl.[3] and partly original. A few readings also are taken from Harl.[3]

1883–4 (Gro.) The Complete Works of Thomas Nashe . . . edited by A. B. Grosart. Vol. v, pp. 187–308.

From the copy in the Huth Library. This text is rather puzzling. On the one hand the spelling of the quarto is followed with considerable accuracy, while, on the other, there are a large number of deviations in wording. Many of these seem to be intended as emendations, but they could, I think, hardly have been due to one so familiar with the language of the time as the editor. The punctuation too is frequently altered in such a way as to indicate either great carelessness or complete misconception of the sense. I can only suppose that we have here the result of an over-zealous printer working from a somewhat illegible transcript, and that, for some reason or other, Grosart supervised the work with considerably less care than usual.

1905. (The present edition.)

From the copies at the British Museum. I have recorded only a few of the readings of earlier editors, ignoring the modernizations and many of the other changes introduced in the editions of the Harleian Miscellany and in that of Hindley. In cases, however, where the text appears to be corrupt and where important emendations, not altogether obvious, have been proposed, I have stated the edition in which they were first introduced and whether they were accepted or rejected in later ones. Minor variations have been less fully noted, and it must not be assumed that whenever an edition is not mentioned in the foot-notes its reading necessarily agrees with the text given. Grosart's readings have been recorded whenever they seem not to be mere errors of transcription or misprints; they are also given in a few cases when the variation seemed particularly remarkable, even though there seems little ground for considering it intentional.

It may be observed that the punctuation of the quarto is extremely erratic. I have, I believe, recorded that of the original in all cases in which my alterations could possibly affect the sense, but I have felt myself obliged to make an unusually large number of minor changes. I have also occasionally inserted reference marks (*) when one of a pair was wanting.

NASHES

Lenten Stuffe,

Containing,

The Deſcription and firſt Procreation *and Increaſe of the towne of* Great Yarmouth in Norffolke:

With a new Play neuer played before, of the praiſe of the RED HERRING.

Fitte of all Clearkes of Noblemens Kitchins to be read: and not vnneceſſary by all Seruing men that haue ſhort board-wages, to be remembred.

Famam peto per vndas.

LONDON
Printed for N. L. and C. B. and are to be ſold at the weſt end of Paules.
1592.

To his worthie good patron, Lu- A 2
stie Humfrey, according as the towns-men doo christen him, little Numps, as the Nobilitie and Courtiers do name him, and Honest *Humfrey, as all his friendes and acquaintance esteeme* him, King of the Tobacconists *hic & vbique*, and a singu*lar Mecænas to the Pipe and the Tabour (as his patient* liuery attendant can witnesse) his bounden Orator T. N. most prostrately offers vp this tribute of inke and paper.

MOst courteous vnlearned louer of Poetry, and yet a Poet thy selfe, of no lesse price then H. S., that in honour of Maid-marrian giues sweete Margerã for his Empresse, and puttes the Sowe most sawcily vppon some great personage, what euer she bee, bidding her (*as it runnes in the old song*) Go from my Garden go, for there no flowers for thee dooth grow, *These be to notifie to your diminutiue excelsitude, and compendiate greatnesse, what my zeale is towardes you, that in no streighter bonds woulde bee pounded and enlisted, then in an Epistle Dedicatorie. Too many more lusty-bloud* Brauamente segniors, *with* Cales *beards as broade as scullers maples that they make | cleane their boates with,* A 2v *could I haue turned it ouer, and had nothing for my labour, some faire woords except of Good sir, will it please you to come neere and drinke a cuppe of wine? after my returne from* Ireland *I doubt not but my fortunes will be of some growth to requite you. In the meane time my sword is*

16–7 Go . . . grow] *Printed as two lines of verse by Harl., Hind.* 17 grow. *These Q, Harl., Hind., Gro. These . . .] New par. Gro.* 24 *good Q.*

at your commaund; and, before God, money so scatteringly runnes heere and there vppon vtensilia, *furnitures, ancients, and other necessary preparations,* (*and, which is a double charge, looke how much Tobacco wee carry with vs to expell cold, the like quantitie of Staues-aker wee must prouide vs of to kill lice in that rugged countrey of rebels,*) *that I say vnto you, in the word of a martialist, wee cannot doo as wee would. I am no incredulous* Didimus, *but haue more fayth to beleeue they haue no coyne, then they haue meanes to supplie themselues with it; and so leaue them. To any other carpetmunger or primerose knight of Primero bring I a dedication, and the dice ouer night haue not befriended him, hee sleepes fiue dayes and fiue nights to new skin his beautie, and will not bee knowne hee is awakt till his men vppon their owne bondes* (*a dismall world for trencher-men, when theyr maisters bond shal not be so good as theirs*) *haue tooke vp commodities or fresh droppings of the minte for him: and then; what then? he payes for the ten dozen of balles hee left vppon the score at the tennis court; hee sendes for his Barber to depure, decurtate, and spunge him, whome hauing not paide a twelmonth before, he now raines downe eight quarter angels into his hande, to make his liberalitie seeme greater, and giues him a cast riding ierkin and an olde Spanish hatte into the bargaine, and Gods peace bee with him. The chamber is not ridde of the smell of his feet, but the greasie shoomaker with his squirrels skin and a whole stall of ware vppon his arme enters, and wrencheth his legges for an houre togither, and after shewes his tally. By* S. Loy, *that drawes deepe, and by that time his Tobacco marchant is made euen with, and hee hath dinde at a tauerne, and slept his vnder-meale at a bawdy house, his purse is on the heild and only fortie shillings hee hath behinde, to trie his fortune with at the cardes in*

A 3 *the presence; which if it prosper,* | *the court cannot containe him, but to* London *againe he will, to reuell it, and haue two playes in one night, inuite all the Poets and Musitions to his chamber the next morning; where, against*

theyr comming, a whole heape of money shall bee bespread vppon the boord, and all his trunkes opened to shewe his rich sutes; but the deuill a whit hee bestowes on them, saue bottle ale and Tobacco; and desires a generall meeting.

The particular of it is that bounty is bankerupt, and Lady sensualitie licks all the fat frõ the seuen Liberal Sciences, that Poetry, if it were not a trick to please my Lady, would bee excluded out of Christian buriall, and, in steade of wreathes of lawrell to crowne it with, haue a bell with a cocks combe clapt on the crowne of it by olde Iohannes de Indagines *and his quire of dorbellists. Wherefore the premisses considered (I pray you consider of that woord Premisses, for somewhere I haue borrowed it) neither to rich, noble, right worshipfull, or worshipfull, of spirituall or temporall, will I consecrate this woorke, but to thee and thy capering humour alone, that, if thy starres had doone thee right, they should haue made thee one of the mightiest princes of* Germany; *not for thou canst driue a coach or kill an oxe so wel as they, but that thou art neuer wel but when thou art amongst the retinue of the Muses, and there spendest more in the twinckling of an eye, then in a whole yeare thou gettest by some grasierly gentilitie thou followest. A King thou art by name, and a King of good fellowshippe by nature, whereby I ominate this Encomion of the king of fishes was predestinate to thee from thy swadling clothes. Hugge it, ingle it, kisse it, and cull it, now thou hast it, & renounce eating of greene beefe and garlike till Martlemas, if it be not the next stile to* The strife of Loue in a Dreame, *or* the Lamentable burning of Teuerton. *Giue mee good words I beseech thee, though thou giuest me nothing else, and thy words shal stand for thy deeds; which I will take as well in woorth, as if they were the deedes and euidences of all the lande thou hast. Heere I bring you a redde herring; if you will finde drinke to it, there an ende, no other detriments will I putte you to. Let the Kanne*

1 shall be spread *Harl.*[12], *Hind.* 7-8 *please, my Lady would Q, Gro.*
35 *detriment Gro.*

A 3v *of strong ale, your | constable, with the toaste, his browne bill, and sugar and nutmegs, his watchmen, stand in a readinesse, to entertaine mee euerie time I come by your lodging. In* Ruscia *there are no presents but of meate or drinke; I present you with meate, and you, in honourable courtesie to requite mee, can do no lesse then present mee with the best mornings draught of merry-go-downe in your quarters: and so I kisse the shadow of your feetes shadow, amiable Donsell, expecting your sacred Poeme of the* Hermites Tale, *that will restore the golden age amongst vs, and so vppon my soules knees*
I take my leaue.

Yours for a whole last of redde Herrings.

Th. Nashe.

To his Readers, hee cares not what they be. A 4

NAshes *Lentenstuffe:* and why *Nashes Lentenstuffe?* some scabbed scald squire replies, because I had money lent me at *Yarmouth*, and I pay them againe in prayse of their towne and the redde herring: and if it were so, goodman Pig-wiggen, were not that honest dealing? pay thou al thy debtes so if thou canst for thy life: but thou art a Ninnihammer; that is not it; therefore, *Nickneacaue*, I cal it *Nashes Lenten-stuffe*, as well for it was most of my study the last Lent, as that we vse so to term any fish that takes salt, of which the Red Herring is one the aptest. O, but, sayth another *Iohn Dringle*, there is a booke of the *Red Herrings taile* printed foure Termes since, that made this stale. Let it be a taile of habberdine if it will, I am nothing entaild thereunto; I scorne it, I scorne it, that my woorkes should turne taile to any man. Head, body, taile and all of a redde Herring you shall haue of mee, if that will please you; or if that will not please you, stay till Ester Terme, and then, with the answere to the *Trim Tram*, I will make you laugh your hearts out. Take me at my woord, for I am the man that will doo it. This is a light friskin of my witte, like the prayse of iniustice, the feuer quartaine, *Busiris*, or *Phalaris*, wherin I follow the trace of the famousest schollers of all ages, | whom a wantonizing humour once in A 4v their life time hath possest to play with strawes, and turne mole-hils into mountaines.

Euery man can say Bee to a Battledore, and write in prayse of Vertue and the seuen Liberall Sciences,

14 *Taile Gro.* foure] some *Gro.* 20 E[a]ster *Gro.*

thresh corne out of the full sheaues and fetch water out of the Thames; but out of drie stubble to make an after haruest, and a plentifull croppe without sowing, and wring iuice out of a flint, thats *Pierce a Gods name*, and the right tricke of a workman. Let me speake to you about my huge woords which I vse in this booke, and then you are your own men to do what you list. Know it is my true vaine to be *tragicus Orator*, and of all stiles I most affect & striue to imitate *Aretines*, not caring for this demure soft *mediocre genus*, that is like water and wine mixt togither; but giue me pure wine of it self, & that begets good bloud, and heates the brain thorowly: I had as lieue haue no sunne, as haue it shine faintly, no fire, as a smothering fire of small coales, no cloathes, rather then weare linsey wolsey. Apply it for me,

for I am cald away to correct the faults
of the presse, that escaped in my
absence from the Prin-
ting-house.

THE PRAISE OF the red herring.

THe straunge turning of the Ile of Dogs frõ a commedie to a tragedie two summers past, with the troublesome stir which hapned aboute it, is a generall rumour that hath filled all England, and such a heauie crosse laide vpon me, as had well neere confounded mee: I meane, not so much in that it sequestred me from the woonted meanes of my maintenance, which is as great a maime to any mans happinesse as can bee feared from the hands of miserie; or the deepe pit of dispaire wherinto I was falne, beyond my greatest friendes reach to recouer mee: but that, in my exile and irkesome discontented abandonment, the silliest millers thombe or contemptible stickle-banck of my enemies is as busie nibbling about my fame as if I were a deade man throwne amongest them to feede vpon. So I am, I confesse, in the worldes outwarde apparance, though perhappes I may prooue a cunninger diuer then they are aware, which if it so happen, as I am partely assured, and that I plunge aboue water once againe, let them looke to it, for I will put them in bryne, or a piteous pickle, euery one. But let that passe, though they shal find I wil not let it passe when time serues, I hauing a pamphlet hot a brooding that shall be called the | *Barbers warming panne*; and to the occasion a fresh of my falling in alliance with this lenten argument. That infortunate *imperfit Embrion of my idle houres, the Ile of Dogs before mentioned, breeding vnto me such bitter throwes in the teaming as it did, and the tempestes that

Quassa tamen nostra est, non mersa nec obruta nauis.

B 1v

*An imperfit Embriõ I may well call it, for

[1] obruta nauis] *Harl., Hind.*: obrutunauis *Q*, *Grv.* [2] An imperfit . . .] *opposite l.* 16 *of next page in Q.* may] ma *Q.*

I hauing begun but the induction and first act of it, the other foure acts without my consent, or the least guesse of my drift or scope, by the players were supplied, which bred both their trouble and mine to.

arose at his birth so astonishing outragious and violent as if my braine had bene conceiued of another Hercules, I was so terrifyed with my owne encrease (like a woman long trauailing to bee deliuered of a monster) that it was no sooner borne but I was glad to run from it. Too inconsiderate headlong rashnesse this may be censured in me, in beeing thus prodigall in aduantaging my aduersaries, but my case is no smoothred secret, and with light cost of rough cast rethoricke it may be tollerablely playstered ouer, if vnder the pardon and priuiledge of incensed higher powers it were lawfully indulgenst me freely to aduocate my owne astrology. Sufficeth what they in their graue wisedoomes shall proscribe, I in no sorte will seeke to acquite, nor presumptuously attempte to dispute against the equity of their iudgementes, but, humble and prostrate, appeale to their mercies. Auoide or giue grounde I did; *scriptum est*, I will not goe from it: and *post varios casus*, variable Knight arrant aduentures and outroades and inroades, at greate Yarmouth in Norfolke I ariued in the latter ende of Autumne. Where hauing scarse lookt about me, my presaging minde saide to it selfe, *Hic fauonius serenus est, hic auster imbricus*, this is a predestinate fit place for *Pierse Pennilesse* to set vp his staffe in. Therein not much diameter to my deuining hopes did the euent sort it selfe, for sixe weekes first and last, vnder that predominant constellation of *Aquarius* or *Ioues Nectar* filler, tooke I vp my repose, and there mette with such kind entertainment and benigne hospitality when I was *Mendicus. *Vna litera plusquam* **medicus*, as Plautus saith, and not able to liue to my selfe with my owne iuice, as some of the crummes of it, like the crums in a bushy beard after a greate banquet, will remaine in my papers to bee seene
B 2 when I am | deade and vnder ground; from the bare perusing of which, infinite posterities of hungry Poets shall

[2] Medicus *Q*, *Harl.*[12], *Hind.*, *Gro.*: *om. Harl.*[3]

9 rethorieke *Q*. 22 *fanonius Q*. 23 in] on *Gro*. 26 predominant] predodumant *Q*, *Harl.*[3] 30 liue] *Gro.*: line *Q*, *Harl.*, *Hind*. 33 dead *c.w.*

receiue good refreshing, euen as *Homer* by *Galatæon* was pictured vomiting in a basõ (in the temple that *Ptolomy Philopater* erected to him) and the rest of the succeeding Poets after him greedily lapping vp what he disgorged. That good old blind bibber of *Helicon*, I wot well, came a begging to one of the chiefe citties of Greece, & promised them vast corpulent volumes of immortallity, if they would bestowe vpon him but a slender outbrothers annuity of muttõ & broth, and a pallet to sleep on; and with derision they reiected him; wherupon he went to their enemies with the like proffer, who vsed him honourably, and whome hee vsed so honourably, that to this daye, though it be three thousand yeare since, their name and glorie florish greene in mens memory through his industry. I truste you make no question but those dull pated pennifathers, that in such dudgen scorne reiected him, drunck deep of the soure cup of repentance for it, when the high flight of his lines in common brute was ooyessed. Yea, in the worde of one no more wealthy then hee was, (wealthy saide I? nay I'le be sworne hee was a grande iurie man in respect of me,) those graybeard Huddle-duddles and crusty cum-twangs were strooke with such stinging remorse of their miserable Euclionisme and snudgery, that hee was not yet cold in his graue but they challenged him to be borne amongst them, and they and sixe citties more entred a sharpe warre aboute it, euery one of them laying claime to him as their owne; and to this effect hath Bucchanan an Epigram.

Vrbes certarunt septem de patria Homeri,
Nulla domus viuo patria nulla fuit.

Seauen citties stroaue whence *Homer* first shoulde come;
When liuing, he no country had nor home.

I alleadge this tale to shewe howe much better my lucke | was then *Homers*, (though all the King of Spaines Indies B 2v.

20–1 ()] *Harl., Hind., Gro.*: *om. Q.* 20 beswome *Q.* 24 sundgery *Q.* 33 lucke] *Harl.*[3] *note, Hind., Gro.*: lacke *Q.* 33–4 lacke [*c.w.* was] | then *Q.*

will not create me such a nigling Hexameter-founder as he was,) in the first proclayming of my banke-rout indigence and beggery to bende my course to such a curteous compassionate clime as Yarmouth, and to warne others that aduaunce their heades aboue all others, and haue not respected, but rather flatly opposed themselues against the Frier mẽdicants of our profession, what their amercements and vnrepriueable pennance will be, excepte they teare ope their oystermouthd pouches quickly, and make double amendes for their parsimony. I am no *Tiresias* or *Calchas* to prophecie, but yet I cannot tell, there may bee more resounding bel-mettall in my pen then I am aware, and if there bee, the first peale of it is Yarmouthes. For a patterne or tiny-sample what my elaborate performance would bee in this case, had I a ful-sayld gale of prosperity to encourage mee, (whereas at the dishumored composing hereof I may iustly complaine, with *Ouid*,

Anchora iam nostram non tenet vlla ratem;

My state is so tost and weather-beaten that it hath nowe no anchor-holde left to cleaue vnto,) I care not if, in a dimme farre of launce-skippe, I take the paines to describe this superiminente principall Metropolis of the redde Fish. A towne it is that in rich situation exceedeth many citties, and without the which, *Caput gentis*, the swelling Battlementes of Gurguntus, a head citty of Norffolke and Suffolke, would scarce retaine the name of a Citty, but become as ruinous and desolate as Thetforde or Ely: out of an hill or heape of sande, reared and enforced from the sea most miraculously, and, by the singular pollicy and vncessant inestimable expence of the Inhabitantes, so firmely piled and rampierd against the fumish waues battry, or suyng the leaste action of recouerie, that it is more coniecturall of the twaine, the land with a writ of an *Eiectione firma* wil get the vpperhande of the Ocean,

7 medicants *Q.* 16 mee, whereas *Q.* 17 I] *Harl.*, *Hind.*: *om. Q*, *Gro.* *Ouid. Q.* 18 *ratem. Q.* 19 *New par. Q*, *Harl.*[1 2], *Hind.*, *Gro.* 20 vnto. I *Q.* 22 superimente *Q*, *Harl.*[2] 29 singular *Q.* 34 an] *Harl.*, *Hind.*: a *Q*: *om. Gro.*

then the Ocean one crowes skip preuaile against the Continent. Forth of the sands thus struglingly as it exalteth | and liftes vp his glittering head, so of the B 3
neyboring sands no lesse semblably (whether in recordation of their worn out affinitie or no, I know not) it is so inamorately protected and patronized, that they stand as a trench or guarde about it in the night, to keep off their enemies. Now in that drowsie empire of the pale-fac't Queene of shades, malgre letting driue vpon their Barricadoes, or impetuously contending to breake through their chaine or barre, but they entombe and balist with sodaine destruction. In this transcursiue reportory without some obseruant glaunce I may not dully ouerpasse the gallant beauty of their hauen, which, hauing but as it were a welte of land, or, as M. Camden cals it, *lingulam terræ*, a little tong of the earth, betwixte it and the wide Maine, sticks not to mannage armes and hold his owne vndefeasably against that vniuersall vnbounded empery of surges, and so hath done for this hundreth yeere. Two mile in length it stretcheth his winding current, and then meetes with a spatious riuer or backwater that feedes it. A narrow channell or *Isthmus* in rash view you woulde opinionate it: when this I can deuoutly auerre, I beholding it with both my eies this last fishing, sixe hundreth reasonable barkes and vesselles of good burden (with a vantage) it hath giuen shelter to at once in her harbour, and most of them riding abrest before the Key betwixt the Bridge and the Southgate. Many bows length beyond the marke my penne roues not, I am certain: if I doe, they stand at my elbow that can correct mee. The delectablest lustie sight and mouingest obiect, me thought it was, that our Ile sets forth, and nothing behinde in number with the inuincible *Spanish Armada*, though they were not such Gargantuan

3 head, so] *Gro.*: head. So *Q*. 8 Now] *Qy. read* None? *But probably something has dropped out.* 20 stretcheth] *Gro.*: stretched *Q*: stretches *Harl., Hind.* 33 nothng *Q*.

boysterous gulliguts as they, though ships and galeasses they would haue beene reckoned in the nauy of K. *Edgar*; who is chronicled & registred with three thousand ships of warre to haue scoured the narrow seas, and sailed round about England euery Summer. That which especiallest nourisht the most prime pleasure in
B 3ᵛ me was after a | storme when they were driuen in swarmes, and lay close pestred together as thicke as they could packe; the next day following, if it were faire, they would cloud the whole skie with canuas, by spreading their drabled sailes in the full clue abroad a drying, and make a brauer shew with them then so many banners and streamers displayed against the Sunne on a mountaine top. But how Yarmouth, of it selfe so innumerable populous and replenished, and in so barraine a plot seated, should not onely supply her inhabitants with plentifull purueyance of sustenance, but prouant and victuall moreouer this monstrous army of strangers, was a matter that egregiously bepuzled and entranced my apprehension. Hollanders, Zelanders, Scots, French, Westerne men, Northren men, besides all the hundreds and wapentakes nine miles compasse, fetch the best of their viands and mangery from her market. For ten weeks together this rabble rout of outlandishers are billetted with her; yet in all that while the rate of no kinde of food is raised, nor the plenty of their markets one pinte of butter rebated, and at the ten weekes end, when the campe is broken vp, no impression of any dearth left, but rather more store then before. Some of the towne dwellers haue so large an opinion of their setled prouision, that, if all her Maiesties fleet at once should put into their bay, within twelue dayes warning with so much double beere, beefe, fish, and bisket they would bulke them as they could wallow away with.

Here I could breake out into a boundlesse race of oratory, in shrill trumpetting and concelebrating the

7–8 *Qy. read* driuen in in swarmes *?*

royall magnificence of her gouernement, that for state and strict ciuill ordering scant admitteth any riuals: but I feare it would be a theame displeasant to the graue modesty of the discreet present magistrates; and therefore consultiuely I ouerslip it; howsoeuer I purpose not in the like nice respect to leape ouer the laudable petigree of Yarmouth, but will fetch her from her swadling clouts or infancy, & reueale to you when | and by B 4 whom she was first raught out of the oceans armes, and start vp and aspired to such starry sublimitie; as also acquaint you with the notable immunities, franchises, priuileges she is endowed with beyond all her confiners, by the discentine line of kings from the conquest.

There be of you, it may be, that will account me a paltrer, for hanging out the signe of the redde Herring in my title page, and no such feast towards for ought you can see. Soft and faire, my maisters, you must walke and talke before dinner an houre or two, the better to whet your appetites to taste of such a dainty dish as the redde Herring; and that you may not thinke the time tedious, I care not if I beare you company, and leade you a sound walke round about Yarmouth, and shew you the length and bredth of it.

/ The masters and batchellours commensement dinners at Cambridge and Oxford are betwixt three and foure in the afternoone, & the rest of the antecedence of the day worne out in disputations: imagine this the act or commensement of the red Herring, that proceedeth batcheler, master, & doctor all at once, & therefore his disputations must be longer. | But to the point, may it please the whole generation of my auditours to be aduertised, how that noble earth where the town of great Yarmouth is now mounted, & where so much fish is sold, in the dayes of yore hath bin the place where you might haue catcht fish, & as plaine a sea, within this

12 her] het *Q*. 27 imagine then this act *Gro*. 35 might have catched Fish *Harl.*, *Hind.*: might haue catch fish *Q*: might catch fish *Gro*.

600. yere, as any bote could tumble in, & so was the whole leuill of the Marshes betwixt it and Norwich. *An. Do.* 1000. or thereabouts (as I haue scrapt out of wormeaten Parchment), and in the Raigne of *Canutus*, hee that dyed drunke at Lambeth or Lome-hith, somewhat before or somewhat after, not a prenticeship of yeares varying, *Caput extulit vndis*, the sands set vp shop for themselues, and from that moment to this sextine centurie (or let me not be taken with a lye, fiue hundred nintie eight, that wants but a paire of yeares to make me
B 4v a true man) they would no more liue vnder the | yoke of the Sea, or haue their heads washt with his bubbly spume or Barbers balderdash, but clearely quitted, disterminated, and relegated themselues from his inflated Capriciousnesse of playing the Dictator ouer them.

The Northerne winde was the clanging trumpetter, who, with the terrible blast of his throate, in one yeallow heape or plumpe, clustred or congested them togither, euen as the Westerne gales in Holland right ouer against them haue wrought vnruly hauocke, and thresht and swept the sandes so before them that they haue choakt or clamd vp the middle walke or dore of the *Rhene*, and made it as stable a clod-mould, or turffe ground, as any hedger can driue stake in. Castter, two mile distant from this new Yarmouth we intreate of, is inscribed to be that olde Yarmouth wherof there are specialties to be seene in the oldest writers, and yet some visible apparant tokens remaine of a hauen that ran vp to it, and there had his entrance into the sea, (by aged Fishermen commonly tearmed *Grubs Hauen*,) though now it be graueld vp, and the streame or tyde-gate turned another way. But this is most warrantable, the *Alpha* of all the Yarmouths it was, & not the *Omega* correspondently, & frõ her withered roote they branch the high ascent of their genealogie. *Omnium rerum vicissitudo est*, ones falling is anothers rising, and so fell it out with that ruind Dorpe or hamlet, which

4 *Canntus* Q. 21 clamd] damd *Gro.* 29 sea, by *Q.*

after it had relapst into the Lordes handes for want of reparations, and there were not men enough in it to defend the shore from inuasion, one *Cerdicus*, a Plashing Saxon, that had reueld here and there with his battleaxe, on the bordring bankes of the decrepite ouerworne village now surnamed *Gorlstone* threw forth his anchor, and with the assistance of his speare, in stead of a pikestaffe, leapt agroũd like a sturdie bruite, and his yeomen bolde cast their heeles in their necke, and friskt it after him, and thence sprouteth that obscene appellation of *Sarding sandes*, with the draffe of | the carterly Hoblobs there- C 1
abouts concoct or disgeast for a scripture verity, when the right christendome of it is Cerdicke sands, or Cerdick shore, of Cerdicus so denominated, who was the first maylord or captaine of the morris daunce that on those embenched shelues stampt his footing, where cods & dogfish swomme (not a warp of weeks forerunning), & til he had giuen the onset, they balkt thẽ as quicksands. By and by after his iumping vppon them, the Saxons, for that *Garianonum*, or Yarmoth, that had giuen vp the ghost, in those slymie plashie fieldes of Gorlstone trowled vp a second Yarmouth, abutting on the West side of the shore of this great Yarmouth that is; but feeling the ayre to be vnholsome and disagreeing with them, to the ouerwhart brink or verge of the flud, that writ all one stile of Cerdicke sands, they dislodged with bagge and baggage, and there layde the foundatiõ of a third Yarmouth *Quam nulla potest abolere vetustas*, that I hope will holde vp her head till Doomesday. In this Yarmouth, as Master *Camden* saith, there were seauentie inhabitants, or housholders, that payed scot and lot in the time of *Edward* the Confessor, but a Chronographycal Latine table, which they haue hanging vp in their Guild hall, of all their transmutations from their Cradlehoode, infringeth this a little, and flatters her shee is a great deale yonger, in a faire text hand texting vnto vs how, in the Scepterdome of

11 with] which *Gro.* 12 scripture, verity, when *Q* 17 swomme not *Q.*

Edward the Confessor, the sands first began to growe into sight at a low water, and more sholder at the mouth of the ryuer *Hirus* or *Ierus*; whereupon it was dubbed Iernmouth or Yarmouth: and then there were two Channels, one on the North, another on the South, where through the fisher-men did wander and wauer vp to Norwitch and diuers parts of Suffolke and Norfolke, all the fennie *Lerna* betwixt, that with Reede is so imbristled, being (as I haue forespoke or spoken to fore) *Madona Amphitrite*, fluctuous demeans or fee simple.

From the Citie of Norwich on the East part, it is six-
C 1v teene | mile disiunct and dislocated; and though betwixt the Sea and the salt flud it be interposed, yet in no place about it can you digge sixe foote deepe, but you shall haue a gushing spring of fresh or sweete water for all vses, as apt and accommodate as Saint Winifrides Well, or Towre-hill water at London, so much praised and sought after. My Tables are not yet one quarter emptied of my notes out of their Table, which because it is, as it were, a Sea Rutter diligently kept amongst them from age to age, of all their ebbs and flowes, and winds that blew with or against them, I tie my selfe to more precisely, and thus it leadeth on.

In the time of King *Herrolde* and *William* the Conquerour, this sand of Yarmouth grew to a setled lumpe, and was as drie as the sands of Arabia, so that thronging theaters of people (as well Aliens as Englishmen) hiued thither about the selling of fish and Herring, from Saint Michael to Saint Martin, and there built sutlers booths and tabernacles, to canopie their heads in from the rhewme of the heauens, or the clouds dissoluing Cataracts. King *William Rufus* hauing got the Golden wreath about his head, one *Herbertus*, Bishop of the sea of Norwich, hearing of the gangs of good fellowes that hurtled and t
thither, as thicke as it had beene to the shrine o'
Thomas a *Becket* or our Ladie of Walsingham,

5 rhe South *Q.* 9–10 *Madona, Amphitrite, Q.* 12 dislora' *o.*

a certaine Chappell there for the seruice of God, and saluation of soules.

In the raigne of King *Henrie* the first, King *Steuen*, King *Henrie* the second, and *Richard de corde Lyon*, the apostacie of the sands from the yalping world was so great that they ioynd themselues to the maine land of Eastflege, and whole tribes of males and females trotted, bargd it thither, to build and enhabite, which the saide Kinges, whiles they weilded their swords temporall, animaduertised of, assigned a ruler or gouernour ouer them, that was called the Kings prouost, and that manner of prouostship or gouernment remained in full force and vertue all their fowre Throneships, | *Alias* a hundred yeare, euen till the C 2 inauguration of King *Iohn*; in whose dayes the forewritten- of Bishop of Norwich, seeing the numbrous increase of soules of both kindes that there had framd their nests, and meant not to forsake them till the soule Bell towld them thence, puld downe his Chappell, and what by himselfe and the deuout oblations and donatiues of the fishermen vpon euery returne with their nets full, reedifide and raysed it to a Church of that magnitude, as, vnder ministers and Cathedrals, verie queasie it admits any haylefellow well met; and the Church of Saint Nicholas he hallowed it; whence Yarmouth roade is nicknamed the Roade of Saint Nicholas. King *Iohn*, to comply and keep consort with his auncestors in furthring of this new water-worke, in the ninth yeare of the engirting his annoynted browes with the refulgent Ophir circle, and Anno 1209., set a fresh glosse vppon it, of the towne or free burrough of Yarmouth, and furnisht it with many substantial priuiledges and liberties, to haue and to holde the same of him and his race for fifty fiue pound yearely. In *Anno 1240.* it percht vp to be gouernd by balies, and in a narrower limmitte then the forty yeares vndermeale of the seauen sleepers, it had so much towe to her distaffe and was so well lined and bumbasted, that in a sea battell her shippes and men conflicted the cinque ports,

14 inanguration *Q.* 19 donatines *Q.* 24 Yarmouth *Q.*

and therein so laid about them that they burnt, tooke, and spoyled the most of them, whereof such of them as were sure flights (sauing a reuerence of their manhoods) ranne crying and complayning to King *Henry* the second ; who, with the aduice of his counsaile, set a fine of a thousand pound on the Yarmouth mens heads for that offence, which fine in the tenth of his reigne hee dispenc't with and pardoned.

Edward the first, and Edward the second likewise, let them lacke for no priuiledges, changing it from a burrough to a porte towne, and there setting vp a custome house with the appurtenances for the loading and vnloading of
C 2v ships. | Henry the third in the fortieth of his empery cheard vp their blouds with two charters more, and in *Anno 1262.* and forty fiue of his courte keeping, hee permitted them to wall in their towne, and moate it about with a broade ditch, and to haue a prison or iaile in it. In the swindge of his trident he constituted two Lord admirals ouer the whole nauy of England, which he disposed in two partes, the one to beare sway from the Thames mouth Northwarde, called the Northren nauy, the other to shape his course from the Thames mouth to the westwarde, termed the westerne nauy ; and ouer this northren nauy, for admirall, commissionated one Iohn Peerbrowne, burgesse of the towne of Yarmouth, and ouer the westerne nauy one Sir Robert Laburnus, knight.

But Peerebrowne did not only hold his office all the time of that king, doeing plausible seruice, but was againe Readmirald by Edward the third, and so died ; in the fourteenth of whose raigne he met with the french Kinges nauy, beeing foure-hundred saile, neere to the hauen of *Sluse*, and there so slic't and slasht them & tore their plancks to mammocks, and their leane guttes to kites meate, that their best mercy was fire & water which hath no mercie, and not a victuelar or a drumbler of them hanging in the winde aloofe, but was rib-roasted or had some of his ribbes

13 *Henry c.w.* 20 thames *Q.* 22 thames *Q.*

crusht with their ston-darting engines, no ordinance then beeing inuented. This Edward the thirde, of his propensiue minde towardes them, vnited to Yarmouth Kirtley roade, from it seauen mile vacant, and, sowing in the furrowes that his predecessours had entred, hayned the price of their priuiledges & not brought them downe one barley kirnell.

Richard the second, vpon a discord twixt Leystofe and Yarmouth, after diuerse law-dayes and arbitrarie mandates to the counties of Suffolke and Norfolke directed about it, in proper person 1385. came to Yarmouth, and, in his parliamente the yeare ensuing, confirmed vnto it the liberties of Kirtley roade (the onely motiue of all their contention). | *Henrie* the fifth, or the fifth of the Henries C 3 that ruled ouer vs, abridged them not a mite of their purchast prerogatiues, but permitted them to builde a bridge ouer their hauen and ayded and furthered them in it. Henry the sixth, Edward the fourth, Henry the seauenth and King Henry the eight, with his daughters Queene Mary and our *Chara deum soboles*, Queene Elizabeth, haue not withred vp their handes in signing and subscribing to their requests, but our virgin rectoresse most of al hath shoured downe her bounty vpon them, graunting them greater graunts then euer they had, besides by-matters of the clarke of the marketshippe, and many other beneuolences towardes the reparation of their porte. This and euery towne hath his backewinters or frostes that nippe it in the blade (as not the clearest sunne-shine but hath his shade, and there is a time of sicknes as well as of health). The backewinter, the froste biting, the eclipse, or shade, and sicknesse of Yarmouth was a greate sicknesse or plague in it 1348., of which in one yeare seauen thousand and fifty people toppled vp their heeles there. The newe building at the west ende of the Church was begunne there 1330., which, like the imperfit workes of Kinges colledge in Cambridge, or Christ-church in Oxford, haue too costly large foundations to be euer finished.

31 it] A.D. *Gro.* 34 kinges *Q*

It is thought, if the towne had not beene so scourged and eaten vp by that mortality, out of their owne purses they woulde haue proceeded with it, but nowe they haue gone a neerer way to the woode, for with wooden galleries in the Church that they haue, and stayry degrees of seates in them, they make as much roome to sitte and heare as a newe west end would haue done.

The length and bredth of Yarmouth I promised to shew you; haue with you, haue with you: but first looke wistly vpon the walles, which, if you marke, make a stretcht out quadrangle with the hauen. They are in compasse, from
C 3v the | South cheanes to the North cheanes, two thousand one hundreth and fourescore yardes. They haue towres vpon them sixteene: mounts vnderfonging & enflancking them two of olde, now three, which haue their thundring tooles to compell *Diego Spanyard* to ducke, and strike the winde collicke in his paunch, if he praunce to neere them, and will not vaile to the Queene of England. The compasse about the wall of this new mount is fiue hundreth foot, and in the measure of yards eight score and seuen. The bredth of the foundation nine foot: the depth within ground eleuen. The heighth to the setting thereof fifteene foot, and in bredth, at the setting of it, fiue foot three inches, and the procerous stature of it (so embailing and girdling in this mount) twentie foot and sixe inches. Gates to let in her friends, and shut out her enemies, Yarmouth hath ten; lans seeuenscore: as for her streets, they are as long as threescore streets in London, and yet they diuide them but into three. Voide ground in the towne from the walles to the houses, and from the houses to the hauen, is not within the verge of my Geometry. The liberties of it on the fresh water one way, as namely from Yarmouth to *S. Toolies* in Beckles water, are ten mile, and from Yarmouth to Hardlie crosse another way, ten mile, and, conclusiuely, from Yarmouth to Waybridge in the narrow North water

16 *Deigo Q.* 23 thtee *Q.* 26 enemies. Yarmouth *Grv.* 26-7 ten lans, seeuenscore: as *Q, Grv.*

tenne mile; in all which foords or *Meandors* none can attache, arrest, distresse, but their officers; and if any drowne themselues in them, their Crowners sit vpon them.

I had a crotchet in my head, here to haue giuen the raines to my pen, and run astray thorowout all the coast townes of England, digging vp their dilapidations, and raking out of the dust-heape or charnell house of tenebrous eld the rottenest relique of their monuments, and bright scoured the canker eaten brasse of their first bricklayers and founders, & commented and paralogized on their condition in the present, & in the pretertense; not for any loue or hatred I beare | them, but that I would not be C 4 snibd, or haue it cast in my dishe that therefore I prayse Yarmouth so rantantingly, because I neuer elsewhere bayted my horse, or tooke my bowe and arrowes and went to bed. Which leesing (had I bene let alone) I would haue put to bed with a recumbentibus, by vttering the best that, with a safe conscience, mought be vttred of the best or worst of them all, and notwithstanding all at best that tongue could speake or hart could thinke of them, they should bate me an ace of Yarmouth. Mutch brainetossing and breaking of my scull it cost me, but farewell it, and farewel the Baylies of the Cynqueports, whose primordiat *Genethliaca* was also dropping out of my inckhorne, with the syluer oare of their barronry by *William* the Conquerour conueyed ouer to them at that nicke when hee firmed and rubrickt the Kentishmens gauill kinde of the sonne to inherite at fifteene, and the felony of the father not to draw a foot of land from the sonne, & amongst the sonnes the portion to be equally distributed; and if there were no sonnes, much good doe it the daughters, for they were to share it after the same tenure, and might alienate it how they would, either by legacy or bargaine, without the consent of the lord.

To shun spight I smothered these dribblements, &

1 *Meandors:* none *Q, Gro.* 21 Mutch . . .] *New par. Gro.* 24 *Gethne-liaca, Q, Harl., Hind., Gro.* 26 to] *Harl.*[13], *Hind.*: *om. Q, Gro., Harl.*[3]

refrained to descant how *William* the Conquerour, hauing heard the prouerbe of Kent and Christendome, thought he had woonne a countrey as good as all Christendome when he was enfeofed of Kent, for which, to make it sure vnto him after he was entailed thereunto, nought they askt they needed to aske twise, it being enacted ere the words came out of their mouth. Of that profligated labour yet my breast pants and labours: a whole moneths minde of reuoluing meditation I raueling out therein, (as raueling out signifies *Penelopes telam retexere*, the vnweauing of a webbe before wouen and contexted:) It pities me, it pities me, that in cutting of so faire a diamond as
C 4v Yarmouth, I haue not a casket of | dusky Cornish diamonds by me, and a boxe of muddy foiles, the better to set it forth. *Vt nemo miser nisi comparatus, sic nihil pro mirifico nisi cum alijs conferatur. Cedite soli, stellæ scintillantes; soli Garrianano cedite, reliqua oppida veligera, sedium naualium speciocissimo. Sed redeo ad vernaculum.*

All Common wealths assume their prenominations of their common diuided weale, as where one man hath not too much riches, and another man too much pouertie: Such was *Platos* communitie, and *Licurgus* and the olde Romans lawes of measuring out their fields, their meads, their pastures & houses, and meating out to euery one his childes portion. To this *Commune bonum* (or euery horse his loafe) Yarmouth in propinquity is as the buckle to the thong, and the next finger to the thumbe; not that it is sibbe or cater-cousins to any mũgrel *Democratia*, in which one is all, & all is one, but that in her, as they are not al one, so one or two there pockets not vp all the peeces; there beeing two hundreth in it worth three hundred pounde a peece, with poundage and shillings to the lurtched, set a side the Bailifes fowre and twentie, and eight and fourtie. Put out mine eye, who can, with such another bragge of any Sea towne within two hundred

13 casket | dusky *Q.* Coruish *Q.* 18 *speciocissimo sed Q.* 22 communitie and *Licurgus*, and *Q.* 35 any] *Harl., Hind., Grv.*: my *Q.*

myle of it. But this common good within it selfe is nothing to the common good it communicats to the whole state. Shall I particularize vnto you *quibus vijs & modis*, how and wherein? There is my hand to, I will doe it, and this is my *Exordium*. A towne of defence it is to the Counties of Suffolke and Norfolke against the enemies, (so acounted at the first graunting of their liberties,) and by the naturall strength of the situation so apparant, being both inuironed with many sands, and now of late by great charge much more fortified then in auncient times. All the Realme it profiteth many waies, as by the free Faire of herring chiefly, maintained by the fisher-men of Yarmouth themselues, by the great plentie of salted fish there, not so little two yeares past as foure hundred thousand, wherein were imployed | about fourescore saile D 1 of barkes of their owne.

By the furnishing forth of forty boates for mackerell at the spring of the yeare when all thinges are dearest, which is a great relieſe to all the country thereaboutes, and soone after Bartlemewe-tyde, a hundred and twenty sayle of their owne for herrings, and forty sayle of other ships and barkes trading Newe castle, the lowe countries, and other voyages. Norwitch, at her Maiesties comming in progresse thither, presented her with a shew of knitters on a high stage placed for the nonce; Yarmouth, if the like occasiõ were, could clap vp as good a shewe of netbrayders, or those that haue no cloathes to wrappe their hides in or breade to put in their mouthes but what they earne and get by brayding of nets (not so little as two thousand pound they yearely dispersing amongst the poore women and children of the country for the spinning of twine to make them with, besides the labour of the enhabitauntes in working them); and, for a cõmodious greene place neere the seashoare to mende and drie them,

4 to] too *Harl.*[13], *Hind.* *Qy. read* to it? 5 it] It (*broken* I) *Q.* 12 herrings, chiefly maintained *Harl.*[13], *Hind.*: herring, chiefly maintained *Gro.*, *Harl.*[3] 17 *Run on in Harl.*[3] 22 trading to Newcastle *Harl.*[13], *Hind.*, *Gro.* 33 them) and *Q*, *Gro.* 34 them,] them; *Harl.*[3]: them: *Gro.*

not Salsbury plaine or Newmarket heath (though they haue no vicinity or neighbourhoode with the sea, or scarce with any ditch or pond of freshwater) may ouerpeere or out crow her, there being aboue fiue thousand pounds worth of them at a time vppon her dennes a sunning. A conuenient key within her hauen shee hath, for the deliuery of nets and herrings, where you may lie a floate at a lowe water, (I beseech you doe not so in the Thames;) many seruiceable marriners and seafaring-men shee trayneth vp (but of that in the herring).

The marishes and lower grounds lying vpon the three riuers that vagary vp to her (comprehending many thousand acres) by the vigilant preseruation of their hauen are encreased in value more then halfe, which else would be a *Mæotis palus*, a meare or lake of Eeles, Frogges, and wilde-duckes. The citty of Norwitch (as in the *Preludium* heereof I had a twitch at) fares nere the worse for her, nor
D 1v would fare so wel | if it were not for the fishe of all sortes that shee cloyeth her with, and the felowship of their hauen, into which their three riuers infuse themselues, and through which their goods and merchandise from beyonde seas are keeled vp with small cost to their very thresholds, and to many good townes on this side and beyond. I woulde be loth to builde a laborinth in the gatehouse of my booke, for you to loose your selues in, and therefore I shred of many thinges; we will but cast ouer the bill of her charge, and talke a worde or two of her buildings, and breake vp and go to breakefast with the red herring. The hauen hath cost in these last 28. yeares, sixe and twenty thousand two hundred and sixe and fifty pounde foure shillinges and fiue pence. Fortification and poulder since *Anno 1587.* two thousand markes, the seaseruice in *Anno 1588.* eight hundreth poundes, the Portingale voyage a thousand pound, the voyage to Cales as much.

5 dennes] doumes *Gro.* sunniug *Q.* 8 water; (I *Q.* 8–9 thames), many *Q.* 10 in] on *Gro.* 17 nere] *Harl.*[3], *Gro.*: were *Q*: never *Harl.*[1 2], *Hind.*

It hath lost by the Dunkerkers a thousand pound, by the Frenchmen three thousand, by Wafting eight hundred, by the Spaniardes and other losses not rated, at the least three thousand more. The continuall charge of the Towne in maintenance of their Hauen, fiue hundred pounds a yeare, *Omnibus annis* for euer, the feefarme of the Towne fiftie fiue pound, and fiue pound a yeare aboue for Kirtley Roade. The continuall charge of the bridge ouer the hauen, their walls, and a number of other odde reckonings we deale not with; towards all which they haue not in certaine reuenewes aboue fiftie or threescore pounds a yeare, and that is in houses. The yearely charge towards the prouision of fishe for her Maiestie 1000. pounds: as for arable matters of tillage and husbandrie, and grasing of cattell, their barraine sandswill not beare them, and they get not a beggers noble by one or other of them, but their whole haruest is by Sea.

It were to be wished that other coasters were so industrious as the Yarmouth, in winning the treasure of fish out of those profundities, and then we should haue twentie egges | a pennie, and it would be as plentifull a world D 2
as when Abbies stoode; and now, if there be any plentifull world, it is in Yarmouth. Her sumptuous porches and garnisht buildings are such as no port Towne in our Brittish circumference (nay, take some porte Cities ouerplus into the bargainer) may suitably stake with, or adequate.

By the proportion of the East surprised Gades or Cales diuers haue tried their cunning to configurate a twinlike image of it, both in the correlatiue analagie of the spanbroad rowse running betwixt, as also of the skirt or lappet of earth whereon it stands; heerein onely limitting the difference, that the houses heere are not such flatte custard Crownes at the top as they are. But I for my parte cast it aside as two obscure a Canton to demonstrate and take the altitude by of so *Elizian* a habitation as Yarmouth. Of a bounzing side-wasted parish in Lanca-

21 a penny *c.w.* 26 Bargain *Harl.*, *Hind.* 34 too *Harl.*[3], *Gro.*

shire we haue a flying voyce dispersed, where they goe nine mile to Church euery Sunday, but Parish for Parish throughout Lancashire, Cheshire, or Wingandecoy, both for numbers in grosse of honest houshoulders, youthfull couragious valiant spirites, and substantiall graue Burgers, Yarmouth shall droppe vie with them to the last *Edward* groate they are worth. I am posting to my proposed scope, or else I could runne tenne quier of paper out of breath, in further trauersing her rightes and dignities.

But of that fraught I must not take in two liberall, in case I want stowage for my red Herring, which I rely vpon as my wealthiest loading. Farewell, flourishing Yarmouth, and be euery day more flourishing then other vntill the latter day; whiles I haue my sence or existence, I will persist in louing thee, and so with this abrupt *Post script* I leaue thee. I haue not trauaild farre, though conferred with farthest trauailers, from our owne Realme; I haue turnd ouer venerable *Bede*, and plenteous beadrowles of frierly annals following on the backe of him. *Polidore Virgill*, *Bucchanan*, *Camdens Brittania*, and most recordes
D 2v of friendes or enemies I haue | searcht, as concerning the later modell of it; none of the inland partes thereof but I haue traded them as frequently as the middle walke in Poules, or my way to bed euery night, yet for ought I haue read, heard, or seene, Yarmouth, regall Yarmouth, of all maritimall townes that are no more but fisher townes, soly raigneth sance peere.

Not any where is the word seuerer practised, the preacher reuerentlier obserued and honoured, iustice sounder ministred, and a warlike people peaceablier demeanourd, betwixte this and the *Grand Cathay*, and the strand of *Prester Iohn*.

Adew, adue, tenne thousand folde delicate paramour of *Neptune*, the nexte yeare my standish may haps to addresse

10 fraught] ftaught *Q*. too *Harl.*[3], *Gro*. 21 searcht as *Q*: searched, as *Harl.*, *Hind.*: searcht: as *Gro*. 22 it, none *Q*, *Gro*. 34 haps] happen *Harl.*[1 3], *Hind.*: hope *Gro*.

another voyage vnto thee, if this haue any acceptãce. Now it is high heaking time, and bee the windes neuer so easterly aduerse and the tyde fled from vs, wee must violently towe and hale in our redoubtable *Sophy* of the floating kingdom of *Pisces*, whome so much as by name I shoulde not haue acknowledged, had it not beene that I mused how Yarmouth should be inuested in such plenty and opulence, considering that in M. *Hackluits* English discoueries I haue not come in ken of one mizzen mast of a man of warre bound for the Indies or mediteranean sterne-bearer sente from her *Zenith* or *Meridian*, Mercuriall brested M. *Harborne* alwaies accepted, a rich sparke of eternity first lighted and enkindled at Yarmouth, or there first bred and brought forth to see the light, who since, in the hottest degrees of *Leo*, hath ecchoing noysed the name of our Ilande and of Yarmouth so *Tritonly* that not an infant of the curtaild skinclipping pagans but talk of London as frequently as of their Prophets tombe at *Mæcha*, & as much worships our maidenpeace as it were but one sun that shin'd ouer them all. Our first embassadour was he to the *Behemoth* of *Constantinople*, and as *Moses* was sent from the omnipotent God of heauen to perswade with *Sultan Pharao* to let the children of Israell goe, so from the pre-potent goddesse of the earth, *Eliza*, was hee sent D 3 to set free the English captiues and open vnto vs the passage into the redde sea and *Euphrates*. How impetrable hee was in mollyfying the *adamantinest tiranny of mankinde, and hourely crucifier of *Iesus Christ* crucifyde, & wrooter vp of *Pallestine*, those that be scrutinus to pry into, let them reuolue the *Digests* of our English discoueries cited vp in the precedence, and be documentized most locupleatly. Of him and none but him, who in valuation is woorth 18. huge *Argosees* full of our present dated mishapen childish trauailers, haue I took sent or come in the wind of, that euer Yarmoth vnshelled or ingendred to weather it on till they lost the North-starre, or sailed iust

* The adamãt mollifide with nothing but bloud.

12 accepted a *Q*, *Harl.*, *Hind. Qy. read* excepted, a? 19 our] *Gro.*: or *Q*.

Antipodes against vs; nor, walking in her streetes so many weekes togither, could I meete with any of these swaggering captaines, (captaines that wore a whole antient in a scarfe, which made them goe heaue shouldred, it was so boysterous,) or huftituftie youthfull ruffling comrades, wearing euery one three yeardes of feather in his cap for his mistris fauour, such as wee stumble on at each second step at Plimmouth, Southampton, and Portsmouth, but an uniuersal marchantly formallity, in habitte, speach, gestures, though little merchandise they beate their heades aboute, Queene Norwitch for that goeing betweene them and home: at length (ô, that length of the full pointe spoiles me, all gentle readers, I beseech you pardon mee) I fell a communing herupon with a gentleman, a familiar of mine, & he eftsoones defined vnto mee that the redde herring was this old *Ticklecob*, or *Magister fac totum*, that brought in the red ruddocks and the grummell seed as thicke as oatmeale, and made Yarmouth for argent to put downe the citty of *Argentine*. Doe but conuert, said hee, the slenderest twinckling reflexe of your eie-sight to this flinty ringe that engirtes it, these towred walles, port-cullizd-gates, and gorgeous architectures that condecorate and adorne it, and then perponder of the red herringes priority
D 3v and preualence, who is the | onely vnexhaustible mine that hath raisd and begot all this, and minutely to riper maturity fosters and cherisheth it. The red herring alone it is that counteruailes the burdensome detrimentes of our hauen, which euery twelue-month deuoures a Iustice of peace liuing, in weares and banckes to beate off the sand and ouerthwart ledging and fencing it in; that defrayes all impositions and outwarde payments to her Maiestie (in which Yarmouth giues not the wall to sixe, though sixeteene moath-eaten burgesse townes, that haue dawbers and thatchers to their Mayors, challenge in parliament the vpper hand of it), and, for the vaward or subburbes of my narration, that empals our sage senatours or *Ephori* in princely

9 enluersal *Q*, *Harl.*[3] 19 dowue *Q*. 35 vāward *Gro*.

scarlet as pompous ostentyue as the *Vinti quater* or Lady *Troynouant*; wherefore, quoth he, if there be in thee any whit of that vnquẽchable sacred fire of *Appollo* (as al men repute) and that *Minerua* amongest the number of her heires hath addopted thee, or thou wilt commend thy muse to sempiternity, and haue images and statutes erected to her after her vnstringed silent interment and obsequies, rouze thy spirites out of this drowsie lethargy of mellancholly they are drencht in, and wrest them vp to the most out-stretched ayry straine of elocution to chaunt and carroll forth the *Alteza* and excelsitude of this monarchall fluddy *Induperator*.

Very tractable to this lure I was trained, and put him not to the full anuiling of me with any sound hammering persuasion, in that at the first sight of the top-gallant towers of Yarmouth, and a weeke before he had broken any of these words betwixt his teeth, my muse was ardently inflamed to do it some right; and how to bring it about fitter I knew not then in the praise of the red herring, whose proper soile and nursery it is. But this I must giue you to wit, how euer I haue tooke it vpon me, that neuer since I spouted incke was I of woorse aptitude to goe thorow with such a mighty March brewage as you expect, or temper you one right cup of that ancient wine of *Falernum*, which would last fourty yeere, or | consecrate to your fame a perpetuall D 4 temple of the Pine-trees of *Ida*, which neuer rot. For besides the loud bellowing prodigious flaw of indignation stird vp against me in my absence and extermination from the vpper region of our celestiall regiment, which hath dung mee in a maner downe to the infernall bottome of desolation, and so troubledly bemudded with griefe and care euery cell or organ-pipe of my purer intellectuall faculties, that no more they consort with any ingenuous playful merriments, of my note-books and all books else here

2 *Troynonant Q.* 3 fire] *Harl., Hind., Gro.*: sire *Q.* 6 Statues *Harl.*[13], *Hind.* 11 and] *Harl., Hind.*: an *Q, Gro.* 13 lure, I *Gro.* 14 anniling *Q.* 33 ingenious *Harl.*[13], *Hind., Gro.*

in the countrey I am bereaued, whereby I might enamell and hatch ouer this deuice more artificially and masterly, and attire it in his true orient varnish and tincture; wherefore heart and good wil, a workman is nothing without his tooles; had I my topickes by me in stead of my learned counsell to assist me, I might haps marshall my termes in better aray, and bestow such costly coquery on this *Marine magnifico* as you would preferre him before tart and galingale, which *Chaucer* preheminentest encomionizeth aboue all iunquetries or confectionaries whatsoeuer.

Now you must accept of it as the place serues, and, in stead of comfittes and sugar to strewe him with, take well in worth a farthing worth of flower to white him ouer and wamble him in, and I hauing no great pieces to discharge for his ben-uenue, or welcomming in, with this volley of *Rhapsodies* or small shotte he must rest pacified, and so *Ad rem*, spurre cutte through thicke and thinne, and enter the triumphall charriot of the red herring.

HOmer of rats and frogs hath heroiqut it; other oaten pipers after him in praise of the Gnat, the Flea, the Hasill nut, the Grashopper, the Butterflie, the Parrot, the Popiniay, Phillip sparrow, and the Cuckowe; the wantonner sort of them sing descant on their mistris gloue, her ring, her fanne, her looking glasse, her pantofle, and on the same iurie I might impannell *Iohannes Secundus*, with his
D 4v booke of the | two hundred kinde of kisses. Phylosophers come sneaking in with their paradoxes of pouertie, imprisonment, death, sickenesse, banishment, and baldnesse, and as busie they are aboute the bee, the storke, the constant turtle, the horse, the dog, the ape, the asse, the foxe, and the ferret. Physitions deafen our eares with the *Honorificabilitudinitatibus* of their heauenly *Panachæa*, their soueraigne *Guiacum*, their glisters, their triacles, their mithridates of fortie seuerall poysons compacted, their bitter *Rubarbe* and torturing *Stibium*.

6 affist *Q.* 27 of kisses] *Harl., Hind., Gro.*: ofleises *Q.*

The posterior Italian and Germane cornugraphers sticke not to applaude and cannonize vnnaturall sodomitrie, the strumpet errant, the goute, the ague, the dropsie, the sciatica, follie, drunckennesse, and *slouenry*. The *Galli Gallinacei*, or cocking French, swarme euery pissing while in their primmer editions, *Imprimeda iour duy*, of the vnspeakeable healthfull condiciblenesse of the *Gomorrian* great *Poco*, a *Poco*, their true countriman euery inch of him, the prescript lawes of *Tennis* or *Balonne* (which is most of their gentlemens chiefe liuelyhoodes), the commoditie of hoarsenes, bleare-eyes, scabd hams, threed-bare cloakes, potcht eggs, and *Panados*. Amongst our English harmonious calinos, one is vp with the excellence of the browne bill and the long bowe: another playes his prizes in print, in driuing it home with all weapons in right of the noble science of defence: a third writes passing enamorately of the nature of white-meates, and iustifies it vnder his hand to be bought & sould euery where, that they exceede *Nectar* & *Ambrosia*: a fourth comes foorth with something in prayse of nothing: a fift of an enflamed heale to coppersmithes hal, all to beerimes it of the diuersitie of red noses, and the hierarchy of the nose magnificat. A sixt sweeps behinde the dore all earthly felicities, and makes Bakers maulkins of them, if they stand in competencie with a strong dozen of poyntes; marrie they must be poyntes of the matter, you must consider, where-|of the formost E 1 codpisse poynt is the cranes prouerbe in painted clothes, feare God, and obey the king; and the rest, some haue tagges, and some haue none. A seuenth settes a *Tobacco* pipe in stead of a trumpet to his mouth, and of that diuine drugge proclaimeth miracles. An eygth capers it vp to the spheares in commendation of daunsing. A ninth offers sacrifice to the goddesse *Cloaca*, and disportes himselfe very schollerly and wittilie about the reformation of close stooles and houses of office, and spicing and embalm-

1 cornugraphers] chronographers *Gro.* 7 Conducibleness *Harl.*[12], *Hind.*, *Gro.* 13 calinos] Calenzio's *Hind.*

ing their rancke intrailes, that they stincke not. A tenth settes forth remedies of *Tosted turues* against famine.

To these I might wedge in *Cornelius* the brabantine, who was felloniously suspected in 87. for penning a discourse of Tuftmockados, and a countrey gentleman of my acquaintance who is launching forth a treatise as bigge garbd as the french *Academy* of the *Cornucopia* of a cowe and what an aduantageable creature shee is, beyonde all the foure footed rablement of *Herbagers* and grasse champers (day nor night that shee can rest for filing and tampring aboute it), as also a sworne brother of his that so bebangeth poore paper in laud of a bag-pudding, as a swizer would not belieue it. Neither of their *Decads* are yet stampt, but eare midsummer tearme they will be, if their wordes bee sure payment, and then tell me if our English sconses be not right Sheffield or no.

See the Epistle commendatorie before M. Samuell Daniels translatiõ of the Empreses of Paulus Iouius.

The application of this whole catalogue of wast authours is no more but this, *Quot capita tot sententiæ*, so many heades so many whirlegigs; and if all these haue *Terlery-ginckt* it so friuolously of they reckt not what, I may *Cum gratia & priueligio* pronounce it, that a red herring is wholesome in a frosty morning, and rake vp some fewe scattered sillables together in the exornation and pollishing of it. No more excursions and circumquaques but *Totaliter ad appositum.*

That English marchandise is most precious which no country can be without: if you aske *Suffolke*, *Essex*, *Kent*, *Sussex*, *or Lemster*, *or Cotswold*, what marchandise that
E 1v shoulde | bee, they will answere you it is the very same which *Polidore Virgill* cals *Verè aureum vellus*, the true golden fleece of our woll and English cloth, and nought else; other engrating vpland cormorants will grunt out it is *Grana paradisi*, our grain or corne, that is most sought after. The Westerners and Northerners that it is lead,

1 comemndatorie *Q.*
2 *turnes Q.* 10 champers, day *Q.* can[not] *Gro.* 22 wholsesome *Q.* 25 *ad*] *a Q, Gro.*: *om. Harl., Hind.* 29 be, *c.w.*

tinne, and iron. Butter and cheese, butter and cheese, saith the farmer: but frō euery one of these I dissent and wil stoutely bide by it, that, to trowle in the cash throughout all nations of christendome, there is no fellowe to the red herring. The French, Spanish, and Italian haue wool inough of their owne wherof they make cloth to serue their turne, though it be somewhat courser then ours. For corne, none of the East parts but surpasseth vs; of leade and tinne is the most scarsity in forraine dominions, and plenty with vs, though they are not vtterly barraine of them. As for iron, about *Isenborough* and other places of *Germany* they haue quadruple the store that wee haue. As touching butter and cheese, the *Hollanders* cry by your leaue wee must goe before you, and the *Transalpiners* with their lordly *Parmasin* (so named of the citty of *Parma* in Italy where it is first clout-crushed and made) shoulder in for the vpper hand as hotly; when as, of our appropriate glory of the red herring, no region twixt the poles articke and antartick may, can, or will rebate from vs one scruple.

On no coast like ours is it caught in such abundance, no where drest in his right cue but vnder our Horizon; hosted, rosted, and tosted heere alone it is, and as well poudred and salted as any Duchman would desire. If you articulate with me of the gaine or profit of it, without the which the newe fanglest raritie, that no body can boast of but our selues, after three dayes gazing is reuerst ouer to children for babies to play with; behold, it is euery mans money, from the King to the Courtier; euery housholder or goodman *Baltrop*, that keepes a family in pay, casts for it as one of his standing prouisions. The poorer sort make it three parts of there suste-|nance; with it, for E 2
his dinnier, the patchedest *Leather piltche laboratho* may dine like a Spanish Duke, when the niggardliest mouse of biefe will cost him sixpence. In the craft of catching or taking it, and smudging it Marchant and chapmanable as

4 of] *Harl.*[13], *Hind.*: [of] *Gro.*: *om. Q.* 31 nanuce *c.w.* 32 Dinner *Harl.*[13], *Hind., Gro.*

it should be, it sets a worke thousands, who liue all the rest of the yeare gayly well by what in some fewe weekes they scratch vp then, and come to beare office of Questman and Scauinger in the Parish where they dwell; which they could neuer haue done, but would haue begd or starud with their wiues and brattes, had not this Captaine of the squamy cattell so stoode their good Lord and master: Carpenters, Shipwrights, makers of lines, roapes, and cables, dressers of Hempe, spinners of thred, and net weauers it giues their handfuls to, sets vp so many salt-houses to make salt, and salt vpon salt; keepes in earnings the Cooper, the Brewer, the Baker, and numbers of other people, to gill, wash, and packe it, and carrie it and recarrie it.

In exchange of it from other Countries they returne wine and Woades, for which is alwaies paide ready Golde, with salt, Canuas, Vitre, and a great deale of good trash. Her Maiesties tributes and customes this *Semper Augustus* of the Seas finnie freeholders augmenteth & enlargeth vncountably, and to the encrease of Nauigation for her seruice hee is no enemie.

Voiages of purchase or reprisals, which are now grown a common traffique, swallow vp and consume more Saylers and Marriners then they breede, and lightly not a slop of a ropehaler they send forth to the Queenes ships but hee is first broken to the Sea in the Herring mans Skiffe or Cock-boate, where hauing learned to brooke all waters, and drinke as he can out of a tarrie Canne, and eate poore Iohn out of swuttie platters, when he may get it, without butter or mustard, there is no ho with him, but, once hartned thus, hee will needes be a man of warre, or a *Tobacco* taker, and weare a siluer Whistle. Some of
E 2v these for their haughtie climbing | come home with woodden legges, and some with none, but leaue body and all behinde: those that escape to bring news tell of nothing but eating Tallow and yong black-amores, of fiue and fiue

16 Vitre] Nitre *Harl.*[3] *conj.*, *Hind.* 19 Nauigation, for *Q*: Naulgation: for *Gro.*

to a Rat in euery messe, and the ship-boy to the tayle, of stopping their noses when they drunke stinking water that came out of the pumpe of the ship, and cutting a greasie buffe ierkin in tripes and broiling it for their dinners. Diuers Indian aduentures haue beene seasoned with direr mishaps, not hauing for eight dayes space the quantity of a candles-end among eight score to grease their lippes with; and landing in the end to seeke food, by the canibal Sauages they haue bene circumuented, and forced to yeeld their bodies to feed them.

Our mitred Archpatriarch, *Leopald* herring, exacts no such *Muscouian vassailage of his liegemen, though hee put them to their trumps other while, and scuppets not his benificence into their mouthes with such freshwater facility as *M. Ascham* in his Schoolemaster would imply. His wordes are these in his censure vpon *'Varro: Hee enters not* (sayth he) *into any great depth of eloquẽce, but as one carried in a small low vessell by himselfe very nigh the common shore, not much vnlike the fisher men of Rie, or herring men of Yarmouth, who deserue by common mens opinion small commendation for any cunning sailing at all.* Well, he was her Maiesties Schoolemaster, and a *S. Iohns* man in Cambridge, in which house once I tooke vp my inne for seuen yere together lacking a quarter, and yet loue it still, for it is and euer was the sweetest nurse of knowledge in all that Vniuersity. Therefore I will keepe faire quarter with him, and expostulate the matter more tamely. *Memorandum non ab uno*, I vary not a minnum from him, that, in the captious mystery of Mounsieur herring, low vessels will not giue their heads for the washing, holding their owne pell-mell in all weathers as roughly as vaster timber men, though not so neere the shore as, through ignorance of the coast, he soundeth, nor one man by himselfe alone to | do euery E 3 thing, which is the opinion of one man by himselfe alone,

* That is for a man to be his owne executioner, and at his Princes becke to go vp to the top of the rock, and thence throw himselfe headlong.

Fol. 63. pag. 2.

16 are] *Harl., Hind.*: *om. Q, Gro.* 18 *as one*] *is now Gro.* 28 *abuno Q, Gro.* 34 doe *c.w.*

and not beleeu'd of any other. Fiue to one, if he were aliue, I would beate against him, since one without fiue is as good as none, to gouerne the most egshell shallop that floateth, and spread her nets, and draw them in. As stifly could I controuert it with him about pricking his card so badly in *Cape* Norfolke or *Sinus Yarmouthiensis* and discrediting our countrymen for shorecreepers, like these Colchester oystermen, or whiting-mungers and sprot-catchers. Solyman Herring, woulde you shoulde perswade your selues, is loftier minded and keepeth more aloofe then so; and those that are his followers, if they will seeke him where hee is, more then common daunger they must incurre in close driuing vnder the sands which alternately or betwixt times, when he is disposed to ensconse himselfe, are his entrenched Randevowe or castle of retiring; and otherwhile fortie or threescoare leagues in the roaring territory they are glad on their wodden horses to post after him, and scoure it with their ethiope pitchbordes till they be windlesse in his quest and pursuing. Returning from waiting on him, haue with you to the *Adriatique* and abroade euery where far and neere to make port-sale of their perfumed smoaky commodities, and, that toyle rockt a sleepe, they are for *Vltima Theule*, the north-seas, or *Island*, and thence yerke ouer that worthy *Pallamede don pedro de linge*, and his worshipfull nephew *Hugo Habberdine*, and a trundle-taile tike or shaugh or two; and towardes *Michelmas* scud home to catch Herring againe. This argues they shoulde haue some experience of nauigation, and are not such *Halcyons* to builde their neastes all on the shoare as *M. Ascam* supposeth.

Rie is one of the antient townes belonging to the cinque ports, yet limpeth cinque ace behinde Yarmouth, and it wil sincke when Yarmouth riseth, and yet, if it were put in the ballance against Yarmouth, it woulde rise when Yarmouth sincketh, and to stand threshing no longer about it, Rie is

7 these] those *Gro.* 9 Herring, I would *Harl.*, *Hind.* 15 entrenched *Q.* 23 northseas *Q.*

Ry | and no more but Rie, and Yarmouth wheate com- E 3v
pared with it. Wherefore, had he bene a right clarke of the market, he would haue set a higher price on the one then the other, and set that one of highest price aboue the other.

Those that deserue by common mens opinion small commendation for any cunning sailing at all are not the Yarmouthers, how euer there is a foule fault in the print escapt, that curstly squinteth and leereth that way, but the bonnie Northren cobbles of his countrey, with their Indian canaos or boats like great beefe trayes or kneading troughs, firking as flight swift thorow the glassy fieldes of *Thetis* as if it were the land of yce, and sliding ouer the boiling desert so earely, and neuer bruise one bubble of it, as though they contended to out-strip the light-foot tripper in the *Metamorphisis*, who would run ouer the ripe-bending eares of corne, and neuer shed or perish one kirnell. No such yron-fisted *Ciclops* to hew it out of the flint and runne thorow any thing as these frost-bitten crab-tree fac't lads, spunne out of the hards of the towe, which are Donsel herrings lackeys at Yarmouth euery fishing.

Let the carreeringest billow confesse and absolue it selfe, before it pricke vp his bristles against them, for, if it come vpon his dancing horse, and offer to tilt it with them, they will aske no trustier lances then their oares to beat out the brains of it and stop his throat from belching.

These rubbes remooued, on with our game as fast as wee may, & to the gaine of the red herring againe another crash. *Item*, if it were not for this *Huniades* of the liquid element, that word *Quadragesima*, or Lent, might be cleane spung'd out of the Kalender, with Rogation weeks, Saints eues, and the whole Ragmans roule of fasting dayes, and Fishmongers might keepe Christmasse all the yeere for any ouerlauish takings they should haue of clownes and clouted shoes, and the rubbish menialty, their best customers; and their bloudy aduersaries, the butchers,

E 4 would neuer leaue clea-|uing it out in the whole chines, till they had got a Lord Maior of their company as well as they. Nay, out of their wits they would be haunted with continuall takings, & stand crosse-gag'd with kniues in their mouthes from one Shroft-tuisday to another, and weare candles-endes in their hattes at midsommer, hauing no time to shaue their prickes or washe their flyeblowne aprons, if *Domingo Rufus* or *Sacrapant herring* caused not the dice to runne contrary.

The Rhomish rotten *Pithagoreans* or *Carthusian* friers, that mumpe on nothing but fishe, in what a flegmatique predicament would they be, did not this counterpoyson of the spitting sickenesse (sixtiefolde more restoratiue then *Bezer*) patch them out and preserue them; which, being dubble rosted and dryde as it is, not onely sucks vp all rhewmatique inundations, but is a shooing-horne for a pinte of wine ouer-plus.

The sweete smacke that Yarmouth findes in it, and how it hath made it *Lippitudo Atticæ* (as it was saide of *Ægina*, her neere adiacent comfronter), the blemish and staine of all her salt-water sisters in England, and multiplide it from a moul-hill of sand to a cloude-crowned mount *Teneriffe*, abbreuiatly and meetely according to my old *Sarum* plaine song I haue harpt vpon, and that, if there were no other certificat or instance of the inlinked consanguinitie twixt him and Lady Lucar, is *Instar mille*, worth a million of witnesses, to exemplifie the ritches of him. The Poets were triuiall, that set vp *Helens* face for such a top-gallant Summer May-pole for men to gaze at, and strouted it out so in their buskind braues of her beautie, whereof the onely *Circes Heypasse* and *Repasse* was that it drewe a thousand ships to *Troy*, to fetch her backe with a pestilence. Wise men in *Greece* in the meane while to swagger so aboute a whore.

Eloquious hoarie beard father *Nestor*, you were one of them, and you, *M. Vlisses*, the prudent dwarfe of *Pallas*,

25 consanguinltie (*broken* l) *Q.*

another, of whome it is *Illiadized* that your very nose dropt su-|gar candie, and that your spittle was honye. *Natalis* E 4v
Comes, if he were aboue ground, would be sworne vpon it.
As loude a ringing miracle as the attractiue melting eye of
that strũpet can we supply thẽ with of our dappert *Piemont* } In olde time they vsed to
Huldrick Herring, which draweth more barkes to Yarmouth } wring out at any miracle.
bay, then her beautie did to *Troy*. O, he is attended vpon
most *Babilonically*, and Xerxes so ouercloyd not the *Helle-*
spont with his foystes, gallies, and brigandines, as he
mantleth the narrow seas with his retinue, being not much
behinde, in the check-roule of his *Ianissaries* and contribu-
tories, with Eagle-soaring *Bullingbrooke*, that at his remouing
of houshold into banishment (as father *Froysard* threapes
vs downe) was accompanied with 40000. men, women, and
children weeping, from London to the landes end at Douer.
A colony of criticall *Zenos*, should they sinnow their sillo-
gisticall cluster-fistes in one bundle to confute and disproue
mouing, were they, but during the time they might lap vp
a messe of buttred fish, in Yarmouth one fishing, such
a violent motion of toyling *Mirmidons* they should be
spectators of and a confused stirring to and fro of a *Lepan-* The sea battaile at Lepanta, fought in the beginning of her Maiesties raigne.
talike hoast of vnfatigable flud bickerers and foame-curbers,
that they woulde not moue or stir one foote till they had
disclaimd and abiurd their bedred spittle-positiõs. In
verament and sincerity, I neuer crouded through this con-
fluent herring faire, but it put me in memory of the great
yeare of Iubile in *Edward* the thirds time, in which it is
sealed and deliuered vnder the handes of a publique notary,
three hundred thousand people romed to Rome for purga-
torie pils and paternal veniall benedictions, and the waies
beyond sea were so bungd vp with your dayly oratours or
Beads-men and your crutchet or croutchant friers or crosse-
creepers and barefoote penitentiaries, that a snaile coulde
not wriggle in her hornes betwixt them. Small thinges we
may expresse by great, and great by smal, though the

14 40000, men *Q, Gro.* wemen *Q.* 18 they but during *Q, Gro* : they but, during *Harl., Hind.* 21 *Lapantalike Q, Gro.*

greatnesse of the redde herring be not small (as small a hoppe on my thumbe as hee seemeth). It is with him
F 1 as with great per-|sonages, which from their high estate and not their high statures propagate the eleuaute titles of their Gogmagognes. Cast his state who will, and they shall finde it to be very high coloured (as high coloured as his complexion, if I saide, there were not a pimple to be abated). In Yarmouth he hath set vp his state house, where one quarter of a yeare he keepes open court for *Iewes* and gentiles.

* The fat-tall wodden horse at Troy fetcht in with such pompe.

To fetch him in, in * *Troian Equipage*, some of euery of the Christ-crosse Alphabet of outlandish *Cosmopoli* furrowe vp the rugged brine, and sweepe through his tumultuous oous, will or nill hee, rather then in tendring their alleagance they should be benighted with tardity. For our English *Mikrokosmos or Phenician Didos* hide of grounde, no shire, county, count palatine, or quarter of it, but rigs out some oken squadron or other to waft him along

* Cleopatras glorious sayling to meete Anthony.

* *Cleopatræan* * *Olimplickly*, and not the dimunutiuest nooke or creuise of them but is parturiēt of the like superofficiousnes, * arming forth though it be but a catch or pinck, no capabler then a rundlet or washing bowle to impe the wings of his conuoy. *Holy S. Taurbard*, in what droues the gouty bagd Londoners hurry down and die the watchet aire of an yron russet hue with the dust that they raise in hot spurd rowelling it on to performe cōplementes vnto him. One becke more to the balies of the cinque portes, whome I were a ruder *Barbarian* then *Smill*, the Prince of the *Crims & Nagayans*, if in this actiō I should forget (hauing had good cheare at their tables more then once or twice whiles I loytred in this paragōlesse fish town). Citty, towne, cuntry, Robīn hoode and little Iohn, and who not, are industrious and carefull to squire and safe conduct him in, but in vshering him in, next to the balies of Yarmoth, they trot before all, and play the prouost

* The solemne bringing of the champions at Olimpus.

* Tugging forth by the strength of their armes.

[4] 1. Tugging *Q.*

1 small as *Q.* 2 seemeth) It *Q.* 4–5 the Gogmagogues *Gro.* 7–8 abated) In *Q.* 18 diminutivest *Harl.*[3] 30–1 town) Citty *Q.*, *Gro.*

marshals, helping to keep good rule the first three weeks of his ingresse, and neuer leaue roaring it out with their brasen horne as long as they stay, of the freedomes and immunities soursing frõ him. Beeing thus entred or brought in, the consistorians or setled | standers of Yar- F 1v
mouth commense intestine warres amongst themselues who should giue him the largest hospitality, and gather about him as flocking to hansell him and strike him good luck as the Sweetkin Madams did about valiãt *S. Walter Manny*, the martiall tutor vnto the Blacke prince (he that built Charterhouse), who being vpon the point of a hazzardous iourney into France, either to win the horse or lose the saddle (as it runs in the Prouerb), & taking his leaue at Court in a sute of male frõ top to toe, all the ladies clung about him, and would not let him stretch out a step, till they had enfettred him with their variable fauours, and embroidred ouer his armour like a gaudy Summer meade, with their scarfes, bracelets, chains, ouches: in generous reguerdõment wherof he sacramentally obliged himselfe, that, had the French king as many giants in his countrey as hee hath peares or grapes, and they stood all enranged on the shore to interdict his disimbarking, through the thickest thornie quickset of thẽ he would pierce, or be tost vp to heauen on their speares, but, in honour of those debonaire Idalian nimphs and their spangled trappings, he would be the first man should set foot in his kingdome, or vnsheath steele against him. As he promised so was his * manly blades execution, and, in emulation of him, whole heards of knights and gentlemen clos'd vp their right eyes with a piece of silke euery one, & vowed neuer to vncouer them or let thẽ see light, til, in the aduancement of their mistresse beauties, they had enacted with their brandisht bilbowblades some chiualrous *Bellerophons* trick at armes, that from Salomons Ilands to S. Magnus corner might cry clang againe. O, it was a braue age then, and so it is euer,

* Manny quasi Manly, & from him, I take it, the Mannies of Kent are descended.

5 standerds *c.w.*: standards *Grv.* 9 Madans *Q*, *Harl.*[2], *Grv.* 18 their] *Harl.*[2] *conj.*, *Hind.*: three *Q*, *Harl.*[1 2], *Grv.* 19 reguerdoment *Q*.

where there are offensiue wars, and not defensiue, & men fight for the spoile, and not in feare to be spoiled, & are as lions seeking out their pray, and not as sheepe that lie still whiles they are prayd on. The redde herring is a legate of peace, and so abhorrent from vnnatural bloudshed that if, in his quarrell or bandying who should harbing him, there be | F 2 any hewing or slashing, or trials of life & death, there where that hang-man embowelling is, his pursuiuants or balies returne *non est inuentus*, out of one bailiwick he is fled, neuer to be fastened on there more. The Scotish Iockies or Redshanks (so surnamed of their immoderate raunching vp the red shanks or red herrings) vpholde & make good the same. Their clacke or gabbling to this purport: *How, in diebus illis, when Robert de Breaux, their gud king, sent his deare heart to the haly land, for reason he caud not gang thider himselfe, (or then or thereabout, or whilome before, or whilome after, it matters not,) they had the staple or fruits of the herring in their road or channell, till a foule ill feud arose amongst his sectaries and seruitours, and there was mickle tule, and a blacke warld, and a deale of whinyards drawne about him, and many sacklesse wights and praty barnes run through the tender weambs, and fra thence ne sarry taile of a herring in thilke sound they caud gripe.* This language or parley haue I vsurpt from some of the deftest lads in all Edenborough towne, which it will be no impeachment for the wisest to turne loose for a trueth, without any diffident wrastling with it. The sumpathy thereunto in our owne frothy streames we haue tooke napping; wherfore, without any further bolstring or backing, this Scotish history may beare palme; & if any further bolstring or backing be required, it is euident by the confession of the sixe hundred Scotish witches executed in Scotland at Bartelmewtide was twelue-moneth, that in Yarmouth road they were all together in a plumpe on Christmasse eue was two yere, when the great floud was, & there stird vp such *ternados* & *furicanos* of tempests, in enuy (as I collect) that the staple

8 balier *Q.* 22 *tbrough Q.*

of the herring from them was translated to Yarmouth, as will be spoke of there whiles any winds or stormes & tempests chafe & puffe in the lower region. They and all the seafaring townes vnder our temperate zone of peace may well enuy her prosperity, but they cannot march cheeke by iowle with her or coequall her, and ther's no such manifest signe of great prosperity as a | generall enuy F 2v encompassing it. Kings, noble-men, it cleaues vnto, that walke vpright, and are any thing happy; & euen amongst meane artificers it thrusts in his foot, one of thẽ enuying another if he haue a knack aboue another, or his gains be greater, and, if in his arte they cannot disgrace him, they will finde a starting hole in his life that shall confound him: for example: There is *a mathematicall Smith or artificer in Yarmouth that hath made a locke and key that weighes but three farthings, and a chest with a paire of knit gloues in the till of it, whose whole poise is no more but a groat; now I do not thinke but all the Smiths in London, Norwich, or Yorke (if they heard of him) would enuy him, if they could not outworke him. *Hydra* herring will haue euery thing *Sybarite dainty, where he lays knife aboord, or he wil fly them, he wil not looke vpon them. Stately borne, stately sprung he is, the best bloud of the Ptolomies no statelier, and with what state he hath bene vsed from his swadling clouts I haue reiterated vnto you, and, which is a note aboue *ela*, stately *Hyperion* or the lordly sonne, the most rutilant planet of the seuẽ, in Lent when *Heralius* herring enters into his chiefe reign and scepterdome, skippeth and danseth the goats iumpe on the earth for ioy of his entrance. Do but marke him on your walles any morning at that season, how he sallies & laualtos, and you wil say I am no fabler. Of so eye bewitching a deaurate ruddie dy is the skincoat of this Lantsgraue, that happy is that nobleman who for his colours in armory can neerest imitate his chimicall temper; nay, which is more, if a man should tell you that god *Himens* saffron colour'd robe were made

* Iohn Thurkle.

* The Sybarites neuer woulde make any banquet vnder a twelue-moneths warning.

8 Kings and noblemen *Harl., Hind.* 29 danceth, the *Hind., Gro.*

of nothing but red herrings skins, you would hardly beleeue him: such is the obduracy & hardnesse of heart of a number of infidels in these dayes, they will teare herrings out of their skins as fast as one of these Exchequer tellers can turne ouer a heape of money, but his vertues, both exterior and interior, they haue no more taste of then of a dish of stockfish. Somewhere I haue snatcht vp a ieast of a king
F 3 that was desirous to | try what kinde of flesh-meat was most nutritiue prosperous with a mans body, and to that purpose he commanded foure hungry fellowes in foure separate roomes by themselues to bee shut vp for a yeare and a day, whereof the first shoulde haue his gut bumbasted with biefe and nothing else, till hee cride hold, belly, holde, and so the second to haue his paunch cramd with porke, the third with mutton, & the fourth with veale. At the tweluemonths ende they were brought before him, & he enquired of euery one orderly what he had eate. Therewith out stept the stallfed foreman that had bin at host with the fat oxe, and was growne as fat as an oxe with tiring on the surloynes, and baft in his face Biefe, Biefe, Biefe. Next the Norfolke hog or the swine-wurrier, who had got him a sagging paire of cheeks like a sows paps that giues suck, with the plenty-full mast set before him, came lazily wadling in, and puft out Porke, Porke, Porke. Then the sly sheepe-biter issued into the midst, and summer setted & fliptflapt it twenty times aboue ground, as light as a feather, and cride mitton, mitton, mitton: last the Essex calfe or lagman, who had lost the calues of his legs with gnawing on the horslegs, shudring and quaking, limpte after, with a visage as pale as a peece of white leather, and a staffe in his hande and a kirchiefe on his head, and very lamentably vociferated veale, veale, veale. A witty toy of his noble grace it was, and different from the recipes and prescriptions of our moderne phisitions, that to any sicke languishers, if they be able to waggle their chaps, propound veale for one of the highest nourishers.

3 wlll *Q.* 17 outstept *Q.* 22–3 plentyfull *Q.*

But had his principalitie gone thorough with fish as well as flesh, and put a man to liuery with the red herring but as long, he would haue come in * *Hurrey, Hurrey, Hurrey,* as if he were harrying and chasing his enemies, & *Beuis of Hampton*, after he had bene out of his diet, should not haue bene able to haue stood before him. A chollericke parcell of food it is, that who so ties himselfe to racke and manger to for fiue summers and fiue winters, he shall beget a child that will be a souldiour and a commaunder before hee hath cast his first | teeth, & an *Alexander*, a *Iulius Cæsar*, a *Scanderbeg*, a *Barbarossa* he will proue ere he aspire to thirtie.

* As muc to say as Vrrey, Vrrey, Vrrey, one of the principall places where the herring is caught.

F 3v

But to thinke on a red Herring, such a hot stirring meate it is, is enough to make the crauenest dastard proclaime fire and sword against Spaine. The most intenerate Virgine wax phisnomy, that taints his throate with the least ribbe of it, it will embrawne and Iron crust his flesh, and harden his soft bleding vaines as stiffe and robustious as branches of Corrall. The art of kindling of fires that is practised in the smoking or parching of him is old dog against the plague. Too foule-mouthed I am to becollow or becollier him with such chimnie sweeping attributes of smoking and parching. Wil you haue the secrete of it? this well meaning *Pater patriæ*, & prouiditore and supporter of Yarmouth (which is the locke and key of Norfolke), looking pale and sea-sicke at his first landing, those that be his stewards or necessariest men about him, whirle him in a thought out of the raw colde ayre, to some stew or hot house, where immuring himselfe for three or foure dayes, when he vn-houseth him, or hath cast off his shel, he is as freckled about the gils, & lookes as red as a Fox, clumme & is more surly to be spoken with then euer he was before, and, like *Lais* of Corinth, will smile vpon no man except he may haue his owne asking. There are

11 *Scanderbega Barbarossa Q, Harl.*[3], *Gro.*: *Scanderbeg Barbarossa Harl.*[12]: Scanderbeg or a Barbarossa *Hind.* 22 becollier, him *Q.* 31–2 Fox, clummy *Harl.*[12]: fox, clammy *Hind.*: Fox clumme *Gro.*

that number of Herrings vented out of Yarmouth euery yeare (though the Grammarians make no plurall number of *Halec*) as not onely they are more by two thousand Last then our owne land can spend, but they fil all other lands, to whome at their owne prises they sell them; and happie is he that can first lay hold of them. And how can it bee otherwise? for if Cornish Pilchards, otherwise called *Fumados*, taken on the shore of Cornewall from Iuly to Nouember, bee so saleable as they are in Fraunce, Spaine, and Italy, (which are but counterfets to the red Herring, as Copper to Golde, or Ockamie to siluer,) much more there elbows itch for ioy, when they meete with the true Golde, the true red Herring it selfe. No true flying fish but he, or if there be, that fish neuer flies but when |
F 4 his wings are wet, and the red Herring flyes best when his wings are dry: throughout Belgia, high Germanie, Fraunce, Spaine, and Italy hee flyes, and vp into Greece and Africa, South and Southwest, Estritch-like, walkes his stations, and the Sepulcher Palmers or Pilgrims, because hee is so portable, fill their Scrips with them, yea, no dispraise to the bloud of the *Ottamans*, the *Nabuchedonesor* of Constantinople and Giantly *Antæus*, that neuer yawneth nor neezeth but he affrighteth the whole earth, gormandizing, muncheth him vp for imperiall dainties, and will not spare his Idol *Mahomet* a bit with him, no, not though it would fetch him from heauen fortie yeares before his time; whence, with his Doue that he taught to pecke Barley out of his eare, and brought his Disciples into a fooles paradise that it was the holy ghost in her similitude, he is expected euery minute to discend; but I am affraid, as he was troubled with the falling sicknesse in his life time, in selfe manner it tooke him in his mounting vp to heauen, & so *ab inferno nulla redemptio*, he is falne backward into hell and they are neuer more like to heare of him. Whiles I am shuffling and cutting with these long coated Turkes,

10 countefets *Q*. 11 siluer, much *Q*. 18 Africa South, and *Q*, *Gro*. 19 Sepulcher, Palmers *Q*: Sepulcher: Palmers *Gro*.

would any antiquarie would explicate vnto mee this remblere or quidditie, whether those *Turbanto* groutheads, that hang all men by the throates on Iron hookes, euen as our Toers hang all there Herrings by the throates on wodden spits, first learnd it of our Herring men, or our herringmen of them. Why the Alcheronship of that Belzabub of *Saracens*, *Rhinoceros Zelim* aforesaid, should so much delight in this shinie animall, I cannot gesse, except hee had a desire to imitate *Midas* in eating of gold, or *Dionisius* in stripping of *Iupiter* out of his golden Coate; and, to shoote my fooles bolt amongst you, that fable of *Midas* eating gold had no other shadow or inclusiue pith in it, but he was of a queasie stomacke, and nothing hee coulde fancie but this newe found guilded fish, which *Bacchus* at his request gaue him, (though it were not knowne here two thousand yeare | after, for it F 4v was the delicates of the gods, & no mortall foode til of late yeares.) *Midas*, vnexperienst of the nature of it, (for he was a foole that had asses eares,) snapt it vp at one blow, & because, in the boyling or seathing of it in his maw, he felt it commotion a little and vpbraide him, he thought he had eaten golde in deede, and thereupon directed his Orizons to *Bacchus* afresh, to helpe it out of his crop againe, and haue mercy vpon him and recouer him: hee, propensiue inclining to *Midas* deuotion in euery thing, in lieu of the friendly hospitalities drunken *Silenus*, his companion, found at his hands when he strayed from him, bad him but goe wash himselfe in the riuer *Pactolus*, that is, goe wash it downe soundly with flowing cups of Wine, and he should be as well as euer hee was. By the turning of the riuer *Pactolus* into golde, after he had renc't and clarified himselfe in it, (which is the close of the fiction,) is signified that, in regard of that blessed operation of the iuice of the grape in him, from that day forth in nothing but golden cups he would drinke or quaffe it, whereas in wodden

Turbanto, the great lawne roule Turkes were aboute their heads.

1 lawne] Iawne *Q.* we[a]re *Gro.*
17 yeares) *Midas Q, Gro.* 30 ren'ct *Q, Gro.*

Mazers, and *Agathocles* earthen stuffe, they trillild it off before, and that was the first time that any golden cups wer vsed.

Follow this tract in expounding the tale of *Dionisius* and *Iupiter*, and you cannot goe amisse. No such *Iupiter*, no such golden coated image was there; but it was a plaine golden coated red herring, without welt or garde, whome, for the strangenes of it, they (hauing neuer beheld a beast of that hue before) in their temples inshrined for a God, and insomuch as *Iupiter* had shewed thē such slippery pranckes more then once or twise, in shifting himselfe into sundry shapes, and rayning himselfe downe in golde into a womans lappe, they thought this too might be a tricke of youth in him, to alter himselfe into the forme of this golden *Scali-ger*, or red herring. And therefore, as to *Iupiter*, they fell downe on their marybones, & lift vp their hay-cromes vnto him. Now king *Dionisius* being a good wise-fellow, for he was afterwards a schoolemaster
G 1 & had plaid the coatchman to *Plato* & spit in | *Aristippus* the Philosophers face many a time and oft, no sooner entred their tēple, & saw him sit vnder his Canopie so budgely, with a whole Goldsmiths stall of iewelles and rich offerings at his feete, but to him he stept, and pluckt him from his state with a wennion, then drawing out his knife most iracundiously, at one whiske lopt off his head, and stript him out of his golden demy or mandillion, and flead him, and thrust him downe his pudding house at a gobbe: yet long it prospered not with him, (so reuengefull a iust Iupiter is the red Herring,) for as he tare him from his throne, and vncased him of his habiliments, so, in smal deuolution of yeres, from his throne was he chaced, and cleane stript out of his royalty, & glad to go play the Schoolemaister at Corinth, and take a rodde in his hand for his scepter, and horne-booke Pigmeis for his subiects, *id est*, (as I intimated some dozen lines before,) of a tyrant to become a frowning pedant or schoolemaister.

7 it (they hauing *Q, Harl., Hind., Gro.* 9 in somuch *Q.* 13 rricke *Q.* 16 King *Gro.* 18 Aristippus *Q*: *Aristip- c.w.* 21 budgedly *a.*

Many of ȝou haue read these stories, and coulde neuer picke out any such English; no more woulde you of the Ismael Persians Haly, or *Mortus Alli*, they worship, whose true etimologie is, *mortuum halec*, a dead red herring, and no other, though, by corruption of speech, they false dialect and misse-sound it. Let any Persian oppugne this, and, in spite of his hairie tuft or loue-locke he leaues on the top of his crowne, to be pulld vp or pullied vp to heauen by, Ile set my foot to his, & fight it out with him, that their fopperly god is not so good as a red Herring. To recount *ab ouo*, or from the church-booke of his birth, howe the Herring first came to be a fish, and then how he came to be king of fishes, and gradationately how from white to red he changed, would require as massie a toombe as Hollinshead; but in halfe a penniworth of paper I | will G 1v epitomize them. Let me see, hath any bodie in Yarmouth heard of Leander and Hero, of whome diuine *Musæus* sung, and a diuiner Muse than him, *Kit Marlow*?

Twoo faithfull louers they were, as euerie apprentise in Paules churchyard will tell you for your loue, and sel you for your mony: the one dwelt at Abidos in Asia, which was Leander; the other, which was Hero, his Mistris or Delia, at Sestos in Europe, and she was a pretty pinckany and Venus priest; and but an arme of the sea diuided them: it diuided them and it diuided them not, for ouer that arme of the sea could be made a long arme. In their parents the most diuision rested, and their townes that like Yarmouth and Leystoffe were stil at wrig wrag, & suckt frõ their mothers teates serpentine hatred one against each other. Which droue Leander when he durst not deale aboue boord, or be seene aboorde any ship, to saile to his Lady deare, to play the didopper and ducking water spaniel to swim to her, nor that in the day, but by owle-light.

What will not blinde night doe for blinde Cupid? and what will not blinde Cupid doe in the night, which is his

13 gradionately *Q*, *Harl.*[3] 15 wil *c.w.*

blindmans holiday? By the sea side on the other side stoode Heroes tower, such an other tower as one of our Irish castles, that is not so wide as a belfree, and a Cobler cannot iert out his elbowes in; a cage or pigeonhouse, romthsome enough to comprehend her and the toothlesse trotte, her nurse, who was her onely chatmate and chambermaide; consultiuely by her parents being so encloistred frō resort, that she might liue chaste vestall Priest to Venus, the queene of vnchastitie. Shee would none of that, she thanked them, for shee was better prouided, and that which they thought serued their turn best of sequestring her | G 2 from company, serued her turne best to embrace the company she desired. [Fate is a spaniel that you cannot beate from you; the more you thinke to crosse it, the more you blesse it and further it.]

Neither her father nor mother vowed chastitie when she was begote, therefore she thought they begat her not to liue chaste, & either she must proue hir selfe a bastard, or shew herselfe like them. Of Leander you may write vpon, and it is written vpon, she likte well, and for all he was a naked man, and cleane dispoyled to the skinne, when hee sprawled through the brackish suddes to scale her tower, all the strength of it could not hold him out. O, ware a naked man; Cithereaes Nunnes haue no power to resiste him: and some such qualitie is ascribed to the lion. Were hee neuer so naked when he came to her, bicause he shuld not skare her, she found a meanes to couer him in her bed, &, for he might not take cold after his swimming, she lay close by him, to keepe him warme. This scuffling or bopeepe in the darke they had a while without weame or bracke, and the olde nurse (as there bee three things seldome in their right kinde till they bee old, a bawd, a witch, and a midwife) executed the huckstring office of her yeres very charily & circumspectly til their sliding starres reuolted from them; and then, for seauen dayes togither, the winde and the Hellespont contended which shuld howle lowder; the waues dashed vp to the cloudes, and

the clouds on the other side spit and driueld vpon them as fast.

Hero wept as trickling as the heauens, to thinke that heauen should so diuorce them. Leander stormed worse than the stormes, that by them hee should be so restrained from his Cinthya. At Sestos was his soule; and hee coulde not abide to tarry in Abidos. Rayne, snowe, haile, or blowe it howe it could, | into the pitchie Helespont he leapt, G 2v when the moone and all her torch-bearers were afraide to peepe out their heads; but he was peppered for it, hee hadde as good haue tooke meate, drinke, and leisure, for the churlish frampold waues gaue him his belly full of fish-broath, ere out of their laundry or washe-house they woulde graunt him his coquet or *transire*, and not onely that, but they sealde him his *quietus est* for curuetting any more to the mayden tower, and tossed his dead carcasse, well bathed or parboyled, to the sandy threshold of his leman or orenge, for a disiune or morning breakfast. All that liue long night could she not sleepe, she was so troubled with the rheume; which was a signe she should heare of some drowning: Yet towards cocke-crowing she caught a little slumber, and then shee dreamed that Leander and shee were playing at checkestone with pearles in the bottome of the sea.

You may see dreames are not so vaine as they are preached of, though not in vaine Preachers inueigh against them, and bende themselues out of the peoples mindes to exhale their foolish superstition. The rheume is the students disease, and who study most, dreame most. The labouring mens hands glowe and blister after their dayes worke: the glowing and blistring of our braines after our day labouring cogitations are dreames, and those dreames are reaking vapours of no impression, if our matelesse cowches bee not halfe empty. Hero hoped, and therefore shee dreamed (as all hope is but a dreame); her hope was where her heart was, and her heart winding and

33 our] your *Harl.*[13], *Hind.* 35 dreame) her *Q.*

turning with the winde, that might winde her heart of golde to her, or else turne him from her. Hope and feare both combatted in her, and both these are wakefull, which made
G 3 her at breake of day (what an | old crone is the day, that is so long a breaking) to vnloope her luket or casement, to looke whence the blasts came, or what gate or pace the sea kept; when foorthwith her eyes bred her eye-sore, the first white whereon their transpiercing arrowes stuck being the breathlesse corps of *Leander*: with the sodaine contemplation of this piteous spectacle of her loue, sodden to haddocks meate, her sorrowe could not choose but be indefinite, if her delight in him were but indifferent; and there is no woman but delights in sorrow, or she would not vse it so lightly for euery thing.

Downe shee ranne in her loose night-gowne, and her haire about her eares (euen as *Semiramis* ranne out with her lie-pot in her hand, and her blacke dangling tresses about her shoulders with her iuory combe ensnarled in them, when she heard that *Babilon* was taken), and thought to haue kist his dead corse aliue againe, but as on his blew iellied sturgeon lips she was about to clappe one of those warme plaisters, boystrous woolpacks of ridged tides came rowling in, and raught him from her, (with a minde belike to carrie him backe to *Abidos*.) At that she became a franticke Bacchanal outright, & made no more bones but sprãg after him, and so resignd vp her Priesthood, and left worke for *Musæus* and *Kit Marlowe*. The gods, and gods and goddesses all on a rowe, bread and crow, from *Ops* to *Pomona*, the first applewife, were so dumpt with this miserable wracke, that they beganne to abhorre al moysture for the seas sake: and *Iupiter* could not endure *Ganimed*, his cup-bearer, to come in his presence, both for the dislike he bore to *Neptunes* baneful licour, as also that hee was so like to *Leander*. The sunne was so in his mumps vppon it, that it was almost noone before hee could

4 olde *c.w.* 8 stuck] struck *Gro.* 27 and gods] *om. Harl., Hind.* 28 rowe bread *Q, Gro.*

goe to cart that day, and then with so ill a will hee went, that hee had | thought to haue topled his burning carre or G 3v
Hurrie currie into the sea (as *Phaeton* did) to scorch it and dry it vppe, and at night, when hee was begrimed with dust and sweate of his iourney, he would not descend as hee was woont, to wash him in the Ocean, but vnder a tree layde him downe to rest in his cloathes all night, and so did the scouling Moone vnder another fast by him, which of that are behighted the trees of the Sunne and Moone, and are the same that Syr *Iohn Mandeuile* tels vs hee spoke with, and that spoke to *Alexander*. *Venus*, for *Hero* was her priest, and *Iuno Lucina*, the midwifes goddesse, for she was now quickned, and cast away by the cruelty of *Æolus*, tooke bread and salt and eate it, that they would bee smartlie reuenged on that truculent windy iailour, and they forgot it not, for *Venus* made his sonne and his daughter to committe incest together. *Lucina*, that there might bee some lasting characters of his shame, helpt to bring her to bedde of a goodly boy, and *Æolus* boulting out al this, heapt murder vppon murder.

The dint of destiny could not be repeald in the reuiuing of *Hero* & *Leander*, but their heauenly hoods in theyr synode thus decreede, that, for they were either of them seaborderers and drowned in the sea, stil to the sea they must belong, and bee diuided in habitation after death, as they were in their life time. *Leander*, for that in a cold darke testie night he had his pasport to *Charon*, they terminated to the vnquiet cold coast of Iseland, where halfe the yeare is nothing but murke night, and to that fish translated him which of vs is termed Ling. *Hero*, for that she was pagled and timpanized, and sustained two losses vnder one, they footebald their heades togither, & protested to make the stem of her loynes of all fishes the flanting Fabian or Palmerin of England, which is | Cad- G 4
wallader Herring, and, as their meetings were but seldome, and not so oft as welcome, so but seldome should they meete in the heele of the weeke at the best mens tables,

vppon Fridayes and Satterdayes, the holy time of Lent exempted, and then they might be at meate and meale for seuen weekes togither.

The nurse or mother Mampudding, that was a cowring on the backe side whiles these things were a tragedizing, led by the scritch or outcry to the prospect of this sorrowfull heigho, as soone as, through the raueld button holes of her bleare eyes, she had suckt in & receiued such a reuelatiõ of Doomesday, & that she saw her mistris mounted a cockhorse, & hoysted away to hell or to heauen on the backs of those rough headed ruffians, down she sunk to the earth, as dead as a doore naile, and neuer mumpt crust after. Whereof their supernalities (hauing a drop or two of pitty left of the huge hogshead of teares they spent for *Hero* & *Leander*) seemed to be something sorie, though they could not weepe for it, and because they would bee sure to haue a medicine that should make them weep at all times, to that kinde of graine they turned her which wee call mustard-seede, as well for shee was a shrewish snappish bawd, that wold bite off a mãs nose with an answere and had rumatique sore eyes that ran alwaies, as that she might accompany *Hero* & *Leander* after death, as in hir life time: & hẽce it is that mustard bites a mã so by the nose, & makes him weep & water his plants when he tasteth it; & that *Hero* & *Leander*, the red Herring and Ling, neuer come to the boord without mustard, their waiting maid: & if you marke it, mustard looks of the tanned wainscot hue of such a withered wrinklefaced beldam as she was that was altred thereinto. Louing Hero, how euer altered, had a smack of loue
G 4v stil, & therfore to the coast of louing-land (to Yarmouth neere adioyning, & within her liberties of Kirtley roade) she accustomed to come in pilgrimage euery yeare, but contentions arising there, and shee remembring the euent of the contentions betwixt *Sestos* and *Abidos*, that wrought both *Leanders* death and hers, shunneth it off late, and

32 Kirtley] *b*, *Harl.*[13], *Hind.*, *Gro.*: Wetley *a*, *Harl.*[8]

retireth more northwards: so she shunneth vnquiet Humber, because *Elstred* was drownd there, and the Scots Seas, as before, & euery other sea where any bloud hath bin spilt, for her owne seas sake, that spilt her sweete sweete hearts bloud and hers.

Whippet, turne to a new lesson, and strike wee vp Iohn for the King, or tell howe the Herring scrambled vp to be King of all fishes. So it fel vpon a time and tide, though not vppon a holiday, a faulconer bringing ouer certaine hawkes out of *Ireland*, and airing them aboue hatches on ship-boord, and giuing them stones to cast & scoure, one of them broke loose from his fist ere he was aware; which beeing in her Kingdome when shee was got vppon her wings, and finding her selfe emptie gorged after her casting, vp to heauen she towred to seeke pray, but there being no game to please her, downe she fluttered to the sea againe, and a speckled fish playing aboue the water, at it she strooke, mistaking it for a partrich. A sharke or Tuberon, that lay gaping for the flying fish hard by, what did me he, but, seeing the marke fall so iust in his mouth, chopt aloft, and snapt her vp, belles and all, at a mouthfull? The newes of this murderous act, carried by the Kings fisher to the eares of the land foules, there was nothing but arme, arme, arme, to sea, to sea, swallow & titmouse, to take chasticemẽt of that trespasse of bloud & death committed against a peere of their bloud royal. Preparation was made, the muster taken, the leaders allotted, and had their | bils to take vp pay; an old goshawke for general was H 1 appointed, for Marshall of the field, a Sparhawke, whom for no former desert they putte in office, but because it was one of their linage had sustained that wrong, and they thought they would be more implacable in condoling and commiserating. The Peacocks with their spotted coates and affrighting voyces for heralds they prickt and enlisted, and the cockadoodling cocks for their

19 Tuberon] *b, Harl.*[13], *Hind., Gro*: Tuberon *a, Harl.*[3]

trumpeters, (looke vpon any cocke, and looke vpon any trumpeter, and see if hee looke not as red as a cocke after his trumpeting, and a cocke as red as he after his crowing.) The kistrilles or windsuckers that, filling themselues with winde, fly against the winde euermore, for their ful-sailed standerdbearers, the Cranes for pikemen, and the woodcocks for demilances, and so of the rest euery one according to that place by nature hee was most apt for. Away to the landes ende they trigge, all the skie-bred chirpers of them. When they came there, *Æquora nos terrent & ponti tristis imago,* They had wings of goodwil to fly with, but no webbes on their feete to swimme with; for, except the water-foules had mercie vpon them, and stood their faithfull confederates and backe-friends, on their backes to transport them, they might returne home like good fooles, and gather strawes to build their nests, or fal to theyr old trade of picking wormes. In sum, to the water foules vnanimately they recourse, and besought Ducke and Drake, Swanne and Goose, Halcions & Seapies, Cormorants & Sea-guls, of their oary assistance & aydeful furtherance in this action.

They were not obdurate to be intreated, though they had little cause to reuenge the hawkes quarrell from them, hauing receiued so many high displeasures and slaughters
H 1v and rapines of their race, | yet in a generall prosecution priuate feuds they trode vnderfoote, and submitted their endeuors to be at theyr limitation in euery thing.

The puffin, that is halfe fish halfe flesh (a Iohn indifferent, and an *Ambodexter* betwixt either), bewrayed this conspiracie to *Protæus* heards, or the fraternity of fishes; which the greater giants of Russia & Island, as the whale, the sea horse, the Norse, the wasserman, the Dolphin, the Grampoys, fleered and geered at as a ridiculous danger, but the lesser pigmeis & spawne of them thought it meete to prouide for themselues betime, and elect a king amongst

4 windfuckers *Q.* 10 them. When] *Gro.*: them, when *Q*: them: when *Harl.*[2] 11 *imago.* They *Harl., Hind., Gro.* 23 from] *Qy. read* for?

them that might deraine them to battaile, and vnder whose colours they might march against these birdes of a feather, that had so colleagued themselues togither to destroy them.

Who this king should bee beshackled theyr wits, and layd them a dry ground euery one. No rauening fish they would putte in armes, for feare after he had euerted their foes, and flesht himselfe in bloud, for interchange of diet, hee woulde rauen vp them.

Some politique delegatory Scipio, or witty pated Petito, like the heire of *Laertes per apheresin*, *Vlysses*, (well knowne vnto them by his prolixious seawandering and dauncing on their toplesse tottering hilles,) they would single forth, if it might bee, whom they might depose when they list, if he should begin to tyranize, and such a one as of himselfe were able to make a sound partie if all fayled, and bid base to the enemie with his owne kindred and followers.

None woonne the day in this but the Herring, whom al their clamorous suffrages saluted with *Viue le roy*, God saue the King, God saue the King, saue only the Playse and the Butte, that made wry mouthes at | him, and H 2
for their mocking haue wry mouthes euer since, and the Herring euer since weares a coronet on his head, in token that hee is as he is. Which had the worst end of the staffe in that sea iourney or canuazado, or whether some fowler with his nets (as this host of fethermungers were getting vp to ride double) inuolued or intangled them, or the water foules playde them false (as there is no more loue betwixt them then betwixt saylers and land souldiours) and threw them off their backs, and lette them drowne when they were launched into the deepe, I leaue to some *Alfonsus*, *Poggius*, or *Æsope* to vnwrap, for my penne is tired in it: but this is notorious, the Herring, from that time to this, hath gone with an army, and neuer stirres abroade without it; and when he stirs abroad with it, he sendes out his scowts

20–1 God saue the King, God saue King *Q*. 32–3 *Alfonsus*) *Poggius Q*.

or sentinels before him, that oftentimes are intercepted, and by theyr parti-coloured liueries descried, whom the mariners after they haue tooke, vse in this sort: eight or nine times they swinge them about the maine mast, and bid them bring them so many last of Herrings as they haue swinged them times, and that shall be theyr ransome, and so throw them into the sea againe. King, by your leaue, for in your kingshippe I must leaue you, and repeate how from white to redde you camelionized.

It is to bee read, or to bee heard of, howe in the Punieship or nonage of Cerdicke sandes, when the best houses and walles there were of mudde or canuaze, or Poldauies entiltments, a Fisherman of Yarmouth, hauing drawne so many herrings hee wist not what to do withall, hung the residue that he could not sel nor spēd, in the sooty roofe of his shad a drying: or say thus, his shad was a cabbinet in *decimo sexto*, builded on foure crutches, and hee had no roome in it, but in that garret or *Excelsis*,
H 2v to lodge them, where if they | were drie, let them bee drie, for in the sea they had drunke too much, and now hee would force them doo penance for it.

The weather was colde, and good fires hee kept, (as fishermen, what hardnesse soeuer they endure at sea, they will make all smoake, but they will make amendes for it, when they come to land,) and what with his fiering and smoking, or smokie firing, in that his narrow lobby, his herrings, which were as white as whales bone when hee hung them vp, nowe lookt as red as a lobster. It was foure or fiue dayes before either hee or his wife espied it, & when they espied it, they fell downe on their knees & blessed themselus, & cride, a miracle, a miracle, & with the proclaiming it among their neighbours they could not be content, but to the court the fisherman would, and present it to the King, then lying at *Borrough* Castle two mile off.

Of this *Borrough* Castle, because it is so auncient,

17 a scbbinet *Q*.

and there hath beene a Citie there, I will enter into some more speciall mention. The floud Waueny, running through many Townes of hie Suffolke vp to *Bungey*, and from thence incroching neerer and neerer to the sea, with his twining & winding it cuts out an Iland of some amplitude, named Louingland. The head Towne in that Iland is *Leystofe*, in which bee it knowne to all men I was borne, though my father sprang from the *Nashes* of Herefordshire.

The next Towne from *Leystofe* towardes Yarmouth is *Corton*, and next *Gorlston*. More inwardly on the left hande, where Waueny and the riuer Ierus mixe their waters, *Cnoberi vrbs*, the Cittie of Cnobor, at this day termed *Burgh* or *Borough* Castle, had his being.

This cittie and castle, saith *Bede* and Maister *Camden*, or rather M. *Camden* out of *Bede*, by the woodes | about H 3 it, and the driuing of the sea vppe to it, was most pleasant. In it one Furfæus, a Scot, builded a monastery, at whose perswasion Sigebert, king of the east Angles, gaue ouer his kingdome and led a monasticall life there; but forth of that monastery hee was haled against his will, to incourage his subiects in their battaile against the Mercians, where he perished with them.

Nothing of that Castle saue tartered ragged walles nowe remaines, framed foure square, and ouergrowne with briars and bushes, in the stubbing vp of which, erst whiles they digge vppe Romane coynes, and booies and anchors. Well, thither our Fisherman set the best legge before, and vnfardled to the King his whole sachel of wonders. The King was as superstitious in worshipping those miraculous herrings as the fisherman, licenced him to carry thē vp & downe the realme for strange monsters, giuing to Cerdek sands (the birth place of such monstrosities) many priuileges, and, in that the quantitie of them that were caught so encreased, he assigned a broken sluce in the Iland of Louingland, called Herring Fleete, where they shoulde

24 tattered *Harl., Hind.*

disburden and discharge their boates of them, and render him custome. Our Herring smoker, hauing worn his monsters stale throughout England, spirted ouer seas to Rome with a Pedlers packe of thē, in the Papall chaire of *Vigilius*, he that first instituted Saints eeues or Vigils to be fasted. By that time hee came thither he had but three of his Herrings left, for by the way he fell into the theeuish hands of malcontents, and of launceknights, of whom he was not only robbed of all his mony, but was faine to redeeme his life besides with the better parte of his ambry of burnisht fishes.

H 3v These herrings three he rubbed and curried ouer | till his armes aked againe, to make them glowe and glare like a Turkie brooch, or a London Vintners signe, thicke iagged, and round fringed, with theaming Arsadine, and folding them in a diaper napkin as lilly white as a Ladies marrying smocke, to the market steade of Rome he was so bold as to prefer them, and there, on a hie stoole, vnbraced and vnlaced them to any chapmans eie that woulde buye them. The Popes caterer, casting a licorous glaunce that way, asked what it was he had to sell: the king of fishes, hee answered: the king of fishes? replied hee, what is the price of him? A hundred duckats, he tolde him: a hundred duckats? quoth the Popes caterer, that is a kingly price indeede, it is for no priuate man to deale with him: then hee is for mee, sayde the Fisherman, and so vnsheathed his cuttle-bong, and from the nape of the necke to the taile dismembred him, and pauncht him vp at a mouthfull. Home went his Beatitudes caterer with a flea in his eare, and discoursed to his Holinesse what had happened. Is it the king of fishes? the Pope frowningly shooke him vp like a catte in a blanket, and is any man to haue him but I that am king of kings, and lord of lords? Go, giue him his price, I commaund thee, and lette mee taste of him incontinently. Backe returned the Caterer like a dogge that had lost his taile, and powred downe the

4 in] to *Gro.* 12 tlil *c.w.*

herringmerchant his hundred ducats for one of those two of the king of fishes vnsolde; which then he would not take, but stoode vppon twoo hundred. Thereuppon they broke off, the one vrging that he had offered it him so before, and the other that hee might haue tooke him at his proffer; which since he refused, and now halperd with him, as he eate vp the first, so would he eate vpp the second, and let Pope or patriarch of Constantinople fetch it out of his belly if they could: Hee was as | good as his word, H 4 and had no sooner spoke the worde, but he did as he spoke. With a heauy heart to the pallace the yeoman of the mouth departed, and rehearsed this second il successe, wherwith Peters successour was so in his mulliegrums that he had thought to haue buffeted him, & cursed him with bell, book, & candle; but he ruled his reasō, & bade him, thogh it cost a million, to let him haue that third that rested behind, and hie him expeditely thither, lest some other snatched it vp, and as fast from thence againe, for hee swore by his triple crowne, no crumme of refection woulde he gnaw vpon, till he had sweetened his lippes with it.

So said, so done: thither he flew as swift as Mercury, and threw him his two hundred ducats, as hee before demaunded. It would not fadge, for then the market was raised to three C. and the Caterer grumbling thereat, the fisher swayne was forward to fettle him to his tooles, and tire vpon it, as on the other two, had not he held his hands, and desired hym to keep the peace, for no mony should part them: with that speech hee was quallified, and pursed the three hundred ducats, and deliuered him the king of fishes, teaching hym how to geremumble it, sawce it, and dresse it, and so sent him away a glad man. All the Popes cookes in their white sleeues and linnen aprons met him middle way, to entertaine and receyue the king of fishes, and together by the eares they went, who shoulde

5–6 proffer, which *Q*, *Gro.* 6 him: as *Q*, *Gro.* 26 fettle] settle *Harl.*, *Hind.*, *Gro.*

first handle him or touch him: but the clarke of the kitchin appeased that strife, and would admit none but him selfe to haue the scorching and carbonadoing of it, and he kissed his hand thrice, and made as many *Humblessos*, ere hee woulde finger it: and such obeysances performed, he drest it as he was enioyned, kneeling on his knes, and mumbling twenty aue Maryes to hymselfe in the
H 4v sacrifizing of it on the coales, that his | diligent seruice in the broyling and combustion of it, both to his kingship and to his fatherhood, might not seeme vnmeritorious. The fire had not perst it, but it being a sweaty loggerhead greasie sowter, endũgeond in his pocket a tweluemonth, stunk so ouer the popes pallace, that not a scullion but cryed foh, and those which at the first flocked the fastest about it now fled the most from it, and sought more to rid theyr hands of it than before they sought to blesse theyr handes with it. Wyth much stopping of theyr noses, between two dishes they stued it, and serued it vp. It was not come wythin three chambers of the Pope, but he smelt it, and vpon the smelling of it enquiring what it should be that sent forth such a puissant perfume, the standers by declared that it was the king of fishes: I conceyted no lesse, sayde the Pope, for lesse than a king he could not be, that had so strong a sent, and if his breath be so strong, what is he hymself? like a great king, like a strong king, I will vse hym; let hym be caried backe, I say, and my Cardinalls shall fetch hym in with dirge and processions vnder my canopy.

Though they were double and double weary of hym, yet his Edict being a lawe, to the kitchin they returned him, whither by and by the whole Colledge of scarlet Cardinalles, wyth theyr crosiers, theyr censors, their hosts, their *Agnus deies* and crucifixes, flocked togither in heapes as it had beene to the conclaue or a generall counsaile, and the senior Cardinall that stood next in election to bee Pope, heaued him vp from the Dresser, with a dirge of *De*

22 it] is *Q*.

profundis natus est fex; rex he should haue sayd, and so haue made true latine, but the spirable odor & pestilent steame ascending from it put him out of his bias of congruity, &, as true as the truest latin of *Priscian*, would haue queazened him, like the dampe that tooke both *Bell* | and I 1 Baram away, and many a woorthy man that day, if hee had not beene protected vnder the Popes canopy, and the other Cardinalles, with theyr holi-water sprinkles, quencht his foggy fume and euaporating. About and about the inward and base court they circumducted him, with *Kirielyson* and *Halleluiah*, and the chaunters in their golden copes and white surplesses chaunted it out aboue *gloria patri*, in praysing of him: the Organs playde, the Ordonance at the Castle of Saint *Angelos* went off, and all wind instruments blew as loude as the winde in winter in his passado to the Popes ordinary or dining chamber, where hauing sette him downe, vppon their faces they fell flatte, and lickt euery one his ell of dust, in douking on all foure vnto him.

The busie epitasis of the commedy was when the dishes were vncouered and the swarthrutter sowre tooke ayre: for then hee made such an ayre, as *Alcides* himselfe that clensed the stables of *Agæus* nor any hostler was able to endure.

This is once, the Pope it popt vnder boord, and out of his pallace worse it scared him then *Neptunes Phocases*, that scard the horses of *Hippolitus*, or the harpies, *Iupiters* dogges, sent to vexe *Phineus*; the Cardinalles were at their *ora pro nobis*, and held this suffocation a meete sufferance for so contemning the king of fishes and his subiects, and fleshly surfetting in their carniualles. Negromantick sorcery, negromanticke sorcerie, some euill spirit of an heretique it is, which thus molesteth his Apostoliqueship. The friars and munkes caterwawled, from the abbots and priors to the nouices, wherfore *tanquam in circo*, wee

25 [On] This, at once, the Pope popt it vnder-boord *Gro.* 26 pallace; worse *Gro.*

will trownse him in a circle, and make him tell what Lanterneman or groome of Hecates close stoole hee is,
I 1v that thus nefariously and proditoriously propha-|nes & penetrates our holy fathers nostrils. What needes there any more ambages? the ringoll or ringed circle was compast and chalkt out, and the king of fishes, by the name of the king of fishes, coniured to appeare in the center of it; but *surdo cantant absurdi, siue surdum incantant fratres sordidi*, hee was a king absolute, and would not be at euery mans cal, & if frier *Pendela* and his fellowes had any thing to say to him, in his admiral court of the sea let them seek him, and neither in Hull, Hell, nor Halifax.

They, seeing that by theyr charmes and spels they could spell nothing of him, fell to a more charitable suppose, that it might bee the distressed soule of some king that was drownd, who, being long in Purgatorie, and not releeued by the praiers of the church, had leaue, in that disguised forme, to haue egresse and regresse to Rome, to craue theyr beneuolence of dirges, trentals, and so foorth, to helpe him onward on his iourney to *Limbo patrum* or *Elisium*, and because they would not easily beleeue what tortures in purgatory hee had sustained, vnlesse they were eye-witnesses of them, hee thought to represent to all theyr sences the image and *Idea* of his combustion and broyling there, and the horrible stinch of his sins accompanying, both vnder his frying and broyling on the coles in the Popes kitchin, & the intollerable smel or stink he sent forth vnder either. *Vna voce* in this splene to Pope *Vigilius* they ran, and craued that this king of fishes might first haue Christian buriall, next, that hee might haue masses sung for him, and last, that for a saint hee would canonize him. Al these hee graunted, to bee ridde of his filthy redolence, and his chiefe casket wherein he put all his iewelles hee made the coffin of his enclosure,

3–4 that thus . . . prophanes and penetrates *Harl.*, *Hind.*: . . . propha-|ning & . . . *Q*: thus . . . prophaning & penetrating *Gro.* 4 nosttils, what *Q*: Nostrils: What *Harl.*[1 3], *Hind.*, *Gro.* 25–6 accompanying both vnder *Q*.

and for his ensainting, looke the Almanack in the beginning of Aprill, | and see if you can finde out such a saint I 2
as saint *Gildarde*; which in honour of this guilded fish the Pope so ensainted: nor there hee rested and stopt, but in the mitigation of the very embers wheron he was sindged, (that after he was taken of them, fumed most fulsomly of his fatty droppings,) hee ordained ember weekes in their memory, to be fasted euerlastingly.

I had well nie forgot a speciall poynt of my Romish history, & that is how Madam *Celina Cornificia*, one of the curiosest curtizans of Rome, when the fame of the king of fishes was canon-rored in her eares, shee sent all hir iewells to the iewish lumbarde to pawne, to buy and encaptiue him to her trenchour, but her purueyour came a day after the faire, & as he came, so hee farde, for not a scrap of him but the cobs of the two Herrings the Fisherman had eaten remained of him, and those Cobbes, rather than hee woulde go home wyth a sleeuelesse answer, he bought at the rate of fourescore ducats: (they were rich cobbes you must rate them; and of them all cobbing countrey chuffes which make their bellies and their bagges theyr Gods are called riche Cobbes.) Euery manne will not clappe hands to this tale; the Norwichers imprimis, who say the first guilding of Herrings was deducted from them: and after this guise they tune the accent of theyr speech, how that when Castor was Norwich, (a Towne twoo mile beyond this Norwich, that is termed to this day Norwich Castor, and hauing monuments of a castle in it enuironing fifty acres of ground, and ringbolts in the walles whereto ships were fastned,) our Norwich now vpon her leggs was a poore fisher towne, and the sea spawled and springed vp to her common stayres in Confur streete.

All this may passe in the Queenes peace, and no mā say

2 you] yon *Q.* 5–6 sindged, that *Q.* 12 eares] eates *Q.* 19–20 ducats (they *Q.* 20 them) and *Q*: them): and *Gro.* 22 Cobbes. Euery *Q, Gro.*

I 2ᵛ bo to it: but bawwaw, quoth Bagshaw, to that | which drawlacheth behinde, of the first taking of herrings there, and currying and guylding them amongst thē, wherof, if they could whisper to vs any simple likelihood, or raw-bond carcasse of reason, more than their imaginary dreame of Guilding crosse in theyr parish of S. Sauiours, (now stumpt vp by the rootes,) so named, as they would haue it, of the smoaky guilding of herrings there first inuented, I could wel haue allowed of, but they must bring better cardes ere they winne it from Yarmouth.

As good a toy to mocke an ape was it of hym that shewed a country fellow the red sea, where all the red Herrings were made, (as some places in the sea where the sunne is most transpercing, and beates wyth his rayes feruentest, will looke as red as blood:) and the ieast of a Scholler in Cambridge, that standing angling on the towne bridge there, as the country people on the market day passed by, secretly bayted his hook wyth a red Herring wyth a bell about the necke, and so conueying it into the water that no man perceiued it, all on the sodayn, when he had a competent throng gathered about hym, vp he twicht it agayne, and layd it openly before them; whereat the gaping rurall fooles, driuen into no lesse admiration than the common people about Londō some few yeares since were at the bubbling of Moore-ditch, sware by their christendomes that, as many dayes and yeeres as they had liued, they neuer sawe such a myracle of a red herring taken in the fresh-water before. That greedy seagull ignorance is apt to deuoure any thing. For a new Messias they are ready to expect of the bedlam hatmakers wife by London bridge, he that proclaymes hymselfe Elias, and sayeth he is inspired wyth mutton and porredge; and with them it is currant that Don Sebastian, king of Portugall,
I 3 (slayne twenty yeares since wyth | Stukeley at the battell of Alcazar,) is raysed from the dead like Lazarus, and aliue

9 of] *Qy. read* of it, *and* wherof if (*as Q*) *in ll.* 3-4 *above?* 26 Christendomes *Gro.* 34 Stukely *c.w.*

to be seene at Venice. Let them looke to themselues as they will, for I am theirs to gull them better than euer I haue done; and this I am sure, I haue destributed gudgeon dole amongst them, as Gods plenty as any stripling of my slender portion of witte, farre or neere. They needes will haue it so, much good do it them, I can not doe wythall: For if but carelesly betwixt sleeping and waking I write I knowe not what against plebeian Publicans and sinners (no better than the sworne brothers of candlesticke turners and tinkers) and leaue some termes in suspence that my post-haste want of argent will not giue mee elbowe roome enough to explane or examine as I would, out steps me an infant squib of the Innes of Court, that hath not halfe greased his dining cappe, or scarce warmed his Lawyers cushion, and he, to approue hymselfe an extrauagant statesman, catcheth hold of a rush, and absolutely concludeth, it is meant of the Emperour of Ruscia, and that it will vtterly marre the traffike into that country if all the Pamphlets bee not called in and suppressed, wherein that libelling word is mentioned. An other, if but a head or a tayle of any beast he boasts of in his crest or his scutcheon be reckoned vp by chaunce in a volume where a man hath iust occasion to reckon vp all beasts in armory, he strait engageth hymselfe by the honor of his house, and his neuer reculed sword, to thresh downe the hayry roofe of that brayne that so seditiously mutined against hym, with the mortiferous bastinado, or cast suche an vncurable Italian trench in his face, as not the basest creeper vpon pattens by the high way side but shall abhor him worse than the carrion of a dead corse, or a man hanged vp in gibbets. |

I will deale more boldly, & yet it shall be securelie and I 3ᵛ
in the way of honestie, to a number of Gods fooles, that for their wealth might be deep wise men, and so foorth, (as now a daies in the opinion of the best lawyers of England there is no wisedome without wealth, alleadge what you

16 aud *Q.* 26 mutinied *Gro.* 32 *Run on in Gro.* In *c.w.*

can to the contrarie of all the beggarly sages of greece,) these, I say, out of some discourses of mine, which were a mingle mangle cum purre, and I knew not what to make of my selfe, haue fisht out such a deepe politique state meaning as if I had al the secrets of court or common-wealth at my fingers endes. Talke I of a beare, O, it is such a man that emblazons him in his armes, or of a woolfe, a fox, or a camelion, any lording whom they do not affect it is meant by. The great potentate, stirred vppe with those peruerse applications, not looking into the text it selfe, but the ridiculous comment, or if hee lookes into it, followes no other more charitable comment then that, straite thunders out his displeasure, & showres downe the whole tempest of his indignation vpon me, and, to amend the matter, and fully absolue himselfe of this rash error of misconstruing, he commits it ouer to be prosecuted by a worse misconstruer then himselfe, *videlicet*, his learned counsaile, (God forgiue me if I slander them with that title of learned, for generally they are not,) and they, being compounded of nothing but vociferation and clamour, rage & fly out they care not howe against a mans life, his person, his parentage, twoo houres before they come to the poynt, little remembring their owne priuy scapes with their landresses, or their night walkes to Pancredge, togither with the hobnaylde houses of their carterly ancestrie from whence they are sprung, that haue coold plow-iades buttocks time out of minde with the breath of their
14 whistling, and, with retailing | theyr dung to manure landes, and selling strawe and chaffe, scracht vp the pence to make them gentlemen. But, Lord, howe miserably do these Ethnicks, when they once march to the purpose, set words on the tenters, neuer reading to a period (which you shal scarse find in thirtie sheetes of a lawyers declaration) wherby they might comprehende the intire sence of the writer togither, but disioynt and teare euery sillable

1 Greece *Gro.* 3 cum purre] *cum putre Harl., Hind.* 12 *Qy. read* he followes *or* following *?* 17 *vidilicet Q.* 28 their *c.w.*

betwixt their teeth seuerally; and if by no meanes they can make it odious, they wil be sure to bring it in disgrace by ilfauoured mouthing and missounding it. These bee they that vse mens writings like bruite beasts, to make them draw which way they list, as a principall agent in church controuersies of this our time complaineth. I haue red a tale of a poore man and an aduocate, which poore man complained to the King of wrong that the aduocate hadde doone him, in taking away his cow. The king made him no answere but this, that hee woulde sende for the aduocate, and heare what hee could say. Nay, quoth the poore man, if you bee at that passe that you wil pawse to heare what he wil say, I haue vtterly lost my cowe, for hee hath woords inough to make fooles of tenne thousand. So hee that shal haue his lines bandied by our vsuall plodders in Fitzherbart, lette him not care whether they bee right or wrong: for they will writhe and turne them as they list, and make the author beleeue he meant that which hee neuer did meane: and, for a knitting vp conclusion, his credite is vnrepriueably lost, that on bare suspitiõ in such cases shal but haue his name controuerted amongest thẽ; & if I should fall into their handes, I would be pressed to death for obstinate silence, and neuer seeke to cleere my selfe, for it is in vaine, since both they will confound a mans memory wyth their tedious babbling, | and I 4v in the first three wordes of his Apology, with impudent exclamations interrupt him, whenas their mercenary tongues (lie they neuer so lowdly) without checke or controulé must haue their free passage for fiue houres together.

I speake of the worser sort, not of the best, whom I holde in high admiration, as well for theyr singular gifts of art and nature, as theyr vntaynted consciences wyth corruption: and from some of them I auowe I haue heard as excellent things flowe, as euer I obserued in Tully or Demosthenes. Those that were present at the arraignmẽt

9 King *Gro.*

of Lopus (to insist in no other particular) hereof I am sure will beare me record. Latinelesse dolts, saturnine heauy headed blunderers, my inuectiue hath relation to, such as count al Artes puppet-playes, and pretty rattles to please children, in comparison of their confused barbarous lawe, which if it were set downe in any christian language but the Getan tongue, it would neuer grieue a man to studie it.

Neyther *Ouid* nor *Ariosto* coulde by any perswasions of their parents be induced to study the Ciuil law, for the harshnesse of it: how much more (had they bin aliue at this day, and borne in our nation) would they haue consented to study this vnciuill Norman hotpotch, this sow of lead, that hath neuer a ring at the end to lift it vp by, is without head or foote, the deformedest monster that may bee? I stand lawing heere, what with these lawyers and selfe-conceited misinterpreters, so long, that my redde herring, which was hot broyling on the coles, is waxt starke cold for want of blowing. Haue with them for a riddle or two, onely to set their wittes a nibbling, and their iobbernowles a working, and so good night to their segniories, but with this indentment and caution, that, though there |
K 1 be neither rime nor reason in it, (as by my good will there shal not,) they, according to their accustomed gentle fauors, whether I wil or no, shall supply it with either, and runne ouer al the peeres of the land in peeuish moralizing and anatomizing it.

There was a Herring, or there was not, for it was but a cropshin, one of the refuse sort of herrings, and this herring, or this cropshin, was sensed and thurified in the smoake, and had got him a suit of durance that would last longer then one of *Erra Paters* Almanacks or a cunstables browne bill, onely his head was in his tayle, and that made his breath so strong that no man could abide him. Well, he was a *Triton* of his time, and a sweete singing calander to the state, yet not beloued of the shoury *Pleyades* or the

3 relation, to such *Q*, *Gro*. 12 *Qy. read* they not haue?

Colossus of the sunne, howeuer hee thought himselfe another *tumidus Antimachus*, as compleate an *Adelantado* as hee that is knowne by wearing a cloake of tuftaffatie eighteene yeare; and to Lady *Turbut* there is no demurre but he would needs goe a wooing, and offered her for a dowre whole hecatombs and a twoo-hand-sword: shee starde vpon him with *Megaras* eyes, like *Iris* the messenger of *Iuno*, and bad him go eate a fooles head and garlick, for she would none of him: thereuppon particularly strictly and vsually he replied, that though thunder nere lights on *Phœbus* tree, and *Amphion*, that worthy musition, was husband to *Niobe*, and there was no such acceptable incense to the heauens as the bloud of a traitour, reuenged hee would bee by one *Chimera* of imagination or other, and hamper and embrake her in those mortal straights for hir disdain, that, in spite of diuine simmetry & miniature, into her buskie groue shee should let him enter, and bid adew, sweete Lord, or the crampe of death should wrest her heart strings. |

This speech was no spireable odor to the *Achelous* of her audience; wherefore she charged him by the extreame lineaments of the Erimanthian beare, and by the priuy fistula of the *Pierides*, to committe no more such excruciating sillables to the yeelding ayre, for she would sooner make her a French-hood of a cowsharde and a gowne of spiders webbes, with the sleeues drawn out with cabbages, then be so contaminated any more with his abortiue loathely motiues: With this, in an olympick rage, he calles for a cleane shirt, and puttes on fiue paire of buskins, and seeketh out eloquent *Zenophon*, out of whose mouth the Muses spake, to declaime in open Courte against her. K 1v

The action is entred, the complaint of her wintered browes presented, of a violent rape of his heart shee is indited and conuinced. The circumstaunce that followes you may imagine or suppose: or, without supposing or imagining, I will tell you; the nutte was crackt, the

16 simnietry *Q.* 28 this in *Q*, *Gro.*

strife discust, and the center of her heart layd open, and to this wild of sorrowes and excruciament she was confined, either to bee helde a flat thornebacke or sharpe pricking dog-fish to the weale publique, or seale her selfe close to his seale-skind riueld lippes, and suffer her selfe as a spirit to be coniured into the hellish circle of his embraces.

It would not be, good cropshin, Madam *Turbut* could not away with such a drie withered carkasse to lie by her; *currat rex*, *viuat lex*, come what would, shee would none of him: wherfore, as a poysoner of mankind with her beautie, she was adiudged to be boyled to death in hot scalding water, and to haue her posterity throughly sawst and sowst and pickled in barrelles of brinish teares, so ruthfull and
K 2 dolorous that | the inhabitants on *Bosphoros* should bee laxatiue in deploring it. O, for a Legion of mice-eyed decipherers and calculaters vppon characters, now to augurate what I meane by this: the diuell, if it stood vpon his saluation, cannot do it, much lesse petty diuels and cruell Rhadamants vppon earth, (else where in France and Italy *subintelligitur*, and not in our aspicious Iland climate,) men that haue no meanes to purchase credit with theyr Prince, but by putting him still in feare, and beating into his opinion that they are the onely preseruers of his life, in sitting vp night and day in sifting out treasons, whē they are the most traytours themselues, to his life, health, and quiet, in continual commacerating him with dread and terror, when but to gette a pension, or bring him in theyr debt, next to God, for vpholding his vital breath, it is neither so, nor so, but some foole, some drunken man, some madde man in an intoxicate humour hath vttered hee knewe not what, and they, beeing starued for intelligence or want of employment, take hold of it with tooth and nayle, and in spite of all the wayters, will violently breake into the kings chamber, and awake him at midnight to reueale it.

Say that a more piercing Linceus sight should diue into

14 on] on the *Harl.*[1 2], *Hind*: of *Gro.* 19 earth, else where, (in *Gro.*

the intrailes of this insinuating parasites knauery; to the strapado and the stretching torture hee will referre it for triall, and there eyther teare him limbe from limbe, but hee will extract some capitall confession from him, that shal concerne the Princes life and his crowne and dignity, and bring himselfe in such necessary request about his prince as hee may holde him for his right hand and the onely staffe of his royalty, and thinke hee were vndoone if hee were without him, when the poore fellow so tyrannously handled would rather in that extremitie of | conuulsion K 2v confesse hee crucified Iesus Christ then abide it any longer. I am not against it, (for God forbid I should,) that it behooues all loyall true subiects to bee vigilant and iealous for their princes safetie, and, certaine, too iealous and vigilant of it they cannot bee, if they bee good princes that raigne ouer them, nor vse too many meanes of disquisition by tortures, or otherwise, to discouer treasons pretended against them, but vppon the least wagging of a straw to put them in feare where no feare is, and make a hurliburlie in the realme vpon had I wist, not so much for any zeale or loue to their princes, or tender care of theyr preseruation, as to picke thankes, and curry a little fauour, that thereby they may lay the foundation to build a sute on, or crosse some great enemie they haue, I will maintaine it is most lewd and detestable. I accuse none, but such there haue beene belonging to Princes in former ages, if there bee not at this houre.

Stay, let me looke about, where am I? in my text, or out of it? not out, for a groate: out, for an angell: nay, I'le lay no wagers, for nowe I perponder more sadlie vppon it, I thinke I am out indeede. Beare with it, it was but a pretty parenthesis of Princes and theyr parasites, which shall doo you no harme, for I will cloy you with Herring before wee part.

Will you haue the other riddle of the cropshin to make vppe the payre that I promised you? you shall, you shall

9 tyrannonsly *Q.* 18 sttaw *Q.* 28 I in *Q, Gro.* 29 angell, nay *Q, Gro.*

(not haue it, I meane) but beare with mee, for I cannot spare it, and I perswade my selfe you wil be well contented to spare it, except it were better then the former; and yet I pray you what fault can you finde with the former? hath it any more sence in it then it should haue? is it not right of the merry coblers cutte in that witty Play of *the Case is altered*? |

K 3 I will speake a proude word (though it may bee counted arrogancy in me to prayse mine owne stuffe): if it bee not more absurde then *Philips his Venus*, *the white Tragedie*, *or the greene Knight*, or I can tell what English to make of it in part or in whole, I wish, in the foulest weather that is, to goe in cutte spanish lether shooes, or silke stockings, or to stand barehead to a nobleman, and not gette of him the price of a periwig to couer my bare crown, no, not so much as a pipe of Tabacco to rayse my spirites and warme my braine.

My readers peraduenture may see more into it then I can; for, in comparison of them, in whatsoeuer I set forth, I am *Bernardus non vidit omnia*, as blinde as blinde Bayard, and haue the eyes of a beetle: nothing from them is obscure, they being quicker sighted then the sunne, to spie in his beames the moates that are not, and able to transforme the lightest murmuring gnat to an Elephant. Carpe or descant they as theyr spleene mooues them, my spleene mooues me not to file my handes with them, but to fall a crash more to the redde herring.

Howe many bee there in the worlde that childishly depraue Alchumy, and cannot spell the first letter of it; in the black booke of which ignorant band of scorners, it may be I am scorde vp with the highest: if I be, I must intreate them to wipe me out, for the red herring hath lately beene my ghostly father to conuert me to their fayth; the *probatum est* of whose transfiguration *ex Luna in Solem*, from his duskie tinne hew into a perfit golden blandishment, onely by the foggy smoake of the grossest kind of fire that is,

9 stuffe) if *Q*, *Gro.*

illumines my speculatiue soule, what muche more, not sophisticate or superficiall effects, but absolute essentiall alterations of mettalles, there may bee | made by an artificiall K 3v repurified flame and diuerse other helpes of nature added besides.

Cornelius Agrippa maketh mention of some Philosophers that held the skinne of the sheepe that bare the golden fleece, to be nothing but a booke of Alcumy written vpon it; so if wee should examine matters to the proofe, wee shoulde finde the redde Herrings skinne to be little lesse: the accidens of Alcumy I will sweare it is, be it but for that experiment of his smoaking alone, and, which is a secret that all Tapsters will curse mee for blabbing, in his skinne there is plaine witchcraft; for doe but rubbe a kanne or quarte pot round about the mouth wyth it, let the cunningest lickespiggot swelt his heart out, the beere shal neuer foame or froath in the cupp, whereby to deceyue men of their measure, but be as setled as if it stoode al night.

Next, to draw on hounds to a sent, to a redde herring skinne there is nothing comparable. The round or cobbe of it dride and beaten to powlder is *ipse ille* agaynst the stone: and of the whole body of it selfe, the finest Ladies beyond seas frame their kickshawes.

The rebel Iacke Cade was the first that deuised to put redde herrings in cades, and from hym they haue their name. Nowe as wee call it the swinging of herrings when wee cade them, so in a halter was hee swung, and trussed vppe as hard and round as any cade of herring he trussed vppe in his tyme, and perhappes of his being so swung and trussed vp, hauyng first found out the tricke to cade herring, they woulde so much honour him in his death, as not onely to call it swinging, but cading of herring also. If the text will beare this, we wil force it to beare more, but it shall be but the weight of a strawe, or the weight of *Iacke Straw* more; who, with the same *Græca fide* I marted | vnto you K 4

23 it itselfe *Harl., Hind.* 28 wee] *Gro.*: hee *Q.* he caded *Harl.*[1 2], *Hind.*

the former, was the first that putte the redde herring in straw ouer head and eares like beggars, & the Fishermen vpon that Iacke strawd him euer after: & some, for he was so begarly a knaue that chalenged to be a gentleman, and had no witte nor wealth but what hee got by the warme wrapping vp of herring, raised this Prouerbe of him, *Gentleman Iacke Herring that puttes his breeches on his head for want of wearing.* Other disgraceful prouerbes of the herring there be, as *Nere a barrell better herring*, *Neither flesh nor fish, nor good red herring*, which those that haue bitten with ill bargaines of either sort haue dribd forth in reuenge, and yet not haue them from Yarmouth; many coast towns besides it enterprising to curry, salt, and pickle vp herrings, but marre them, because they want the right feate how to salt and season them. So I coulde plucke a crowe wyth Poet *Martiall* for calling it *putre halec*, the scauld rotten herring, but he meant that of the fat reasty Scottish herrings, which will endure no salt, and in one moneth (bestow what cost on them you wil) waxe ramish if they be kept, whereas our embarreld white herrings, flourishing with the stately brand of Yarmouth vpon them, *scilicet* the three halfe Lions and the three halfe fishes with the crowne ouer the head, last in long voyages, better than the redde herring, and not onely are famous at *Roan*, *Paris*, *Diepe*, *Cane* (whereof the first, which is *Roan*, serueth all the high countries of Fraunce with it, and *Diepe*, which is the last saue one, victualles all *Picardy* with it), but heere at home is made account of like a Marquesse, and receiued at court right solemnly: I care not much if I rehearse to you the maner, and that is thus.

Euery yeare about Lent tide, the sherifes of Norwich
K 4v bake certayne herring pies (foure and twenty, as | I take it) and send them as a homage to the Lorde of Caster hard by there, for lands that they hold of him; who presently vpō the like tenure, in bouncing hampers, couered ouer with his cloth of armes, sees them conueyed to the court in the

12 haue] *Qy. read* had *?* 21 flourishing them with *Gro.*

best equipage: at court when they are arriued, his man rudely enters not at first, but knocketh very ciuilly, and then officers come and fetch him in with torch light, where hauing disfraughted and vnloaded his luggage, to supper he sets him downe like a Lord, with his waxe lights before him, and hath his messe of meate allowed him with the largest, & his horses (*quatenus* horses) are prouendred as epicurely: after this, some foure marke fee towardes his charges is tendred him, and hee iogges home againe merrily.

A white pickled herring? why, it is meate for a Prince. *Haunce Vanderuecke* of Roterdame (as a dutch Post informed me) in bare pickled herring layd out twenty thousand pound the last fishing: hee had lost his drinking belike, and thought to store himselfe of medicines enow to recouer it.

Noble Cæsarean Charlemaine herring, *Plinie* and *Gesner* were too blame they sluberd thee ouer so negligently. I do not see why any man should enuy thee, since thou art none of these *lurcones* or *epulones*, glutõs or fleshpots of Egypt (as one that writes of the christians captiuity vnder the Turke enstileth vs English mẽ), nor liuest thou by the vnlyuing or euiscerating of others, as most fishes do, or by any extraordinary filth whatsoeuer, but, as the Cameleon liueth by the ayre, and the Salamander by the fire, so onely by the water arte thou nourished, and nought else, and must swim as wel dead as aliue.

Be of good cheere, my weary Readers, for I haue espied land, as *Diogenes* said to his weary Schollers whẽ | he had read to a waste leafe. Fishermen, I hope, wil not finde fault with me for fishing before the nette, or making all fish that comes to the net in this history, since, as the Athenians bragged they were the first that inuented wrastling, and one *Ericthonius* amongst them that he was the first that ioyned horses in collar couples for drawing, so

21 Christians *Gro.* 23 vnlyming *Gro.* 30 awaste *Q.*
33 bragged, they *Gro.* 34 wrastling: and *Q*, *Gro.*

I am the first that euer sette quill to paper in prayse of any fish or fisherman.

Not one of the Poets aforetime could giue you or the sea a good word: *Ouid* sayth, *Nimium ne credite ponto*, the sea is a slippery companion, take heed how you trust him: And further, *Periurij pœnas repetit ille locus*, it is a place like Hel, good for nothing but to punish periurers; with innumerable inuectiues more against it throughout in euery booke.

Plautus in his *Rudens* bringeth in fishermen cowthring and quaking, dung wet after a storme, and complaining their miserable case in this forme, *Captamus cibum è mari; si euentus non venit, neque quicquam captum est piscium, salsi lautiq; domum redimus clanculum, dormimus incœnati:* All the meate that we eate we catch out of the sea, and if there wee misse, wel washed and salted, wee sneake home to bed supperlesse: and vpon the taile of it hee brings in a parasite that flowteth and bourdeth them thus: *Heus vos familica gens hominum vt viuitis? vt peritis?* hough, you hungerstarued gubbins or offalles of men, how thriue you, howe perish you? and they, cringing in their neckes, like rattes smothered in the holde, poorely replicated, *Viuimus fame, speq;, sitiq;*, with hunger, and hope, and thirst wee content our selues. If you would not misconceit that I studiously intended your defamation, you shoulde haue thicke haileshot of these.

Not the lowsie riddle wherewith fishermen constrayned
L 1v (some say) *Homer*, some say another Philo-|sopher, to drowne hymselfe, because he could not expound it, but should be dressed and set before you *supernãculum*, with eight score more galliarde crosse-poynts, and kickshiwinshes of giddy eare-wig brains, were it not I thought you too fretfull and chollericke with feeding altogether on salt meates, to haue the secrets of your trade in publique displayed. Will this appease you, that you are the predecessors of the Apostles, who were poorer Fishermen than

14 *clanculum Q.* *incœnatum Q.* 19 *viuitis vt Q.*

you, that for your seeing wonders in the deepe, you may be the sonnes and heires of the Prophet Ionas, that you are all Caualiers and Gentlemen since the king of fishes vouchsafed you for his subiects, that for your selling smoake you may be courtiers, for your keeping of fasting dayes Friar Obseruants, and lastly, that, looke in what Towne there is the signe of the three mariners, the huffe-cappest drink in that house you shal be sure of alwayes?

No more can I do for you than I haue done, were you my god-children euery one: God make you his children and keepe you from the Dunkerks, and then I doubt not but when you are driuen into harbour by foule weather, the kannes shall walke to the health of *Nashes* Lenten-stuffe and the praise of the redde Herring, and euen those that attend vppon the pitch-kettle will bee druncke to my good fortunes and recommendums. One boone you must not refuse mee in, (if you be *boni socij* and sweete Oliuers,) that you let not your rustie swordes sleepe in their scabberds, but lash them out in my quarrell as hotely as if you were to cut cables or hew the main mast ouer boord, when you heare mee mangled and torne in mennes mouthes about this playing with a shettlecocke, or tossing empty bladders in the ayre.

Alas, poore hungerstarued Muse, wee shall haue | some L 2
spawne of a goose-quill or ouer worne pander quirking and girding, was it so hard driuen that it had nothing to feede vpon but a redde herring? another drudge of the pudding house (all whose lawfull meanes to liue by throughout the whole yeare will scarce purchase him a redde herring) sayes I might as well haue writte of a dogges turde (in his teeth surreuerence). But let none of these scumme of the subvrbs be too vineger tarte with mee; for if they bee, Ile take mine oath vppon a redde herring and eate it, to prooue that their fathers, their grandfathers, and their great grandfathers, or any other of their kinne, were

35 and theit *Q*.

scullions dishwash, & durty draffe and swil, set against a redde herring. The puissant red herring, the golden *Hesperides* red herring, the *Meonian* red herring, the red herring of red Herrings Hal, euery pregnant peculiar of whose resplendent laude and honour to delineate and adumbrate to the ample life were a woorke that would drinke drie foure-score and eighteene Castalian fountaines of eloquence, consume another *Athens* of facunditie, and abate the haughtiest poeticall fury twixt this and the burning Zone and the tropike of Cancer. My conceit is cast into a sweating sickenesse, with ascending these few steps of his renowne; into what a hote broyling saint Laurence feuer would it relapse then, should I spend the whole bagge of my winde in climbing vp to the lofty mountaine creast of his trophees? But no more winde will I spend on it but this: Saint Denis for Fraunce, Saint Iames for Spaine, Saint Patrike for Ireland, Saint George for England, and the red Herring for Yarmouth.

(***)

FINIS.

5 laude] *Harl.*[1 2], *Harl.*[3] *conj.*, *Hind.*, *Gro.*: laude *Q*, *Harl.*[3].

SVMMERS LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT

Entry in the Stationers' Register:

28 octobris [1600]

master burby
Walter burre — Entred for their copie vnder th[e] handes of master harsnet and the Wardens. A booke called Sommers last Will and testament presented by William Sommers.. vj[d]

(*S. R.*, ed. Arber, iii. 175.)

Editions: (1) *Early:*

1600. A PLEASANT | Comedie, called | Summers laſt will and | *Teſtament.* | Written by *Thomas Naſh.* | [device] | Imprinted at London by *Simon Stafford*, | for *Water Burre.* | 1600.

No colophon. Quarto. Not paged.

Collation: A[2], B–H[4] (*less* C 3, C 4), I[2]. A 1 wanting, probably blank. (A 2) Title, *v.* blank. B 'SVMMERS last will and Testament.' *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. Summers last will | and Testament.

Leaves C and C 2 are independent, that is, not of one piece of paper, in all copies seen, showing that the whole sheet was printed and that then the last two leaves were for some reason or other cancelled.

Signatures are in Roman, except those of E 4, H 1, of which the letters are Italic. Leaves F 2, F 3, F 4 are signed D 2, D 3, D 4. All fourth leaves are signed.

The following variations in title and signatures occur in the three copies at the British Museum (see under). Title: W*ater Burre* a: W*alter Burre* b, c. Leaf F 1 is signed F in a: D in b, c. Leaf B 3 is not signed in c.

Catch-words: B 1. scuruy C 1. doted D 1. To E 1. To F 1. take G 1. Yet H 1. *Beautie* I 1. The

Copy used: One in the British Museum (C. 34. d. 50), referred to as a. The other copies (162. d. 47) b, and (96. b. 17. (5.)) c, have also been occasionally consulted. Copy b was, a few months ago, rendered imperfect by the theft of leaves C 1, C 2, D 3 and I 1. I commend this observation to the notice of recent purchasers of a copy of the play.

(2) *Modern Editions:*

1825 (Coll.) A Select Collection of Old Plays. In twelve volumes. A New Edition: with Additional Notes and Corrections, by the late Isaac Reed, Octavius Gilchrist, and the Editor. London: Septimus Prowett. Vol. ix, pp. 1–80.

In modern spelling. Edited by J. P. Collier, who prefixed a short introduction dealing with the author. Notes, textual and explanatory, are given at the foot of the page. This is the first appearance of the play in Dodsley's Collection.

1874 (Hazl.) A Select Collection of Old English Plays... Fourth edition . . . revised and enlarged, with the notes of all the commentators, and new notes by W. Carew Hazlitt. . . . London: Reeves and Turner. Vol. viii, pp. 1–92.

In modern spelling. This is essentially a reprint of Collier's edition, with all his notes and some additional ones. The quarto seems to have been occasionally referred to[1], but most of Collier's deviations from it are allowed to remain.

1885 (Gro.) The Complete Works of Thomas Nashe . . . edited by A. B. Grosart. Vol. vi, pp. 81–170.

In old spelling. From a copy in the library of the Duke of Devonshire. In the arrangement as prose or verse Grosart's text is in general agreement with those of Collier and Mr. Hazlitt, and he also frequently follows them in italicizing quoted phrases and sometimes exclamations in the text which in the quarto are Roman[2]. He gives in footnotes most of the readings of the quarto which he rejects, as also a certain number of Collier's and Mr. Hazlitt's readings, as those of 'modern editors.' It may be observed that several readings so described are to be found in Mr. Hazlitt's text alone. The lines are numbered straight through, generally, but not always, omitting the stage-directions.

[1] See, at least, the foot-note to l. 1251. Mr. Hazlitt's 'each' may, however, be a guess. Cf. also l. 476, where 'sonne' is quoted from *Q*.

[2] No notice has been taken of this in the collation.

1904. (The present edition.)

From the copy in the British Museum as specified above. I have attempted to give all Grosart's readings and also all those of Mr. Hazlitt with the exception of a few which seemed to be certainly misprints [1]. Collier's text has been used to compare with Mr. Hazlitt's in order to make the collations complete, but readings occurring in his text alone are not necessarily given. Modernizations and slight changes, such as 'hundred' for 'hundreth,' 'burden' for 'burthen,' ''gainst' for 'gainst,' 'farthest' for 'furthest,' have been ignored, but I have thought it useful to give the readings of the modern-spelling editions in several cases in which there seemed a possible doubt as to what form the modernization would take. The punctuation of the original is very bad, and editors have varied considerably in their treatment of it. It has been of course impossible to record all the variants, but I believe that all of the least significance have been given.

In the prose speeches of certain characters, especially of Vertumnus and Will Summer, there occur a number of snatches of rime which in the quarto are printed as prose. When these are of any length it is evidently better to print them as verse, as is, I believe, the practice of all modern editors in similar cases, except, of course, when their text is intended as a type-facsimile. When, however, we have simply a couple of lines riming together, and when, as often occurs, these lines are of such unequal length or so dissimilar in rhythm that we can hardly suppose them to have been borrowed from even the roughest and most irregular of ballads or popular rimes, it is by no means easy to know how to treat them. After some hesitation I have followed earlier editors in printing the more metrical passages as verse, while, of course, noting in every instance the departure from the arrangement of the quarto. I would plead in justification the unpleasant effect of the occurrence, in what is apparently intended for prose, of rimes or of lines which are evidently metrical.

In the quarto some of the songs and a few stage-directions are printed in larger type than the body of the text. Of this no notice has been taken.

In numbering the lines it has been impossible to follow Grosart, as not only is his numbering far from regular, but the length of the lines in the prose speeches differs considerably in the two editions.

[1] It is not, of course, pretended that all the readings given from Collier or Mr. Hazlitt are to be regarded as intentional emendations on the part of these editors, for there are many which it appears quite impossible so to consider. It seemed, however, better to err on the side of making the collation too full than too scanty.

A PLEASANT Comedie, called Summers last will and *Teſtament.*

Written by *Thomas Naſh.*

Imprinted at London by *Simon Stafford*, for *Water Burre*, 1600.

DRAMATIS PERSONAE

WILL SUMMER.
SUMMER, AUTUMN, WINTER, VERTUMNUS, *with* Satyrs *and* Wood-nymphs.
VER, *with* his Train.
SOLSTITIUM, *with* Shepherds.
SOL, *with* a Noise of Musitians.
ORION, *with* Huntsmen.
HARVEST, *with* Reapers.
BACCHUS, *with* his Companions.
CHRISTMAS, BACKWINTER, *sons to* WINTER.
Boy with an Epilogue.

Morris dancers, *with* the Hobby-horse.
Three Clowns.
Three Maids.

DRAMATIS PERSONAE] *No list of characters in Q, Gro. Given in Coll., Hasl., which, however, omit the* Train of Ver, *the* Shepherds, *the* Musitians, *and the* Companions of Bacchus. *I have rearranged the list, placing the chief characters in the order of their entry and giving their attendants with them, instead of at the end as in Coll., Hasl.*

SVMMERS last will and Testament.

Enter Will Summers in his fooles coate but halfe on, comming out.

NOctem peccatis, & fraudibus obiice nubem. There is no such fine time to play the knaue in as the night. I am a Goose, or a Ghost at least; for what with turmoyle of getting my fooles apparell, and care of being perfit, I am sure I haue not yet supt to night. *Will Summers* Ghost I should be, come to present you with *Summers* last will and Testament. Be it so, if my cousin *Ned* will lend me his Chayne and his Fiddle. Other stately pac't *Prologues* vse to attire themselues within: I, that haue a toy in my head more then ordinary, and vse to goe without money, without garters, without girdle, without a hat-band, without poynts to my hose, without a knife to my dinner, and make so much vse of this word *without* in euery thing, will here dresse me without. *Dick Huntley* cryes, Begin, begin: and all the whole house, For shame, come away; when I had my things but now brought me out of the *Lawndry*. God forgiue me, I did not see my Lord before. Ile set a good face on it, as though what I had talkt idly all this while were my part. So it is, *boni viri*, that one foole presents another; and I, a foole by nature, and by arte, do speake to you in the person of the Idiot our Playmaker. He, like a Foppe & an Asse,

S.D. *Summers*] *Summer Coll., Hasl. In Q the name appears sometimes as 'Summers', at others as 'Summer': there being no means of determining which form the author intended to use I follow the spelling of Q in each particular instance. Collier printed 'Summer' throughout: Hazlitt has* Summer *in the text,* WILL SUM. *as speaker's name.* 7 *Summers . . .* Testament] "Summer's . . . Testament." *Hasl.* 11–2 without hat-band *Coll., Hasl.* 17 *Lawndry.*—[My Lord has entered]—God *Gro.* 19 part.—[Addresses the audience more formally]—So it is, *Gro.* 22 idiot of our *Coll., Hasl.*

must be making himselfe a publike laughing stock, & haue no thanke for his labor; where other *Magisterij*, whose inuention is farre more exquisite, are content to sit still and
B 1v doe nothing. Ile shewe you what a | scuruy *Prologue* he had made me, in an old vayne of similitudes: if you bee good fellowes, giue it the hearing, that you may iudge of him thereafter.

The Prologue.

AT a solemne feast of the *Triumuiri* in Rome, it was seene and obserued that the birds ceased to sing, & sate solitarie on the house tops, by reason of the sight of a paynted Serpẽt set openly to view. So fares it with vs nouices, that here betray our imperfections: we, afraid to looke on the imaginary serpent of Enuy, paynted in mens affections, haue ceased to tune any musike of mirth to your eares this tweluemonth, thinking that, as it is the nature of the serpent to hisse, so childhood and ignorance would play the goslings, contemning and condemning what they vnderstood not. Their censures we wey not, whose sences are not yet vnswadled. The little minutes will be continually striking, though no man regard them. Whelpes will barke before they can see, and striue to byte before they haue teeth. *Politianus* speaketh of a beast who, while hee is cut on the table, drinketh, and represents the motions & voyces of a liuing creature. Such like foolish beasts are we, who, whilest we are cut, mocked, & flowted at, in euery mans common talke, will notwithstanding proceed to shame our selues, to make sport. No man pleaseth all; we seeke to please one. *Didymus* wrote foure thousand bookes, or, as some say, six thousand, of the arte of *Grammar*. Our Authour hopes it may be as lawfull for him to write a thousand lines of as light a subiect. *Socrates* (whom the Oracle pronounced the

29 *No space above or below 'The Prologus' in Q.* 39 gosling *Coll., Hazl.* 40 vnderstand *Grv.* 51 of] on *Coll., Hazl.*

wisest man of Greece) sometimes daunced. *Scipio* and *Lelius* by the seaside played at peeble-stone. *Semel insaniuimus omnes.* Euery man cannot, with *Archimedes*, make a heauen of brasse; or dig gold out of the iron mynes of the lawe. Such odde trifles as Mathematicians experiments be, Artificiall flyes to hang in the ayre by themselues, daunsing balles, an egge-shell that shall clyme vp to the top of a speare, fiery breathing goares, *Poeta noster* professeth not to make. *Placeat sibi quisq; licebit.* What's a foole but his bable? Deepe reaching wits, heere is no deepe | streame for you to angle in. Moralizers, you that B 2 wrest a neuer meant meaning out of euery thing, applying all things to the present time, keepe your attention for the common Stage: for here are no quips in Characters for you to reade. Vayne glozers, gather what you will. Spite, spell backwards what thou canst. As the *Parthians* fight, flying away, so will wee prate and talke, but stand to nothing that we say.

How say you, my masters, doe you not laugh at him for a Coxcombe? Why, he hath made a *Prologue* longer then his Play: nay, 'tis no Play neyther, but a shewe. Ile be sworne, the Iigge of Rowlands God-sonne is a Gyant in comparison of it. What can be made of Summers last will & Testament? Such another thing as *Gyllian* of *Braynfords* will, where shee bequeathed a score of farts amongst her friends. Forsooth, because the plague raignes in most places in this latter end of summer, Summer must come in sicke: he must call his officers to account, yeeld his throne to Autumne, make Winter his Executour, with tittle tattle Tom boy: God giue you good night in Watling street. I care not what I say now, for I play no more then you

58 brasse, or *Q, Coll., Hasl.* 59 trifles, as *Q, Gro.* 59–60 experiments be artificial *Hasl.*: experiments, be Artificiall *Gro.* 62 goares] boares *Gro.*: goates *Gro. conj. Qy. read* gourdes? 70 backward *Coll., Hasl.* 70–2 As . . .] *Perhaps meant as verse.* 72 say.] *After this, Grosart adds* [END OF PROLOGUE.] *and leaves a space before continuing with* How say you. *No break except new par. in Q: slight space in Coll., Hasl.* 78–9 *Braynfords*] Brentford's *Hasl.* 84–5 Tom-boy. God . . . street; I *Coll., Hasl.*: Tom boy. God . . . street. I *Gro.* 85 what you say *Coll., Hasl.*

heare; & some of that you heard to (by your leaue) was extempore. He were as good haue let me had the best part; for Ile be reueng'd on him to the vttermost, in this person of *Will Summer*, which I haue put on to play the *Prologue*, and meane not to put off till the play be done. Ile sit as a *Chorus*, and flowte the *Actors* and him at the end of euery Sceane: I know they will not interrupt me, for feare of marring of all: but looke to your cues, my masters; for I intend to play the knaue in cue, and put you besides all your parts, if you take not the better heede. *Actors*, you Rogues, come away, cleare your throats, blowe your noses, and wype your mouthes ere you enter, that you may take no occasion to spit or to cough, when you are *non plus*. And this I barre, ouer and besides: That none of you stroake your beardes to make action, play with your cod-piece poynts, or stād fumbling on your buttons, when you know not how to bestow your fingers. Serue God, and act cleanly; a fit of mirth, and an old song first, if you will. |

B 2v *Enter Summer, leaning on Autumnes and Winters shoulders, and attended on with a trayne of Satyrs and wood-Nymphs, singing: Vertumnus also following him.*

Fayre Summer droops, droope men and beasts therefore:
So fayre a summer looke for neuer more.
All good things vanish, lesse then in a day,
Peace, plenty, pleasure, sodainely decay.
Goe not yet away, bright soule of the sad yeare;
The earth is hell when thou leau'st to appeare.

What, shall those flowres that deckt thy garland erst,
Vpon thy graue be wastfully disperst?

86 to[o] *Gro.* 90 put it off *Coll., Hasl.* 92 scene. I *Coll., Hasl.* 97 ere] *Coll., Hasl.*: e're *Q, Gro.* 104 S.D. *Vertumnus . . . him*] *added in Gro.*: *om. Q, Coll., Hasl., but Collier notes that Vertumnus enters at the same time.* 110–1 *No space between stanzas in Q.*

O trees, consume your sap in sorrowes sourse;
Streames, turne to teares your tributary course.
Goe not yet hence, bright soule of the sad yeare;
The earth is hell, when thou leau'st to appeare.

The Satyrs and wood-Nymphs goe out singing, and leaue Summer and Winter and Autumne, with Vertumnus, on the stage.

Will. Summer. A couple of pratty boyes, if they would wash their faces, and were well breecht an houre or two. The rest of the greene men haue reasonable voyces, good to sing catches, or the great *Iowben* by the fires side, in a winters euening. But let vs heare what Summer can say for himselfe, why hee should not be hist at.

Summer. What pleasure alway lasts? no ioy endures:
Summer I was, I am not as I was;
Haruest and age haue whit'ned my greene head:
On Autumne now and Winter must I leane.
Needs must he fall, whom none but foes vphold.
Thus must the happiest man haue his blacke day:
Omnibus vna manet nox, & calcanda semel via lethi.
This month haue I layne languishing a bed,
Looking eche houre to yeeld my life and throne;
And dyde I had in deed vnto the earth,
But that *Eliza*, Englands beauteous Queene,
On whom all seasons prosperously attend,
Forbad the execution of my fate, |
Vntill her ioyfull progresse was expir'd. B 3
For her doth Summer liue, and linger here,
And wisheth long to liue to her content:
But wishes are not had when they wish well.
I must depart, my death-day is set downe:
To these two must I leaue my wheaten crowne.

116 S.D. *with Vertumnus*] *added in Gro.*: *om. Q, Coll., Hasl.* 117 pretty *Hasl.* 118 breech'd in an *Coll., Hasl.* 123 always *Coll., Hasl.* 124 Summer I am *Coll., Hasl.* as] what *Coll., Hasl.* 126 must I] I must *Coll., Hasl.* 129 *lathi Q.* 139 well, *Coll.*: well: *Hasl.*: well; *Gro.*

So vnto vnthrifts rich men leaue their lands,
Who in an houre consume long labours gaynes.
True is it that diuinest Sidney sung,
O, he is mard, that is for others made.
Come neere, my friends, for I ám neere my end.
In presence of this Honourable trayne,
Who loue me (for I patronize their sports),
Meane I to make my finall Testament:
But first Ile call my officers to count,
And of the wealth I gaue them to dispose,
Known what is left, I may know what to giue.
Vertumnus then, that turnst the yere about,
Summon them one by one to answere me;
First, *Ver*, the spring, vnto whose custody
I haue committed more then to the rest:
The choyse of all my fragrant meades and flowres,
And what delights soe're nature affords.

Vertum. I will, my Lord. *Ver*, lusty *Ver*, by the name of lusty *Ver*, come into the court! lose a marke in issues.

Enter Ver *with his trayne, ouerlayd with suites of greene mosse, representing short grasse, singing.*

The Song.

Spring, the sweete spring, is the yeres pleasant King,
Then bloomes eche thing, then maydes daunce in a ring,
Cold doeth not sting, the pretty birds doe sing,
Cuckow, iugge, iugge, pu we, to witta woo.

The Palme and May make countrey houses gay,
Lambs friske and play, the Shepherds pype all day,
And we heare aye birds tune this merry lay,
Cuckow, iugge, iugge, pu we, to witta woo.

150 'count *Coll., Hasl., Gro.* 152 Know[n] *Gro.*: Know *Q, Coll., Hasl.* left, I] *Coll., Gro.*: left. I *Q.*: left I *Hasl.* giue.] *Coll.*: giue *Q, Hasl.*: giue.— *Gro.* 153 about,] *Coll., Hasl., Gro.*: about. *Q.* 160 court, lose *Q. Qy. read* court, or lose? 164, 168, 172 *pu—we* (*in each case*) *Hasl. to-wit, to-whoo* (*in each case*) *Hasl.* 164–5 *No space between the stanzas in Q.* 167 *we heare*] *hear we Coll., Hasl.*

The fields breathe sweete, the dayzies kisse our feete, B 3v
Young louers meete, old wiues a sunning sit;
In euery streete, these tunes our eares doe greete,
Cuckow, iugge, iugge, pu we, to witta woo.
Spring, the sweete spring.

Will Summer. By my troth, they haue voyces as cleare as Christall: this is a pratty thing, if it be for nothing but to goe a begging with.

Summer. Beleeue me, *Ver*, but thou art pleasant bent;
This humor should import a harmlesse minde:
Knowst thou the reason why I sent for thee?

Ver. No, faith, nor care not whether I do or no.
If you will daunce a Galliard, so it is: if not,
Falangtado, Falangtado, to weare the blacke and yellow:
Falangtado, Falãgtado, my mates are gone, Ile followe.

Summer. Nay, stay a while, we must confer and talke.
Ver, call to mind I am thy soueraigne Lord,
And what thou hast, of me thou hast and holdst.
Vnto no other end I sent for thee,
But to demaund a reckoning at thy hands,
How well or ill thou hast imployd my wealth.

Ver. If that be all, we will not disagree:
A cleane trencher and a napkin you shall haue presently.

Will Summer. The truth is, this fellow hath bin a tapster in his daies.

Ver goes in, and fetcheth out the Hobby horse & the morris daunce, who daunce about.

Summer. How now? is this the reckoning we shall haue?

Winter. My Lord, he doth abuse you: brooke it not.

Autumne. Summa totalis, I feare, will proue him but a foole.

Ver. About, about, liuely, put your horse to it, reyne

177 *Summers Q.* 182–3 Falangtado... followe.] *as two lines of verse, Gro.: as prose, Q: as four lines of verse, dividing before* to *and* my, *Coll., Hasl.*

him harder, ierke him with your wand, sit fast, sit fast, man; foole, hold vp your bable there.

Will Summer. O braue hall! O, well sayd, butcher. Now for the credit of Wostershire. The finest set of Morris-dauncers that is betweene this and Stretham: mary, me
B4 thinks there is | one of them daũceth like a Clothyers horse, with a wool-pack on his backe. You, friend with the Hobby-horse, goe not too fast, for feare of wearing out my Lords tyle-stones with your hob-nayles.

Ver. So, so, so; trot the ring twise ouer, and away. May it please my Lord, this is the grand capitall summe; but there are certayne parcels behind, as you shall see.

Summer. Nay, nay, no more; for this is all too much.

Ver. Content your selfe, we'le haue variety.

Here enter 3. *Clownes, &* 3. *maids, singing this song, daunsing.*

Trip and goe, heaue and hoe,
Vp and downe, to and fro,
From the towne to the groue,
Two and two let vs roue
A Maying, a playing:
Loue hath no gainsaying:
So merrily trip and goe.

Will Summer. Beshrew my heart, of a number of ill legs I neuer sawe worse daunsers: how blest are you, that the wenches of the parish doe not see you!

Summer. Presumptuous *Ver*, vnciuill nurturde boy,
Think'st I will be derided thus of thee?
Is this th' account and reckoning that thou mak'st?

Ver. Troth, my Lord, to tell you playne, I can giue you no other account: *nam quæ habui, perdidi;* what I had, I haue spent on good fellowes; in these sports you haue seene, which are proper to the Spring, and others of like sort (as

199 bable] *Gro.*: ladle *Q, Coll., Hasl.* 200 Hall *Hasl.* *Qy. read this and* Butcher? 226–7 I spent *Hasl.*

giuing wenches greene gownes, making garlands for Fencers, and tricking vp children gay) haue I bestowde all my flowry treasure, and flowre of my youth.

Will Summer. A small matter. I knowe one spent, in lesse then a yere, eyght and fifty pounds in mustard, and an other that ranne in det, in the space of foure or fiue yeere, aboue foureteene thousand pound in lute strings and gray paper.

Summer. O monstrous vnthrift, who e're heard the like? The seas vast throate, in so short tract of time, | Deuoureth nor consumeth halfe so much. B 4

How well mightst thou haue liu'd within thy bounds!

Ver. What talke you to me of liuing within my bounds? I tell you, none but Asses liue within their bounds: the silly beasts, if they be put in a pasture that is eaten bare to the very earth, & where there is nothing to be had but thistles, will rather fall soberly to those thistles, and be hungerstaru'd, then they will offer to breake their bounds; whereas the lusty courser, if he be in a barrayne plot, and spye better grasse in some pasture neere adioyning, breakes ouer hedge and ditch, and to goe, e'er he will be pent in, and not haue his belly full. Peraduenture the horses lately sworne to be stolne carried that youthfull mind, who, if they had bene Asses, would haue bene yet extant.

Will Summers. Thus we may see, the longer we liue, the more wee shall learne: I ne're thought honestie an asse, till this day.

Ver. This world is transitory; it was made of nothing, and it must to nothing: wherefore, if wee will doe the will of our high Creatour (whose will it is, that it passe to nothing), wee must helpe to consume it to nothing. Gold is more vile then men: Men dye in thousands, and ten thousands, yea, many times in hundreth thousands, in one battaile. If then the best husband bee so liberall of his best handyworke, to what ende should we make much of a glittering excrement, or doubt to spend at a banket as

250 bellyful *Coll., Hasl.* 262 bee] has been *Coll., Hasl.*

many pounds as he spends men at a battaile? Me thinkes I honour *Geta*, the Romane Emperour, for a braue minded fellow: for he commaunded a banket to bee made him of all meats vnder the Sunne; which were serued in after the order of the Alphabet; and the Clarke of the kitchin, following the last dish (which was two mile off from the formost), brought him an Index of their seuerall names: Neyther did he pingle when it was set on the boord, but for the space of three dayes and three nights neuer rose from the Table.

Will Summers. O intolerable lying villayne, that was neuer begotten without the consent of a whetstone! |

C 1 *Summer.* Vngratious man, how fondly he argueth!

Ver. Tell me, I pray, wherefore was gold layd vnder our feete in the veynes of the earth, but that wee should contemne it, and treade vpon it, and so consequently treade thrift vnder our feete? It was not knowne till the Iron age, *donec facinus inuasit mortales*, as the Poet sayes; and the Scythians alwayes detested it. I will proue it, that an vnthrift, of any, comes neerest a happy man, in so much as he comes neerest to beggery. Cicero saith, *summum bonum* consistes in *omnium rerum vacatione*, that it is the chiefest felicitie that may be, to rest from all labours. Now, who doeth so much *vacare à rebus*? who rests so much? who hath so little to doe, as the begger?

Who can sing so merry a note,
As he that cannot change a groate?

Cui nil est, nil deest: hee that hath nothing, wants nothing. On the other side, it is said of the Carle, *Omnia habeo, nec quicquam habeo:* I haue all things, yet want euery thing. *Multi mihi vitio vertunt, quia egeo*, saith Marcus Cato in Aulus Gellius, *at ego illis, quia nequeunt egere:* Many vpbrayde me, sayth he, because I am poore: but I vp-

270 miles *Coll., Hasl.* 286 *vacatione*, that is, the *Coll., Hasl.* 287 be to *Coll., Hasl.* 290–1 Who . . . groate?] *as verse, Gro.*: *as prose, Q, Coll., Hasl.* 291 as *Q.* 295 *Multa Gro., noting Multi as a misprint.*

brayd them, because they cannot liue if they were poore. It is a common prouerbe, *Diuesq; miserq;*, a rich man, and a miserable: *nam natura paucis cõtenta*, none so contented as the poore man. Admit that the chiefest happines were not rest or ease, but knowledge, as Herillus, Alcidamas, & many of Socrates followers affirme; why, *paupertas omnes perdocet artes*, pouerty instructs a man in all arts, it makes a man hardy and venturous; and therefore it is called of the Poets, *Paupertas audax*, valiant pouerty. It is not so much subiect to inordinate desires as wealth or prosperity. *Non habet vnde suum paupertas pascat amorem:* pouerty hath not wherewithall to feede lust. All the Poets were beggers: all Alcumists and all Philosophers are beggers: *Omnia mea mecum porto*, quoth Bias, when he had nothing but bread and cheese in a letherne bagge, and two or three bookes in his bosome. Saint Frauncis, a holy Saint, & neuer had any money. It is madnes to dote vpon mucke. That young man of Athens (Aelianus makes mention of) may be an example to vs, who | doted so extremely on the image of Fortune C 1v that, when hee might not inioy it, he dyed for sorrow. The earth yelds all her fruites together, and why should not we spend them together? I thanke heauens on my knees, that haue made mee an vnthrift.

Summer. O vanitie it selfe! O wit ill spent!
So studie thousands not to mend their liues,
But to maintayne the sinne they most affect,
To be hels aduocates gainst their owne soules.
Ver, since thou giu'st such prayse to beggery,
And hast defended it so valiantly,
This be thy penance; Thou shalt ne're appeare,
Or come abroad, but Lent shall wayte on thee:
His scarsity may counteruayle thy waste.
Ryot may flourish, but findes want at last.

298 were] be *Coll., Hasl.* 303 Alcidamus *Coll., Hasl.* 320 not we] we not *Hasl.* 325 against *Q*: 'gainst *Coll., Hasl., Gro.*

Take him away, that knoweth no good way,
And leade him the next way to woe and want. *Exit Ver.*
Thus in the paths of knowledge many stray,
And from the meanes of life fetch their decay.

Will Summer. Heigh ho. Here is a coyle in deede to bring beggers to stockes. I promise you truely, I was almost asleep; I thought I had bene at a Sermon. Well, for this one nights exhortation, I vow (by Gods grace) neuer to be good husband while I liue. But what is this to the purpose? *Hur come to Powl* (as the Welshman sayes) *and hur pay an halfepenny for hur seat, and hur heare the Preacher talge, and a talge very well, by gis; but yet a cannot make hur laugh: goe æ Theater, and heare a Queenes Fice, and he make hur laugh, and laugh hur belly-full.* So we come hither to laugh and be merry, and we heare a filthy beggerly Oration in the prayse of beggery. It is a beggerly Poet that writ it: and that makes him so much commend it, because hee knowes not how to mend himselfe. Well, rather then he shall haue no imployment but licke dishes, I will set him a worke my selfe, to write in prayse of the arte of stouping, and howe there was neuer any famous Thresher, Porter, Brewer, Pioner, or Carpenter,
C 2 that had streight backe. Repayre to my | chamber, poore fellow, when the play is done, and thou shalt see what I will say to thee.

Summer. *Vertumnus*, call *Solstitium.*

Vertum. *Solstitium*, come into the court.

[*Without.*] Peace there below! make roome for master *Solstitium.*

Enter Solstitium like an aged Hermit, carrying a payre of ballances, with an houre-glasse in eyther of them; one houre-glasse white, the other blacke: he is brought in by a number of shepherds, playing vpon Recorders.

343 *and hur talg Coll., Hasl.* 344 æ] *to a Coll., Hasl., Gro.*: *Qy. read tæ?* 352 was neuer] never was *Coll., Hasl.* 358–9 court without: peace *Q*: court: without, peace *Coll., Hasl.*: court:—without, peace *Gro.* (*All as part of Vertumnus' speech. Against my reading cf. ll.* 634, 967.)

Solstitium. All hayle to Summer, my dread soueraigne Lord.

Summer. Welcome, *Solstitium*; thou art one of them,
To whose good husbandry we haue referr'd
Part of those small reuenues that we haue.
What hast thou gaynd vs? what hast thou brought in?

Solstitium. Alas, my Lord, what gaue you me to keepe,
But a fewe dayes eyes in my prime of youth?
And those I haue conuerted to white hayres:
I neuer lou'd ambitiously to clyme,
Or thrust my hand too farre into the fire.
To be in heauen, sure, is a blessed thing;
But, Atlas-like, to proppe heauen on ones backe
Cannot but be more labour then delight.
Such is the state of men in honour plac'd;
They are gold vessels made for seruile vses,
High trees that keepe the weather from low houses,
But cannot sheild the tempest from themselues.
I loue to dwell betwixt the hilles and dales;
Neyther to be so great to be enuide,
Nor yet so poore the world should pitie me.
Inter vtrumq; tene, medio tutissimus ibis.

Summer. What doest thou with those ballances thou bearst?

Solstitium. In them I weigh the day and night alike.
This white glasse is the houre-glasse of the day,
This blacke one the iust measure of the night;
One more then other holdeth not a grayne: |
Both serue times iust proportion to mayntayne. C 2v

Summer. I like thy moderation wondrous well;
And this thy ballance, wayghing the white glasse
And blacke with equall poyze and stedfast hand,
A patterne is to Princes and great men,
How to weigh all estates indifferently,

367 day's-eyes *Coll., Hasl.* 389 balance weighing, the *Coll., Gro.*: balance-weighing, the *Hasl.*

The Spiritualty and Temporalty alike:
Neyther to be too prodigall of smyles,
Nor too seuere in frowning without cause.
If you be wise, you Monarchs of the earth,
Haue two such glasses still before your eyes;
Thinke as you haue a white glasse running on,
Good dayes, friends fauor, and all things at beck,
So, this white glasse runne out (as out it will),
The blacke comes next; your downfall is at hand:
Take this of me, for somewhat I haue tryde;
A mighty ebbe followes a mighty tyde.
But say, *Solstitium*, hadst thou nought besides?
Nought but dayes eyes and faire looks gaue I thee?
Solstitium. Nothing, my Lord, nor ought more did I aske.
Summer. But hadst thou alwayes kept thee in my sight,
Thy good deserts, though silent, would haue askt.
Solst. Deserts, my Lord, of ancient seruitours
Are like old sores, which may not be ript vp:
Such vse these times haue got, that none must beg,
But those that haue young limmes to lauish fast.
Summer. I grieue no more regard was had of thee:
A little sooner hadst thou spoke to me,
Thou hadst bene heard, but now the time is past:
Death wayteth at the dore for thee and me;
Let vs goe measure out our beds in clay:
Nought but good deedes hence shall we beare away.
Be, as thou wert, best steward of my howres,
And so returne vnto thy countrey bowres.

Here Solstitium goes out with his musike, as he comes in.

D 1 *Will Summer.* Fye, fye, of honesty, fye: Solstitium is an asse, perdy; this play is a gally-maufrey: fetch mee some drinke, some body. What cheere, what cheere, my hearts? are not you thirsty with listening to this dry sport?

399 friends, favour *Coll., Hasl.* 405 day's-eyes *Coll., Hasl.* 420 vnto] into *Coll., Hasl.* 421 fye of *Q.*

What haue we to doe with scales and hower-glasses, except we were Bakers or Clock-keepers? I cannot tell how other men are addicted, but it is against my profession to vse any scales but such as we play at with a boule, or keepe any howers but dinner or supper. It is a pedanticall thing to respect times and seasons: if a man be drinking with good fellowes late, he must come home, for feare the gates be shut: when I am in my warme bed, I must rise to prayers, because the bell rings. I like no such foolish customes. Actors, bring now a black Iack, and a rundlet of Renish wine, disputing of the antiquity of red noses; let the prodigall childe come out in his dublet and hose all greasy, his shirt hanging forth, and ne're a penny in his purse, and talke what a fine thing it is to walke summerly, or sit whistling vnder a hedge and keepe hogges. Go forward in grace and vertue to proceed; but let vs haue no more of these graue matters.

Summer. *Vertumnus*, will *Sol* come before vs?

Vertumnus. *Sol, Sol, vt, re, me, fa, sol,*
Come to church while the bell toll.

Enter Sol, verie richly attir'de, with a noyse of Musicians before him.

Summer. I, marrie, here comes maiestie in pompe,
Resplendent Sol, chiefe planet of the heauens:
He is our seruant, lookes he ne're so big.

Sol. My liege, what crau'st thou at thy vassals hands?

Summer. Hypocrisie, how it can change his shape!
How base is pride from his owne dunghill put!
How I haue rais'd thee, Sol, I list not tell,
Out of the Ocean of aduersitie,
To sit in height of honors glorious heauen,
To be the eye-sore of aspiring eyes; |
To giue the day her life from thy bright lookes, D1v
And let nought thriue vpon the face of earth,

434 of of Renish *Q.* 436 out] in *Coll., Hasl.* 441 vs. *Q.* 442–3 *Sol* ... toll.] *as verse, Coll., Hasl., Gro.*: *as prose, Q.* 442 Sol, sol; *ut, re, me, fa, sol! Coll.*: Sol, Sol; *ut, re, mi, fa, sol! Hasl.*: *Sol, sol*; vt, re, mi, fa, sol, *Gro.* 443 come *Q.* S.D. *Sol*] SOLSTITIUM *Hasl.*

From which thou shalt withdraw thy powerful smiles.
What hast thou done deseruing such hie grace?
What industrie, or meritorious toyle,
Canst thou produce, to proue my gift well plac'de?
Some seruice or some profit I expect:
None is promoted but for some respect.
Sol. My Lord, what needs these termes betwixt vs two?
Vpbraiding ill beseemes your bounteous mind:
I do you honour for aduancing me.
Why, t'is a credit for your excellence,
To haue so great a subiect as I am:
This is your glorie and magnificence,
That, without stouping of your mightinesse,
Or taking any whit from your high state,
You can make one as mightie as your selfe.
Autumne. O arrogance exceeding all beliefe!
Summer my Lord, this sawcie vpstart Iacke,
That now doth rule the chariot of the Sunne,
And makes all starres deriue their light from him,
Is a most base insinuating slaue,
The sonne of parsimony and disdaine,
One that will shine on friends and foes alike,
That vnder brightest smiles hideth blacke showers,
Whose enuious breath doth dry vp springs and lakes,
And burnes the grasse, that beastes can get no foode.
Winter. No dunghill hath so vilde an excrement,
But with his beames hee will forthwith exhale:
The fennes and quag-myres tithe to him their filth:
Foorth purest mines he suckes a gainefull drosse:
Greene Iuy-bushes at the Vintners doores
He withers, and deuoureth all their sap.
Autumne. Lasciuious and intemperate he is.
The wrong of *Daphne* is a well knowne tale:
Eche euening he descends to *Thetis* lap,
D 2 The while men thinke he bathes him in the sea.

462 need *Coll., Hasl.* 476 sonne] son *Coll.*: sum *Hasl.* (*doubtfully*).
481 vile *Coll., Hasl.* 482 forthwith] thenceforth *Coll., Hasl.*

O, but when he returneth whence he came
Downe to the West, then dawnes his deity,
Then doubled is the swelling of his lookes;
He ouerloades his carre with Orient gemmes,
And reynes his fiery horses with rich pearle:
He termes himselfe the god of Poetry,
And setteth wanton songs vnto the Lute.
Winter. Let him not talke; for he hath words at will,
And wit to make the baddest matter good.
Summer. Bad words, bad wit: oh, where dwels faith or truth?
Ill vsury my fauours reape from thee,
Vsurping *Sol*, the hate of heauen and earth.
Sol. If Enuy vnconfuted may accuse,
Then Innocence must vncondemned dye.
The name of Martyrdome offence hath gaynd,
When fury stopt a froward Iudges eares.
Much Ile not say (much speech much folly shewes),
What I haue done, you gaue me leaue to doe.
The excrements you bred, whereon I feede,
To rid the earth of their contagious fumes:
With such grosse carriage did I loade my beames:
I burnt no grasse, I dried no springs and lakes,
I suckt no mines, I withered no greene boughes,
But when, to ripen haruest, I was forc'st
To make my rayes more feruent then I wont.
For *Daphnes* wrongs, and scapes in *Thetis* lap,
All Gods are subiect to the like mishap.
Starres daily fall (t'is vse is all in all)
And men account the fall but natures course:
Vaunting my iewels, hasting to the West,
Or rising early from the gray ei'de morne,
What do I vaunt but your large bountihood,
And shew how liberall a Lord I serue?

491 came, *Q.* 499 baddest] baldest *Hasl.* 509 feed; *Coll., Hasl.*: feede *Gro.* 510 fumes, *Coll., Hasl.*: fumes; *Q.* 511 beames, *Q*: beam *Coll., Hasl.* 512 lakes: *Q*: lakes; *Coll., Hasl.* 513 boughes. *Q.* 515 wont, *Q.*

Musique and poetrie, my two last crimes,
Are those two exercises of delight, |
D 2v Wherewith long labours I doe weary out.
The dying Swanne is not forbid to sing.
The waues of *Heber* playd on *Orpheus* strings,
When he (sweete musiques *Trophe*) was destroyd.
And as for Poetry, woods eloquence,
(Dead *Phaetons* three sisters funerall teares
That by the gods were to *Electrum* turnd,)
Not flint, or rockes of Icy cynders fram'd,
Deny the sourse of siluer-falling streames.
Enuy enuieth not outcryes vnrest:
In vaine I pleade; well is to me a fault,
And these my words seeme the slyght webbe of arte,
And not to haue the taste of sounder truth.
Let none but fooles be car'd for of the wise;
Knowledge owne children knowledge most despise.
Sũmer. Thou know'st too much to know to keepe the meane.
He that sees all things oft sees not himselfe.
The *Thames* is witnesse of thy tyranny,
Whose waues thou hast exhaust for winter showres.
The naked channell playnes her of thy spite,
That laid'st her intrailes vnto open sight.
Vnprofitably borne to man and beast,
Which like to *Nilus* yet doth hide his head,
Some few yeares since thou let'st o'reflow these walks,
And in the horse-race headlong ran at race,
While in a cloude thou hid'st thy burning face:
Where was thy care to rid contagious filth,
When some men wetshod (with his waters) droupt?

528 Hebrus *Hasl.* 530 woods] words' *Hasl., Coll., Gro.* 533 flint, or rock, of *Coll.*: flint or rock, of *Hasl.* flam'd *Hasl.* 534 sourse] force *Coll. conj., Hasl.* 535 enuieth not] enjoyeth *Hasl.* outcryes] poetry's *Hasl.*: poetryes *Gro.* 536 pleade, well, is *Q.* 537 sleight *Hasl.* 540 Knowledge' *Coll., Hasl.*: Knowledge['s] *Gro.* 544 hast] dost *Coll., Hasl.* 546 sight: *Gro.* 547 borne *Coll., Hasl.* 548 head. *Gro.* 551 hidd'st *Hasl.* face. *Coll., Hasl., Gro.*

Others that ate the Eeles his heate cast vp
Sickned and dyde, by them impoysoned.
Sleep'st thou, or keep'st thou then *Admetus* sheepe,
Thou driu'st not back these flowings to the deepe?
Sol. The winds, not I, haue floods & tydes in chase:
Diana, whom our fables call the moone,
Only commaundeth o're the raging mayne;
Shee leads his wallowing ofspring vp and downe; |
Shee wayning, all streames ebbe; in the yeare D 3
Shee was eclipst, when that the *Thames* was bare.
Summer. A bare coniecture, builded on perhaps:
In laying thus the blame vpon the moone,
Thou imitat'st subtill *Pithagoras*,
Who, what he would the people should beleeue,
The same he wrote with blood vpon a glasse,
And turnd it opposite gainst the new moone;
Whose beames, reflecting on it with full force,
Shewd all those lynes, to them that stood behinde,
Most playnly writ in circle of the moone;
And then he said, Not I, but the new moone,
Faire *Cynthia*, perswades you this and that.
With like collusion shalt thou not blind mee:
But for abusing both the moone and mee,
Long shalt thou be eclipsed by the moone,
And long in darknesse liue, and see no light.
Away with him, his doome hath no reuerse.
Sol. What is eclipst will one day shine againe:
Though winter frownes, the Spring wil ease my paine.
Time from the brow doth wipe out euery stayne.
Exit Sol.
Will Summer. I thinke the Sunne is not so long in passing through the twelue signes, as the sonne of a foole hath bin disputing here about had I wist. Out of

556 Slept'st or *Coll.*: Sleptest, or *Hasl.* kept'st *Coll., Hasl.* 557 drov'st *Coll., Hasl.* to] of *Coll., Hasl.* 562 ebbe in the *Q*: ebb: in the *Coll., Hasl.*: ebbe; in [most] the *Gro. Qy. read* ebbe, as in the *?* yeare: *Q*: year, *Coll.* 564 per-haps *Hasl.* 574 that; *Q.*

doubt, the Poet is bribde of some that haue a messe of creame to eate, before my Lord goe to bed yet, to hold him halfe the night with riffe raffe of the rumming of Elanor. If I can tell what it meanes, pray god I may neuer get breakefast more, when I am hungry. Troth, I am of opinion he is one of those *Hieroglificall* writers, that, by the figures of beasts, planets, and of stones, expresse the mind, as we doe in A. B. C.; or one that writes vnder hayre, as I haue heard of a certaine Notary *Histiæus*, who, following *Darius* in the Persian warres, and desirous to disclose some secrets of import to his friend *Aristagoras*, that dwelt afarre off, found out this meanes: He had
D 3v a seruant that had bene | long sicke of a payne in his eyes, whom, vnder pretence of curing his maladie, he shau'd from one side of his head to the other, and with a soft pensill wrote vpon his scalpe (as on parchment) the discourse of his busines, the fellow all the while imagining his master had done nothing but noynt his head with a feather. After this, hee kept him secretly in his tent, till his hayre was somewhat growne, and then wil'd him to go to *Aristagoras* into the countrey, and bid him shaue him, as he had done, and he should haue perfit remedie. He did so; *Aristagoras* shau'd him with his owne hands, read his friends letter, and when hee had done, washt it out, that no man should perceyue it else, and sent him home to buy him a night-cap. If I wist there were any such knauery, or Peter Bales *Brachigraphy*, vnder *Sols* bushy hayre, I would haue a Barber, my hoste of the Murrions head, to be his Interpretour, who would whet his rasor on his Richmond cap, and giue him the terrible cut, like himselfe, but he would come as neere as a quart pot to the construction of it. To be sententious, not superfluous, *Sol* should haue bene beholding to the Barbour, and not the beard-master. Is it pride that is shadowed vnder this

Imberbi Apollo, a beardles Poet.

588 riffe, raffe, of *Q*: raff-raff of *Hasl.* 592 planets] plants *Coll., Hasl.*
594 *Histiæus*] *Coll., Hasl., Gro.*: *Histions Q.* 607 haue a perfit *Gro.*
618–9 not to the *Coll., Hasl.*

two-leg'd Sunne, that neuer came neerer heauen then *Dubbers* hill? That pride is not my sinne, *Slouens Hall*, where I was borne, be my record. As for couetousnes, intemperance, and exaction, I meet with nothing in a whole yeare but a cup of wine, for such vices to bee conuersant in. *Pergite porro*, my good children, and multiply the sinnes of your absurdities, till you come to the full measure of the grand hisse, and you shall heare how we will purge rewme with censuring your imperfections.

Summer. *Vertumnus*, call *Orion.*

Vertum. *Orion, Vrion, Arion;*
My Lord thou must looke vpon:
Orion, gentleman dogge-keeper, huntsman, come into the court: looke you bring all hounds, and no bandogges. Peace there, that we may heare their hornes blow.

Enter Orion like a hunter, with a horne about his necke, all his men after the same sort hallowing and blowing their hornes.

Orion. Sirra, wast thou that cal'd vs from our game? D4
How durst thou (being but a pettie God)
Disturbe me in the entrance of my sports?

Summer. 'Twas I, *Orion*, caus'd thee to be calde.

Orion. 'Tis I, dread Lord, that humbly will obey.

Summer. How haps't thou leftst the heauens, to hunt below?
As I remember, thou wert *Hireus* sonne,
Whom of a huntsman Ioue chose for a starre,
And thou art calde the Dog-starre, art thou not?

Autumne. Pleaseth your honor, heauens circumference
Is not ynough for him to hunt and range,
But with those venome-breathed curres he leads,
He comes to chase health from our earthly bounds:
Each one of those foule-mouthed mangy dogs

627 will] shall *Hasl.* 630–1 *Orion* ... vpon:] *as verse, Coll., Hasl., Gro.*: *as prose, Q.* 631 my *Q.* 635 was't *Coll., Hasl.* 641 Hyreus' *Coll.*: Hyrieus' *Hasl.*: *Hyr*[*i*]*eus Gro.* 644 Pleaseth] Please it *Coll., Hasl.*

Gouernes a day, (no dog but hath his day,)
And all the daies by them so gouerned,
The Dog-daies hight; infectious fosterers
Of meteors from carrion that arise,
And putrified bodies of dead men,
Are they ingendred to that ougly shape,
Being nought els but preseru'd corruption.
T'is these that, in the entrance of their raigne,
The plague and dangerous agues haue brought in.
They arre and barke at night against the Moone,
For fetching in fresh tides to cleanse the streetes.
They vomit flames, and blast the ripened fruites:
They are deathes messengers vnto all those
That sicken while their malice beareth sway.
Orion. A tedious discourse, built on no ground;
A sillie fancie, *Autumne*, hast thou told,
Which no Philosophie doth warrantize,
No old receiued poetrie confirmes.
I will not grace thee by confuting thee;
Yet in a iest (since thou railest so gainst dogs)
Ile speake a word or two in their defence:
That creature's best that comes most neere to men; |
D 4v That dogs of all come neerest, thus I proue:
First, they excell vs in all outward sence,
Which no one of experience will deny;
They heare, they smell, they see better then we.
To come to speech, they haue it questionlesse,
Although we vnderstand them not so well:
They barke as good old Saxon as may be,
And that in more varietie then we:
For they haue one voice when they are in chase,
Another, when they wrangle for their meate,
Another, when we beate them out of dores.
That they haue reason, this I will alleadge,

651–2 *Qv. read* hight, infections fosterers; Of? *Hasl.* 655 but [ill-]preserv'd 664 hast thou] thou hast *Gro.* 667 confuting] refuting *Coll., Hasl.* 668 rail'st *Coll., Hasl.* 670 men. *Q.* 674 we, *Q.*

They choose those things that are most fit for them,
And shunne the contrarie all that they may;
They know what is for their owne diet best,
And seeke about for't very carefully;
At sight of any whip they runne away,
As runs a thiefe from noise of hue and crie:
Nor liue they on the sweat of others browes,
But haue their trades to get their liuing with,
Hunting and conie-catching, two fine artes:
Yea, there be of them, as there be of men,
Of euerie occupation more or lesse:
Some cariers, and they fetch: some watermen,
And they will diue and swimme when you bid them:
Some butchers, and they worrie sheep by night:
Some cookes, and they do nothing but turne spits.
Chrisippus holds dogs are Logicians,
In that, by studie and by canuasing,
They can distinguish twixt three seuerall things:
As when he commeth where three broad waies meet,
And of those three hath staid at two of them,
By which he gesseth that the game went not,
Without more pause he runneth on the third;
Which, as *Chrisippus* saith, insinuates
As if he reason'd thus within himselfe: |
Eyther he went this, that, or yonder way, E 1
But neyther that, nor yonder, therefore this.
But whether they Logicians be or no,
Cinicks they are, for they will snarle and bite;
Right courtiers to flatter and to fawne;
Valiant to set vpon the enemies,
Most faithfull and most constant to their friends;
Nay, they are wise, as *Homer* witnesseth,
Who, talking of *Vlisses* comming home,
Saith all his houshold but *Argus*, his Dogge,
Had quite forgot him; I, and his deepe insight,

686 carefully. *Q.* 712 the] the[ir] *Hasl., Gro.* 717 and] *om. Hasl., Gro.*

Nor *Pallas* Art in altering of his shape,
Nor his base weeds, nor absence twenty yeares,
Could go beyond, or any way delude.
That Dogges Phisicians are, thus I inferre;
They are ne're sicke, but they know their disease,
And finde out meanes to ease them of their griefe;
Speciall good Surgions to cure dangerous wounds;
For strucken with a stake into the flesh,
This policie they vse to get it out:
They traile one of their feet vpon the ground,
And gnaw the flesh about, where the wound is,
Till it be cleane drawne out: and then, because
Vlcers and sores kept fowle are hardly cur'de,
They licke and purifie it with their tongue:
And well obserue Hipocrates old rule,
The onely medicine for the foote is rest,
For if they haue the least hurt in their feet,
They beare them vp, and looke they be not stird:
When humours rise, they eate a soueraigne herbe,
Whereby what cloyes their stomacks they cast vp;
And as some writers of experience tell,
They were the first inuented vomitting.
Sham'st thou not, *Autumne*, vnaduisedly
To slander such rare creatures as they be?
Summer. We cal'd thee not, *Orion*, to this end, |
E 1v To tell a storie of dogs qualities.
With all thy hunting how are we inricht?
What tribute payest thou vs for thy high place?
Orion. What tribute should I pay you out of nought?
Hunters doe hunt for pleasure, not for gaine.
While Dog-dayes last the haruest safely thriues:
The sunne burnes hot, to finish vp fruits grouth:
There is no bloud-letting to make men weake:
Physicians with their *Cataposia*,

718 of] *om. Coll., Hasl.* 725 stricken *Coll., Hasl.* 728 about where *Q, Coll., Hasl.* 731 tongue, *Q, Coll., Hasl., Gro.* 733 *rest: Q, Coll., Hasl.* 745 pay'st *Coll., Hasl.* 751 with] in *Coll., Hasl.*

r. tittle *Elinctoria*
Masticatorum and *Cataplasmata*;
Their Gargarismes, Clisters, and pitcht clothes,
Their perfumes, sirrups, and their triacles,
Refraine to poyson the sicke patients,
And dare not minister till I be out.
Then none will bathe, and so are fewer drownd:
All lust is perilsome, therefore lesse vs'de.
In briefe, the yeare without me cannot stand:
Summer, I am thy staffe and thy right hand.
Summer. A broken staffe, a lame right hand I had,
If thou wert all the stay that held me vp.
Nihil violentum perpetuum,
No violence that liueth to olde age.
Ill-gouern'd starre, that neuer boad'st good lucke,
I banish thee a twelue-month and a day,
Forth of my presence; come not in my sight,
Nor shewe thy head, so much as in the night.
Orion. I am content, though hunting be not out,
We will goe hunt in hell for better hap.
One parting blowe, my hearts, vnto our friends,
To bid the fields and huntsmen all farewell:
Tosse vp your bugle hornes vnto the starres.
Toyle findeth ease, peace followes after warres.
Exit. |

Here they goe out, blowing their hornes, and hallowing, as they came in. E 2

Will Summer. Faith, this Sceane of *Orion* is right *prandium caninum*, a dogs dinner, which as it is without wine, so here 's a coyle about dogges without wit. If I had thought the ship of fooles would haue stayde to take in fresh water at the Ile of dogges, I would haue furnisht it with a

752 r. tittle] r. little *Coll.*: Or little *Hazl.*: [And all thei]r little *Gro.* *Qy. read* ℞ *or* Recipe? Electuaria *Gro. conj.* 753 *Masticator*[*i*]*um Gro.* 754 pitch'd cloths *Coll.*: pitch'd-cloths *Hazl.* 770 content: though *Coll., Hazl., Gro.*

whole kennell of collections to the purpose. I haue had a dogge my selfe, that would dreame, and talke in his sleepe, turne round like Ned foole, and sleepe all night in a porridge pot. Marke but the skirmish betweene sixpence and the foxe, and it is miraculous how they ouercome one another in honorable curtesy. The foxe, though he weares a chayne, runnes as though hee were free, mocking vs (as it is a crafty beast) because we, hauing a Lord and master to attend on, runne about at our pleasures, like masterles men. Young sixpence, the best page his master hath, playes a little and retires. I warrant he will not be farre out of the way, when his master goes to dinner. Learne of him, you deminitiue vrchins, howe to behaue your selues in your vocation; take not vp your standings in a nut-tree, when you should be waiting on my Lords trencher. Shoote but a bit at buttes; play but a span at poyntes. What euer you doe, *memento mori*: remember to rise betimes in the morning.

Summer. *Vertumnus*, call *Haruest.*

Vertumnus. Haruest, by west, and by north, by south and southeast,

Shewe thy selfe like a beast.

Goodman *Haruest*, yeoman, come in and say what you can: roome for the sithe and the siccles there.

Enter Haruest with a sythe on his neck, & all his reapers with siccles, and a great black bowle with a posset in it borne before him: they come in singing. |

E 2v

The Song.

Merry, merry, merry, cheary, cheary, cheary,
Trowle the black bowle to me;
Hey derry, derry, with a poupe and a lerry,
Ile trowle it againe to thee:

799–801 Haruest ... beast.] *as verse, Coll., Hasl.: as prose, Q, Gro.* 800 southeast] by east *Coll., Hasl.* 801 shewe *Q, Gro.* 802 Goodman ... can:] *Possibly intended as verse, dividing after* yeoman. 803 sickle *Coll., Hasl.*

Hooky, hooky, we haue shorne,
And we haue bound,
And we haue brought Haruest
Home to towne.

Summer. *Haruest*, the Bayly of my husbandry,
What plenty hast thou heapt into our Barnes?
I hope thou hast sped well, thou art so blithe.
Haruest. Sped well or ill, sir, I drinke to you on the same:
Is your throate cleare to helpe vs to sing *hooky, hooky*?

Heere they all sing after him,

Hooky, hooky, we haue shorne,
And we haue bound,
And we haue brought haruest
Home to towne.

Autumne. Thou Coridon, why answer'st not direct?
Haruest. Answere? why, friend, I am no tapster, to say Anon, anon, sir: but leaue you to molest me, goodman tawny leaues, for feare (as the prouerbe sayes, leaue is light) so I mow off all your leaues with my sithe. |
Winter. Mocke not & mowe not too long you were best, E 3
For feare we whet not your sythe vpon your pate.
Summer. Since thou art so peruerse in answering,
Haruest, heare what complaints are brought to me.
Thou art accused by the publike voyce,
For an ingrosser of the common store;
A Carle, that hast no conscience, nor remorse,
But doost impouerish the fruitfull earth,
To make thy garners rise vp to the heauens.
To whom giuest thou? who feedeth at thy boord?

808–11 *Hooky . . . towne.*] *as two lines, Gro.* 809 *and Q, Gro.* 811 *home Q, Gro.* 812 bailiff *Coll., Hasl.* 816 us sing *Coll., Hasl.* 817–20 *See notes on ll.* 808–11 *above.* 826 long; you *Coll., Hasl.* best] best not *Coll., Hasl.* 827 not] *om. Coll., Hasl.*

No almes, but vnreasonable gaine,
Disgests what thy huge yron teeth deuoure;
Small beere, course bread, the hynds and beggers cry,
Whilest thou withholdest both the mault and flowre,
And giu'st vs branne, and water, (fit for dogs.)

Haruest. Hooky, hooky, if you were not my Lord, I would say you lye. First and formost, you say I am a Grocer. A Grocer is a citizen: I am no citizen, therefore no Grocer. A hoorder vp of graine: that's false; for not so much but my elbows eate wheate euery time I leane on them. A Carle: that is as much to say as a conny-catcher of good fellowship. For that one word you shall pledge me a carouse: eate a spoonfull of the curd to allay your choller. My mates and fellowes, sing no more Merry, merry; but weep out a lamẽtable hooky, hooky, and let your Sickles cry,

Sicke, sicke, and very sicke,
& sicke, and for the time;
For Haruest your master is
Abusde without reason or rime.

I haue no conscience, I? Ile come neerer to you, and yet I am no scabbe, nor no louse. Can you make proofe where euer I sold away my conscience, or pawnd it? doe you know who would buy it, or lend any money vpon it? I thinke I haue giuen you the pose; blow your nose, master constable. But to say that I impouerish the earth, that I robbe the man in the moone, that I take a purse on the top of Paules steeple; by this straw and thrid I sweare you are no gentleman, no proper man, no honest man, to make mee sing, O man in desperation. |

E 3ᵛ *Summer.* I must giue credit vnto what I heare;
For other then I heare, attract I nought.

836 almès *Gro.* but [an] unreasonable *Hazl.* 839 Whilst *Coll., Hazl.* 841 hooky! *Coll., Hazl., Gro.* 845 but] for *Hazl.* 846 on] upon *Coll., Hazl.* 846 as much as to say, a *Coll. Hazl.* 852–5 Sicke . . . rime.] *as verse* (*in ital.*), *Coll., Hazl., Gro.*: *as prose*, *Q.* 854 for *Q.* 855 abusde *Q.* 856 I?] *Hazl.*: I; *Q. Coll.*: I! *Gro.* 863 of St. Paul's *Coll., Hazl.* 864 thread *Coll., Hazl.* 867 attract] detract *Hazl.*

Haruest. I, I; nought seeke, nought haue:
An ill husband is the first steppe to a knaue.
You obiect I feede none at my boord. I am sure, if you were a hogge, you would neuer say so: for, surreuerence of their worships, they feed at my stable table euery day. I keepe good hospitality for hennes & geese: Gleaners are oppressed with heauy burdens of my bounty:

They rake me, and eate me to the very bones,
Till there be nothing left but grauell and stones,

and yet I give no almes, but deuoure all? They say, when a man cannot heare well, you heare with your haruest eares: but if you heard with your haruest eares, that is, with the eares of corne which my almes-cart scatters, they would tell you that I am the very poore mans boxe of pitie, that there are more holes of liberality open in haruests heart then in a siue, or a dust-boxe. Suppose you were a craftsman, or an Artificer, and should come to buy corne of mee, you should haue bushels of mee; not like the Bakers loafe, that should waygh but sixe ounces, but vsury for your mony, thousands for one: what would you haue more? Eate mee out of my apparell if you will, if you suspect mee for a miser.

Summer. I credit thee, and thinke thou wert belide. But tell mee, hadst thou a good crop this yeare?

Haruest. Hay, Gods plenty, which was so sweete and so good, that when I ierted my whip, and said to my horses but Hay, they would goe as they were mad.

Summer. But hay alone thou saist not; but hay-ree.

Haruest. I sing hay-ree, that is, hay and rye: meaning, that they shall haue hay and rye their belly-fulls, if they will draw hard: So wee say, wa, hay, when they goe out

868–9 I . . . knaue.] *as verse, Coll., Hazl., Gro.*: *as prose, Q.* 869 an *Q.* 871 sir reverence *Hazl.* 872 stable, table, euery *Q*: stable-table every *Coll., Hazl.* 874 bounty. *Q.* 875–6 They . . . stones,] *as verse, Coll., Hazl., Gro.*: *as prose, Q.* 875 rake] take *Coll., Hazl.* 876 till *Q.* 877 all. *Q, Coll.*: all! *Hazl., Gro.* 887 one. What *Coll., Hazl.* 891 hast *Coll., Hazl.* 892 Gods] good *Hazl.*

of the way: meaning, that they shall want hay, if they will not doe as they should doe.

Summer. How thriue thy oates, thy barley, and thy wheate?

Haruest. My oates grew like a cup of beere that makes the brewer rich: my rye, like a Caualier that weares a
E 4 huge feather | in his cap, but hath no courage in his heart, had a long stalke, a goodly huske, but nothing so great a kernell as it was wont: my barley, euen as many a nouice is crossebitten as soone as euer hee peepes out of the shell, so was it frost-bitten in the blade, yet pickt vp his crummes agayne afterward, and bade, Fill pot, hostesse, in spite of a deare yeere. As for my Pease and my Fetches, they are famous, and not to be spoken of.

Autumne. I, I, such countrey button'd caps as you
Doe want no fetches to vndoe great townes.

Haruest. Will you make good your words, that wee want no fetches?

Winter. I, that he shall.

Haruest. Then fetch vs a cloake-bagge, to carry away your selfe in.

Summer. Plough-swaynes are blunt, and will taunt bitterly.
Haruest, when all is done, thou art the man,
Thou doest me the best seruice of them all:
Rest from thy labours till the yeere renues,
And let the husbandmen sing of thy prayse.

Haruest. Rest from my labours, and let the husbandmen sing of my prayse? Nay, we doe not meane to rest so; by your leaue, we'le haue a largesse amongst you, e're we part.

All. A largesse, a largesse, a largesse!

Will Summer. Is there no man that will giue them a hisse for a largesse?

902 grow *Coll., Hasl.* 905 had] hath *Hasl., Gro.* 906–7 novice, is *Coll., Hasl., Gro.* 910 Fetches] vetches *Coll., Hasl.* 923 husbandmen [all] sing *Hasl.* of] *om. Coll., Hasl.* 925 of] *om. Coll., Hasl.* 929 that] *om. Coll., Hasl., Gro.*

Haruest. No, that there is not, goodman Lundgis: I see charitie waxeth cold, and I thinke this house be her habitatiõ, for it is not very hot; we were as good euen put vp our pipes, and sing Merry, merry, for we shall get no money.

Here they goe out all singing,

Merry, merry, merry, cheary, cheary, cheary,
Trowle the blacke bowle to me: |
Hey derry, derry, with a poupe and a lerrie, E 4v
Ile trowle it againe to thee:
Hookie, hookie, we haue shorne and we haue bound,
And we haue brought haruest home to towne.

Will Summer. Well, go thy waies, thou bundle of straw; Ile giue thee this gift, thou shalt be a Clowne while thou liu'st. As lustie as they are, they run on the score with Georges wife for their posset, and God knowes who shal pay goodman Yeomans for his wheat sheafe: they may sing well enough, Trowle the blacke bowle to mee, trowle the blacke bowle to mee: for, a hundreth to one but they will bee all drunke, e're they goe to bedde: yet, of a slauering foole, that hath no conceyte in any thing but in carrying a wand in his hand with commendation when he runneth by the high way side, this stripling *Haruest* hath done reasonable well. O, that some bodie had had the wit to set his thatcht suite on fire, and so lighted him out: If I had had but a Iet ring on my finger, I might haue done with him what I list; I had spoild him, I had tooke his apparrell prisoner; for, it being made of straw, & the nature of Iet to draw straw vnto it, I would haue nailde him to the pommell of my chaire, till the play were done, and then haue carried him to my chamber dore, and laide him at the threshold as

934 S.D. *Here they all go out singing. Coll., Hasl.* 939–40 *Hookie . . . towne.*] *as four lines, dividing after shorne and haruest (reading And Home) Coll., Hasl., Gro.* 945 Yeoman *Coll., Hasl.* 946–7 Trowle . . . mee:] *as two lines of verse (in ital.), Coll., Hasl., Gro. Within quotation marks, Coll., Hasl.* 948 bee all] all be *Coll., Hasl.* bed. Yet *Coll., Hasl., Gro.* 952 had had] had *Coll., Hasl.* wit] sense *Coll., Hasl.* 953–4 had had] had *Hasl.* 955 I had tooke] had I took *Hasl.*

a wispe, or a piece of mat, to wipe my shooes on, euerie time I come vp durtie.

Summer. *Vertumnus*, call *Bacchus.*

Vertum. *Bacchus, Baccha, Bacchum*, god *Bacchus*, god fatbacke,

Baron of dubble beere and bottle ale,
Come in & shew thy nose that is nothing pale.

Backe, backe there, god barrell-bellie may enter.

Enter Bacchus riding vpon an Asse trapt in Iuie, himselfe drest in Vine leaues, and a garland of grapes on his head: his companions hauing all Iacks in their hands, and Iuie garlands on their heads; they come in singing. |

F 1 The Song.

Mounsieur Mingo for quaffing doth surpasse,
In Cuppe, in Canne, or glasse.
God Bacchus, doe mee right,
And dubbe mee knight Domingo.

Bacchus. Wherefore didst thou call mee, *Vertumnus*? hast any drinke to giue mee? One of you hold my Asse while I light: walke him vp and downe the hall, till I talke a word or two.

Summer. What, *Bacchus*? still *animus in patinis*, no mind but on the pot?

Bacchus. Why, *Summer, Summer*, how would'st doe, but for rayne? What is a faire house without water comming to it? Let mee see how a smith can worke, if hee haue not his trough standing by him. What sets an edge on a knife? the grindstone alone? no, the moyst element powr'd vpõ it, which grinds out all gaps, sets a poynt vpon it, & scowres

965–6 Baron . . . pale.] *as verse, Coll., Hazl., Gro.*: *as prose, Q.* 966 come *Q.* 966–7 pale: backe *Q*: pale: Back *Coll., Hazl.* 967 back there, god] back, that God *Hazl.*: back there [that] god *Gro.* S.D. *they come singing. Coll., Hazl.* 969 *Canne*] *corn Coll., Hazl.* 971 *knight, Gro. Domingo*] *as separate line, Coll., Hazl., Gro.* *Do* [mine] *Mingo Hazl. conj.* 976 *patinâ Hazl., Gro.* 979 What's *Coll., Hazl.*

it as bright as the firmament. So, I tell thee, giue a soldier wine before he goes to battaile, it grinds out all gaps, it makes him forget all scarres and wounds, and fight in the thickest of his enemies, as though hee were but at foyles amongst his fellows. Giue a scholler wine, going to his booke, or being about to inuent, it sets a new poynt on his wit, it glazeth it, it scowres it, it giues him *acumen*. *Plato* saith, *vinum esse fomitem quẽdam, et incitabilem ingenij virtutisque*. *Aristotle* saith, *Nulla est magna scientia absque mixtura dementiæ*. There is no excellent knowledge without mixture of madnesse. And what makes a man more madde in the head then wine? *Qui bene vult poyein, debet anté pinyen:* he that will doe well must drinke well. *Prome, prome, potum prome:* Ho, butler, a fresh pot. *Nunc est bibẽdum, nunc pede libero terra pulsanda:* a pox on him that leaues his drinke behinde him; hey *Rendouow*.

Summer. It is wines custome, to be full of words. I pray thee, *Bacchus*, giue vs *vicissitudinem loquendi*.

Bacchus. A fiddlesticke! ne're tell me I am full of words. *Fœcundi calices, quem non fecere disertum? aut epi, aut abi*, eyther | take your drinke, or you are an infidell. F 1v

Summer. I would about thy vintage question thee: How thriue thy vines? hadst thou good store of grapes?

Bac. *Vinum quasi venenum*, wine is poyson to a sicke body; a sick body is no sound body; *Ergo*, wine is a pure thing, & is poyson to all corruption. Try-lill, the hûters hoope to you: ile stand to it, *Alexander* was a braue man, and yet an arrant drunkard.

Winter. Fye, drunken sot, forget'st thou where thou art?

My Lord askes thee, what vintage thou hast made?

Bac. Our vintage was a vintage, for it did not work vpon the aduantage, it came in the vauntgard of Summer,

985 battle; it *Hasl., Gro.* 988 among *Coll., Hasl.* 989 invent; it *Hasl., Gro.* 995 *poyein*] ποιειν *Coll.*: Πιοειν *Hasl.*: *poyein* [ποιεῖν] *Gro.* 996 *pinyen*] πινειν *Coll., Hasl.*: *pinyen* [πίνειν] *Gro.* 999 hey] *om. Coll., Hasl.* *Rendouow* [*Rendezvous*]. *Gro.* 1003 *epi*] *bibe Hasl.*: *epi* [*bibe*] *Gro.* *desertum: Q, Gro.* 1010 whoop *Coll., Hasl.* 1014 was a ventage *Gro.*

& winds and stormes met it by the way,
And made it cry, Alas and welladay.

Summer. That was not well, but all miscaried not?

Bac. Faith, shal I tel you no lye? Because you are my coũtryman, & so forth; & a good fellow is a good fellow, though he haue neuer a penny in his purse: We had but euen pot luck, a little to moysten our lips, and no more. That same *Sol* is a Pagan and a Proselite; hee shinde so bright all summer, that he burnd more grapes then his beames were worth, were euery beame as big as a weauers beame. *A fabis abstinendum:* faith, he shuld haue abstaind; for what is flesh & blud without his liquor?

Autumne. Thou want'st no liquor, nor no flesh and bloud.
I pray thee may I aske without offence?
How many tunnes of wine hast in thy paunch?
Me thinks, that, built like a round church,
Should yet haue some of Iulius Cæsars wine:
I warrant, 'twas not broacht this hundred yere.

Bacchus. Hear'st thou, dow-belly? because thou talkst, and talkst, & dar'st not drinke to me a black Iack, wilt thou giue me leaue to broach this little kilderkin of my corps against thy backe? I know thou art but a mycher, & dar'st not stand me. *A vous, moũsieur Winter*, a frolick vpsy freese, crosse, ho, *super nagulũ.*

ockes Iacke n his mbe.

Winter. Grammercy, Bacchus, as much as though I did.
For this time thou must pardon me perforce.

Bacchus. What, giue me the disgrace? Goe to, I say, I am no Pope, to pardõ any man. *Ran, ran, tarra,* cold beere makes good | bloud. S. George for Engläd:

F 2 somewhat is better then nothing. Let me see, hast thou

[1] *Knockes . . . thumbe.*] *as stage-direction, Coll., Hasl.: om. Gro.*

1016–7 & . . . welladay.] *as verse, Coll., Hasl., Gro.: as prose, Q.* 1017 and *Q.* 1019 tell no *Coll., Hasl.* 1031 that [that is] built *Hasl.*: that [paunch] built *Gro.* 1039 upsy freese: cross, ho! *Coll., Gro.*: up-se-frieze: cross, ho! *Hasl.* 1040–1 Grammercy . . . perforce.] *as prose, Hasl.*

done me iustice? why, so: thou art a king, though there were no more kings in the cards but the knaue. Summer, wilt thou haue a demy culuering, that shall cry husty tusty, and make thy cup flye fine meale in the Element?

Summer. No, keepe thy drinke, I pray thee, to thy selfe.

Bacchus. This *Pupillonian* in the fooles coate shall haue a cast of martins & a whiffe. To the health of Captaine *Rinocerotry*: looke to it, let him haue weight and measure.

Will Summer. What an asse is this! I cannot drinke so much, though I should burst.

Bacchus. Foole, doe not refuse your moyst sustenance; come, come, dogs head in the pot, doe what you are borne to.

Will Summer. If you will needs make me a drunkard against my will, so it is; ile try what burthen my belly is of.

Bacchus. Crouch, crouch on your knees, foole, when you pledge god *Bacchus.*

Here Will Sũmer drinks, & they sing about him. Bacchus begins.

All. Mounsieur Mingo for quaffing did surpasse,
In Cup, in Can, or glasse.

Bacchus. Ho, wel shot, a tutcher, a tutcher: for quaffing *Toy* doth passe, in cup, in canne, or glasse.

All. God Bacchus doe him right,
And dubbe him knight.

Here he dubs Will Summer with the black Iacke.

Bac. Rise vp, Sir Robert Tospot.

Sum. No more of this, I hate it to the death.

1046 why so: *Q, Coll., Hasl., Gro.* 1067–8 for ... glasse.] *as two lines of verse, dividing after* passe (*in ital.*), *Coll., Hasl., Gro.* 1069–70 *God ... knight.*] *as two lines, Coll., Hasl., Gro.: as one line, Q.* 1070 *and Q.* S.D. *Here ... Iacke.*] *Placed here in Gro.: after next line, Q, Coll., Hasl.*

No such deformer of the soule and sence,
As is this swynish damn'd-borne drunkennes.
Bacchus, for thou abusest so earths fruits,
Impris'ned liue in cellars and in vawtes,
Let none commit their counsels vnto thee:
Thy wrath be fatall to thy dearest friends;
Vnarmed runne vpon thy foemens swords;
Neuer feare any plague before it fall:
Dropsies and watry tympanies haunt thee,
Thy lungs with surfeting be putrified,
To cause thee haue an odious stinking breath;
Slauer and driuell like a child at mouth; |
F 2v Bee poore and beggerly in thy old age;
Let thy owne kinsmen laugh, when thou complaynst,
And many teares gayne nothing but blind scoffes.
This is the guerdon due to drunkennes;
Shame, sicknes, misery, followe excesse.

Bacchus. Now on my honor, Sim Summer, thou art a bad member, a Dunse, a mungrell, to discredit so worshipfull an arte after this order. Thou hast curst me, and I will blesse thee: Neuer cup of *Nipitaty* in London come neere thy niggardly habitation. I beseech the gods of good fellowship, thou maist fall into a consumption with drinking smal beere. Euery day maist thou eate fish, and let it sticke in the midst of thy maw, for want of a cup of wine to swim away in. Venison be *Venenum* to thee: & may that Vintner haue the plague in his house, that sels thee a drop of claret to kill the poyson of it. As many wounds maist thou haue, as *Cæsar* had in the Senate house, and get no white wine to wash them with: And to conclude, pine away in melancholy and sorrow, before thou hast the fourth part of a dramme of my Iuice to cheare vp thy spirits.

Summer. Hale him away, he barketh like a wolfe; It is his drinke, not hee, that rayles on vs.

1074 damn'd-borne] damn'd horn *Hasl.* 1079 Vnarmèd *Grv.* 1085 Be *c.w.* 1086 thine *Coll., Hasl.* 1100 thee] *om. Coll., Hasl.*

Bacchus. Nay, soft, brother Summer, back with that foote: here is a snuffe in the bottome of the Iack, inough to light a man to bed withall; wee'le leaue no flocks behind vs, whatsoeuer wee doe.

Summer. Go dragge him hence, I say, when I commaund.

Bacchus. Since we must needs goe, let's goe merrily. Farewell, sir Robert Tosse-pot: sing amayne *Mounsieur Myngo*, whilest I mount vp my Asse.

Here they goe out singing Mounsieur Myngo, as they came in.

Will Summer. Of all gods, this *Bacchus* is the ill-fauourd'st misshapen god that euer I sawe. A poxe on him, he hath cristned me with a newe nickname of sir *Robert Tosse-pot*, that will not part frõ me this twelmonth. Ned fooles clothes are so perfumde with the beere he powrd on me, that there shall not be a Dutchmã within 20. mile, but he'le smel out & claime kindred | of him. What a beastly F 3 thing is it, to bottle vp ale in a mãs belly, whẽ a man must set his guts on a gallõ pot last, only to purchase the alehouse title of a *boone companion*? Carowse, pledge me and you dare: S'wounds, ile drinke with thee for all that euer thou art worth. It is euẽ as 2. men should striue who should run furthest into the sea for a wager. Me thinkes these are good houshold termes; Wil it please you to be here, sir? I cõmend me to you: shall I be so bold as trouble you? sauing your tale, I drink to you. And if these were put in practise but a yeare or two in tauernes, wine would soone fall from six and twentie pound a tunne, and be beggers money, a penie a quart, and take vp his Inne with wast beere in the almes tub. I am a sinner as others: I must not say much of this argument. Euerie

1109 foote] fool *Coll., Hasl.* 1114 amayne, *Mounsieur Q, Coll., Gro.* 1116 all the gods *Coll., Hasl.* 1118 has *Gro.* 1119 twelvemonth *Coll., Hasl.* 1121 miles *Coll., Hasl.* 1123 is it] it is *Coll., Hasl.* ale] all *Coll., Hasl.* 1125 of *boon Coll., Hasl.*

one, when hee is whole, can giue aduice to them that are sicke. My masters, you that be good fellowes, get you into corners, and soupe off your prouender closely: report hath a blister on her tongue: open tauerns are tel-tales.
Non peccat quicunq; potest peccasse negare.
Summer. Ile call my seruants to account, said I?
A bad account: worse seruants no man hath.
Quos credis fidos effuge, tutus eris:
The prouerbe I haue prou'd to be too true,
Totidem domi hostes habemus, quot seruos.
And that wise caution of *Democritus*,
Seruus necessaria possessio, non autem dulcis:
No where fidelitie and labour dwels.
Hope yong heads count to build on had I wist.
Conscience but few respect, all hunt for gaine:
Except the Cammell haue his prouender
Hung at his mouth, he will not trauell on.
Tyresias to *Narcissus* promised
Much prosperous hap and many golden daies,
If of his beautie he no knowledge tooke.
Knowledge breeds pride, pride breedeth discontent.
Blacke discontent, thou vrgest to reuenge.
Reuenge opes not her eares to poore mens praiers.
That dolt destruction is she without doubt, |
F 3v That hales her foorth, and feedeth her with nought.
Simplicitie and plainnesse, you I loue:
Hence, double diligence, thou mean'st deceit.
Those that now serpent-like creepe on the ground,
And seeme to eate the dust, they crowch so low;
If they be disappointed of their pray,
Most traiterously will trace their tailes and sting.
Yea, such as, like the Lapwing, build their nests
In a mans dung, come vp by drudgerie,
Will be the first that, like that foolish bird,
Will follow him with yelling and false cries.

1139 sup *Coll., Has.* 1150 Hope, yong *Q, Coll.*: How young *Hasl.*: Hope!—yong *Gro.* 1167 tailes] nails *Coll., Hasl.*

Well sung a shepheard (that now sleepes in skies)
Dumbe swannes do loue, & not vaine chattering pies.
In mountaines, Poets say, Eccho is hid,
For her deformitie and monstrous shape:
Those mountaines are the houses of great Lords,
Where Stentor with his hundreth voices sounds
A hundreth trumpes at once with rumor fild:
A woman they imagine her to be,
Because that sexe keepes nothing close they heare:
And that's the reason magicke writers frame,
There are more witches women then of men;
For women generally, for the most part,
Of secrets more desirous are then men,
Which hauing got, they haue no power to hold.
In these times had Ecchoes first fathers liu'd,
No woman, but a man, she had beene faind.
(Though women yet will want no newes to prate.)
For men (meane men), the skumme & drosse of all,
Will talke and babble of they know not what,
Vpbraid, depraue, and taunt they care not whom:
Surmises passe for sound approued truthes:
Familiaritie and conference,
That were the sinewes of societies,
Are now for vnderminings onely vsde,
And nouell wits, that loue none but themselues, |
Thinke wisedomes height as falshood slily couch't, F 4
Seeking each other to o'rethrow his mate.
O friendship, thy old temple is defac't.
Embrasing euery guilefull curtesie
Hath ouergrowne fraud-wanting honestie.
Examples liue but in the idle schooles:
Sinon beares all the sway in princes courts.
Sicknes, be thou my soules phisition:
Bring the Apothecarie death with thee.

1173 swannes] *Gro., Coll., Hasl.*: swaines *Q.* 1177 Scenter *Q.* 1180 keep *Coll., Hasl.* 1181 frame] feign *Coll., conj.* 1184 are] *Coll., Hasl., Gro.*: of, *Q.* 'or *Q*' *Coll., Hasl.* 1200 Embracing envy, guileful *Hasl.*

In earth is hell, true hell felicitie,
Compared with this world, the den of wolues.
Aut. My Lord, you are too passionate without cause.
Winter. Grieue not for that which cannot be recal'd:
Is it your seruants carelesnesse you plaine?
Tullie by one of his owne slaues was slaine.
The husbandman close in his bosome nurst
A subtill snake, that after wrought his bane.
Autumne. Seruos fideles liberalitas facit;
Where on the contrarie, *seruitutem*:
Those that attend vpon illiberall Lords,
Whose couetize yeelds nought els but faire lookes,
Euen of those faire lookes make their gainfull vse.
For, as in *Ireland* and in *Denmarke* both
Witches for gold will sell a man a wind,
Which, in the corner of a napkin wrapt,
Shall blow him safe vnto what coast he will;
So make ill seruants sale of their Lords wind,
Which, wrapt vp in a piece of parchment,
Blowes many a knaue forth danger of the law.
Summer. Inough of this; let me go make my will.
Ah, it is made, although I hold my peace,
These two will share betwixt them what I haue.
The surest way to get my will perform'd,
Is to make my executour my heire;
And he, if all be giuen him, and none els,
Vnfallibly will see it well perform'd. |
F 4v Lyons will feed, though none bid them go to.
Ill growes the tree affordeth ne're a graft.
Had I some issue to sit in my throne,
My griefe would die, death should not heare mee grone,
But when perforce these must enioy my wealth,
Which thanke me not, but enter't as a pray,
Bequeath'd it is not, but cleane cast away.

1206 true hell] hell true *Hasl.* hell, felicitie *Gro.* 1215 *seruitutem, Coll.*: *servitutem— Hasl.* 1227 peace: *Coll., Hasl.*: peace; *Gro.* 1235 in] on *Coll., Hasl.*

Autumne, be thou successor of my seat:
Hold, take my crowne:—looke how he graspes for it!
Thou shalt not haue it yet:—but hold it too;
Why should I keep that needs I must forgo?
Winter. Then (dutie laid aside) you do me wrong:
I am more worthie of it farre then he.
He hath no skill nor courage for to rule;
A weather-beaten banckrout asse it is,
That scatters and consumeth all he hath:
Eche one do plucke from him without controll.
He is nor hot nor cold, a sillie soule,
That faine would please eche party, if so he might.
He and the spring are schollers fauourites.
What schollers are, what thriftles kind of men,
Your selfe be iudge, and iudge of him by them.
When Cerberus was headlong drawne from hell,
He voided a blacke poison from his mouth,
Called *Aconitum*, whereof inke was made:
That inke, with reeds first laid on dried barkes,
Seru'd men a while to make rude workes withall,
Till *Hermes*, secretarie to the Gods,
Or *Hermes Trismegistus*, as some will,
Wearie with grauing in blind characters,
And figures of familiar beasts and plants,
Inuented letters to write lies withall.
In them he pend the fables of the Gods,
The gyants warre, and thousand tales besides.
After eche nation got these toyes in vse,
There grew vp certaine drunken parasites, |
Term'd Poets, which, for a meales meat or two, G 1
Would promise monarchs immortalitie:
They vomited in verse all that they knew,

1240 of] to *Coll., Hasl.* 1241 crowne: looke *Q.* 1242 yet: but *Q.* 1243 that] what *Coll., Hasl.* 1250 is not hot *Hasl.* 1251 eche] both *Coll.* party] part *Hasl.* 1259 men] me *Coll., Hasl.* 1263 figure[s] *Gro.* 1267 vse] *To this word Hasl. has note* 'Old copy, *Form'd*,' *referring probably to* Found *in l.* 1272. *But there the reading is* Found *in all copies which I have seen.*

Found causes and beginnings of the world,
Fetcht pedegrees of mountaines and of flouds
From men and women whom the Gods transform'd:
If any towne or citie they pass'd by
Had in compassion (thinking them mad men)
Forborne to whip them, or imprison them,
That citie was not built by humane hands,
T'was raisde by musique, like Megara walles;
Apollo, poets patron, founded it,
Because they found one fitting fauour there:
Musæus, Lynus, Homer, Orpheus,
Were of this trade, and thereby wonne their fame.
Will. Summer. Fama malum, quo non velocius vllum.
Winter. Next them, a company of ragged knaues,
Sun-bathing beggers, lazie hedge-creepers,
Sleeping face vpwards in the fields all night,
Dream'd strange deuices of the Sunne and Moone;
And they, like Gipsies, wandring vp and downe,
Told fortunes, iuggled, nicknam'd all the starres,
And were of idiots term'd Philosophers:
Such was Pithagoras the silencer,
Prometheus, Thales Milesius,
Who would all things of water should be made:
Anaximander, Anaximenes,
That positiuely said the aire was God;
Zenocrates, that said there were eight Gods:
And Cratoniates, Alcmeon too,
Who thought the Sun and Moone & stars were gods:
The poorer sort of them, that could get nought,
Profest, like beggerly Franciscan Friers,
And the strict order of the Capouchins,
A voluntarie wretched pouertie,
Contempt of gold, thin fare, and lying hard: |
G 1v Yet he that was most vehement in these,

1272 Found] Form'd *Coll.*: Feign'd *Hasl.* 1284 *non* [*aliud*] *velocius* *Hasl., Gro.* 1293 Thales, Milesius *Q, Coll., Hasl., Gro.* 1298 Crationates and Alcmeon *Coll., Hasl.*; . . . [and] . . . *Gro.* 1302 Caponchins *Q.*

Diogenes, the Cinicke and the Dogge,
Was taken coyning money in his Cell.
Wil Summer. What an olde Asse was that! Me thinks, hee should haue coynde Carret rootes rather: for, as for money, he had no vse for 't, except it were to melt, and soder vp holes in his tub withall.
Winter. It were a whole *Olimpiades* worke to tell,
How many diuillish, *ergo* armed arts,
Sprung all, as vices, of this Idlenesse:
For euen as souldiers not imployde in warres,
But liuing loosely in a quiet state,
Not hauing wherewithall to maintaine pride,
Nay, scarce to finde their bellies any foode,
Nought but walke melancholie, and deuise
How they may cousen Marchãts, fleece young heires,
Creepe into fauour by betraying men,
Robbe churches, beg waste toyes, court city dames,
Who shall vndoe their husbands for their sakes;
The baser rabble how to cheate and steale,
And yet be free from penaltie of death:
So those word-warriers, lazy star-gazers,
Vsde to no labour but to lowze themselues,
Had their heads fild with coosning fantasies,
They plotted how to make their pouertie
Better esteemde of then high Soueraignty:
They thought how they might plant a heauẽ on earth,
Whereof they would be principall lowe gods;
That heauen they called Contemplation,
As much to say as a most pleasant slouth;
Which better I cannot compare then this,
That if a fellow licensed to beg
Should all his life time go from faire to faire,
And buy gape-seede, hauing no businesse else.
That contemplation, like an aged weede,
Engendred thousand sects, and all those sects |

1310 for't] for *Q, Coll.*: for ['t] *Hasl., Gro.* 1325 death. *Q.* 1329 how] had *Gro.* 1332 low-gods *Hasl.*

G 2 Were but as these times, cunning shrowded rogues:
Grammarians some; and wherein differ they
From beggers, that professe the Pedlers French?
The Poets next, slouinly tatterd slaues,
That wander, and sell Ballets in the streetes.
Historiographers others there be,
And they, like lazers by the high way side,
That for a penny, or a halfe-penny,
Will call each knaue a good fac'd Gentleman,
Giue honor vnto Tinkers for good Ale,
Preferre a Cobler fore the Black prince farre,
If he bestowe but blacking of their shooes:
And as it is the Spittle-houses guise,
Ouer the gate to write their founders names,
Or on the outside of their walles at least,
In hope by their examples others moou'd
Will be more bountifull and liberall;
So in the forefront of their Chronicles,
Or *Peroratione operis*,
They learnings benefactors reckon vp,
Who built this colledge, who gaue that Free-schoole,
What King or Queene aduaunced Schollers most,
And in their times what writers flourished;
Rich men and magistrates, whilest yet they liue,
They flatter palpably, in hope of gayne.
Smooth-tounged Orators, the fourth in place,
Lawyers our common-wealth intitles them,
Meere swash-bucklers and ruffianly mates,
That will for twelue pence make a doughtie fray,
Set men for strawes together by the eares.
Skie measuring Mathematicians,
Golde-breathing Alcumists also we haue,
Both which are subtill witted humorists,
That get their meales by telling miracles,

1347 And they, like lazars, *Coll.*, *Hasl.*: And the like lazers *Q*, *Gro.* by] by by *Coll.*: lie by *Hasl.* 1351 'fore *Coll.*, *Hasl.* farre] faire *Gro.* 1352 of] on *Coll.*, *Hasl.* 1354 the] their *Coll.*, *Hasl.* 1356 example *Coll.*, *Hasl.* 1373 subtill-willed *Gro.*

Which they haue seene in trauailing the skies:
Vaine boasters, lyers, make-shifts, they are all, |
Men that, remoued from their inkehorne termes, G 2v
Bring forth no action worthie of their bread.
What should I speake of pale physicions?
Who as *Fismenus non nasatus* was
(Vpon a wager that his friends had laid)
Hir'de to liue in a priuie a whole yeare;
So are they hir'de for lucre and for gaine,
All their whole life to smell on excrements.
Wil. Summer. Very true, for I haue heard it for a prouerbe many a time and oft, *Hunc os fœtidum*, fah, he stinkes like a phisicion.
Winter. Innumerable monstrous practises
Hath loytring contemplation brought forth more,
Which t'were too long particular to recite:
Suffice, they all conduce vnto this end,
To banish labour, nourish slothfulnesse,
Pamper vp lust, deuise newfangled sinnes.
Nay, I will iustifie there is no vice,
Which learning and vilde knowledge brought not in,
Or in whose praise some learned haue not wrote.
The arte of murther Machiauel hath pend:
Whoredome hath Ouid to vphold her throne;
And Aretine of late in Italie,
Whose *Cortigiana* toucheth bawdes their trade.
Gluttonie Epicurus doth defend,
And bookes of th' arte of cookerie confirme;
Of which Platina hath not writ the least.
Drunkennesse of his good behauiour
Hath testimoniall from where he was borne;
That pleasant worke *de arte bibendi*,
A drunken Dutchman spued out few yeares since:
Nor wanteth sloth (although sloths plague bee want)

1375 travelling *Coll., Hasl.* 1386 *Hinc Hasl.* *fœtidum Q.* 1390 t'were] were *Coll., Hasl.* 1395 vile *Coll., Hasl.* 1400 toucheth] teacheth *Hasl., Gro.*

His paper pillers for to leane vpon:
The praise of nothing pleades his worthinesse:
Follie Erasmus sets a flourish on.
For baldnesse, a bald asse I haue forgot |
G 3 Patcht vp a pamphletarie periwigge.
Slouenrie Grobianus magnifieth:
Sodomitrie a Cardinall commends,
And Aristotle necessarie deemes.
In briefe, all bookes, diuinitie except,
Are nought but tales of the diuels lawes,
Poyson wrapt vp in sugred words,
Mans pride, damnations props, the worlds abuse:
Then censure (good my Lord) what bookemen are,
If they be pestilent members in a state:
He is vnfit to sit at sterne of state,
That fauours such as will o'rethrow his state:
Blest is that gouernment where no arte thriues,
Vox populi, vox Dei;
The vulgars voice, it is the voice of God.
Yet Tully saith, *Non est consilium in vulgo, non ratio, non discrimen, non differentia;*
The vulgar haue no learning, wit, nor sence.
Themistocles, hauing spent all his time
In studie of Philosophie and artes,
And noting well the vanitie of them,
Wisht, with repentance for his follie past,
Some would teach him th' arte of obliuion,
How to forget the arts that he had learnd.
And Cicero, whom we alleadg'd before,
(As saith Valerius) stepping into old age,
Despised learning, lothed eloquence.
Naso, that could speake nothing but pure verse,
And had more wit then words to vtter it,
And words as choise as euer Poet had,

1419 [Rank] poyson wrapt vp in [sweet] sugred words, *Grv.* 1421 are *Q*: are: *Coll., Hasl.* 1422 state, *Coll., Hasl.* 1428 *vulgvs Grv.* 1429 *Non . . . (as new line) Hasl., Grv.* 1434 Wisht with repentance, for *Q.*

Cride and exclaimde in bitter agonie,
When knowledge had corrupted his chaste mind,
Discite, qui sapitis, non hæc quæ scimus inertes,
Sed trepidas acies, & fera bella sequi.
You that be wise, and euer meane to thriue,
O, studie not these toyes we sluggards vse, |
But follow armes, and waite on barbarous warres. G 3v
Young men, yong boyes, beware of Schoolemasters,
They will infect you, marre you, bleare your eyes:
They seeke to lay the curse of God on you,
Namely, confusion of languages,
Wherewith those that the towre of *Babel* built
Accursed were in the worldes infancie.
Latin, it was the speech of Infidels.
Logique hath nought to say in a true cause.
Philosophie is curiositie:
And *Socrates* was therefore put to death,
Onely for he was a Philosopher:
Abhorre, contemne, despise these damned snares.

Will Summer. Out vpon it, who would be a Scholler? not I, I promise you: my minde alwayes gaue me this learning was such a filthy thing, which made me hate it so as I did: when I should haue beene at schoole, construing *Batte, mi fili, mi fili, mi Batte*, I was close vnder a hedge, or vnder a barne wall, playing at spanne Counter, or Iacke in a boxe: my master beat me, my father beat me, my mother gaue me bread and butter, yet all this would not make me a squitter-booke. It was my destinie; I thanke her as a most courteous goddesse, that shee hath not cast me away vpon gibridge. O, in what a mightie vaine am I now against Horne-bookes! Here, before all this companie, I professe my selfe an open enemy to Inke and paper. Ile make it good vpon the Accidence body, that In speech is the diuels Pater noster: Nownes and Pronounes, I pronounce you as traitors to boyes buttockes:

1475–6 accidence, body [of me,] that in speech *Hasl.*: Accidence, body [of me] that In [his] speech *Gro.*

Syntaxis and Prosodia, you are tormenters of wit, & good for nothing but to get a schoole-master two pence a weeke. Hang copies; flye out, phrase books; let pennes be turnd to picktooths: bowles, cards, & dice, you are the true liberal sciẽces; Ile ne're be Goosequil, gentlemẽ, while I liue.

Sũmer. Winter, with patience vnto my griefe,
I haue attended thy inuectiue tale:
So much vntrueth wit neuer shadowed:
Gainst her owne bowels thou Arts weapons turn'st: |
G 4 Let none beleeue thee that will euer thriue:
Words haue their course, the winde blowes where it lists;
He erres alone, in error that persists.
For thou gainst *Autumne* such exceptions tak'st,
I graunt his ouer-seer thou shalt be,
His treasurer, protector, and his staffe;
He shall do nothing without thy consent;
Prouide thou for his weale and his content.

Winter. Thanks, gracious Lord: so Ile dispose of him,
As it shall not repent you of your gift.

Autumne. On such conditions no crowne will I take.
I challenge *Winter* for my enemie,
A most insaciate miserable carle,
That, to fill vp his garners to the brim,
Cares not how he indammageth the earth;
What pouerty he makes it to indure!
He ouer-bars the christall streames with yce,
That none but he and his may drinke of them:
All for a fowle Back-winter he layes vp;
Hard craggie wayes, and vncouth slippery paths
He frames, that passengers may slide and fall:
Who quaketh not, that heareth but his name?
O, but two sonnes he hath, worse then himselfe,
Christmas the one, a pinch-back, cut-throate churle,
That keepes no open house, as he should do,

1480 Hang, copies! *Hasl.* out phrase *Q*, *Gro.* 1482 be a goose-quill *Coll., Hasl.* 1484 patience, unto *Coll., Gro.* 1500 insaciate] imaciate *Gro.*

Delighteth in no game or fellowship,
Loues no good deeds, and hateth talke,
But sitteth in a corner turning Crabbes,
Or coughing o're a warmed pot of Ale:
Back-winter th' other, that 's his none sweet boy,
Who like his father taketh in all points;
An elfe it is, compact of enuious pride,
A miscreant, borne for a plague to men,
A monster, that deuoureth all he meetes:
Were but his father dead, so he would raigne:
Yea, he would go goodneere to deale by him |
As *Nabuchodonozors* vngratious sonne G 4v
Euilmerodach by his father dealt:
Who, when his sire was turned to an Oxe,
Full greedily snatcht vp his soueraigntie,
And thought himselfe a king without controwle.
So it fell out, seuen yeares expir'de and gone,
Nabuchodonozor came to his shape againe,
And dispossest him of the regiment:
Which my young prince no little greeuing at,
When that his father shortly after dide,
Fearing lest he should come from death againe,
As he came from an Oxe to be a man,
Wil'd that his body, spoylde of couerture,
Should be cast foorth into the open fieldes,
For Birds and Rauens to deuoure at will;
Thinking, if they bare euery one of them
A bill full of his flesh into their nests,
He would not rise to trouble him in haste.

Will Summer. A vertuous sonne, and Ile lay my life on't, he was a Caualiere and a good fellow.

Winter. Pleaseth your honor, all he sayes is false.
For my owne part, I loue good husbandrie,

1517 none] nown *Coll., Hazl.* 1524 Nebuchadnezzar's *Coll., Hazl.* 1525 *Euilmerodach*] Fuilmerodach *Coll.* (*which Hazl. says is reading of Q; but, rather, damaged E*): Foul Merodach *Hazl.* 1530 Nebuchadnezzar *Coll., Hazl.* 1540 bill-ful *Hazl.* 1541 would] could *Coll., Hazl.*

But hate dishonourable couetize.
Youth ne're aspires to vertues perfect growth,
Till his wilde oates be sowne: and so the earth,
Vntill his weeds be rotted with my frosts,
Is not for any seede or tillage fit.
He must be purged that hath surfeited:
The fields haue surfeited with Summer fruites;
They must be purg'd, made poore, opprest with snow,
Ere they recouer their decayed pride.
For ouerbarring of the streames with Ice,
Who locks not poyson from his childrens taste?
When Winter raignes, the water is so colde,
That it is poyson, present death to those
That wash, or bathe their limbs, in his colde streames. |
H 1 The slipprier that wayes are vnder vs,
The better it makes vs to heed our steps,
And looke e're we presume too rashly on:
If that my sonnes haue misbehau'd themselues,
A Gods name let them answer 't fore my Lord.
Autumne. Now I beseech your honor it may be so.
Summer. With all my heart: *Vertumnus*, go for them.
[*Exit Vertumnus.*]
Wil Summer. This same *Harry Baker* is such a necessary fellow to go on arrants, as you shall not finde in a country. It is pitty but he should haue another siluer arrow, if it be but for crossing the stage with his cap on.
Summer. To wearie out the time vntill they come,
Sing me some dolefull ditty to the Lute,
That may complaine my neere approching death.

The Song.

Adieu, farewell earths blisse,
This world vncertaine is,
Fond are lifes lustfull ioyes,

1548 his] the *Coll., Hasl.* 1549 with] by *Coll., Hasl.* 1554 pride, *Q.* 1555 Ice. *Q.* 1558 death, to *Coll., Hasl.* 1564 'fore *Coll., Hasl.* 1566 S.D. *Exit . . .*] *om. Q, Coll., Hasl., Gro.* 1568 errands *Coll., Hasl.*

Death proues them all but toyes,
None from his darts can flye;
I am sick, I must dye:
Lord, haue mercy on vs.
Rich men, trust not in wealth,
Gold cannot buy you health;
Phisick himselfe must fade.
All things to end are made,
The plague full swift goes bye;
I am sick, I must dye:
Lord, haue mercy on vs. |
Beauty is but a flowre, H 1v
Which wrinckles will deuoure,
Brightnesse falls from the ayre,
Queenes haue died yong and faire,
Dust hath closde Helens *eye.*
I am sick, I must dye:
Lord, haue mercy on vs.
Strength stoopes vnto the graue,
Wormes feed on Hector *braue,*
Swords may not fight with fate,
Earth still holds ope her gate.
Come, come, the bells do crye.
I am sick, I must dye:
Lord, haue mercy on vs.
Wit with his wantonnesse
Tasteth deaths bitternesse:
Hels executioner
Hath no eares for to heare
What vaine art can reply.
I am sick, I must dye:
Lord, haue mercy on vs.
Haste therefore eche degree,
To welcome destiny:

1585 *bye*] *Gro.*: *by Coll., Hasl.*: *hye Q.* 1588 *Beautie c.w.* 1595 *vnto*] *into Hasl.* 1599 *bells*] *Gro.*: *hells Q., Coll., Hasl.* 1605 *for*] *om. Hasl.*

Heauen is our heritage,
Earth but a players stage, |
H 2 *Mount wee vnto the sky.*
I am sick, I must dye:
Lord, haue mercy on vs.

Summer. Beshrew mee, but thy song hath moued mee.

Will Summer. Lord, haue mercy on vs, how lamentable 'tis!

Enter Vertumnus with Christmas and Backwinter.

Vertumnus. I haue dispatcht, my Lord; I haue brought you them you sent mee for.

Will Sũmer. What saist thou? hast thou made a good batch? I pray thee, giue mee a new loafe.

Summer. Christmas, how chaũce thou com'st not as the rest,
Accompanied with some musique, or some song?
A merry Carroll would haue grac't thee well;
Thy ancestors haue vs'd it heretofore.

Christmas. I, antiquity was the mother of ignorance: this latter world, that sees but with her spectacles, hath spied a pad in those sports more then they could.

Summer. What, is 't against thy conscience for to sing?

Christmas. No, nor to say, by my troth, if I may get a good bargaine.

Summer. Why, thou should'st spend, thou should'st not care to get.
Christmas is god of hospitality.

Christmas. So will he neuer be of good husbandry. I may say to you, there is many an old god that is now growne out of fashion. So is the god of hospitality.

Summer. What reason canst thou giue he should be left?

Christmas. No other reason, but that Gluttony is a sinne, & too many dunghils are infectious. A mans belly was

1617 'Lord, . . . us,' *Coll., Hasl.*: *Lord . . . vs! Gro.* 1631 No, not to *Hasl.* 1633–4 Why . . . hospitality.] *as verse, Coll., Hasl., Gro.*: *as prose, Q.* 1633 shonld'st spend *Q.*

not made for a poudring beefe tub: to feede the poore twelue dayes, & let them starue all the yeare after, would but stretch out the guts wider then they should be, & so make famine a bigger den in their bellies then he had before. I should kill an oxe, & haue some such fellow as *Milo* to come and eate it vp at a mouth-full; | Or, like the *Sybarites*, do H 2v nothing all one yeare but bid ghestes against the next yeare. The scraping of trenchers you thinke would put a man to no charges. It is not a hundreth pound a yeare would serue the scullions in dishclouts. My house stands vpon vaults; it will fall if it be ouer-loden with a multitude. Besides, haue you neuer read of a city that was vnderminde and destroyed by Mowles? So, say I keepe hospitalitie, and a whole faire of beggers bid me to dinner euery day, what with making legges, when they thanke me at their going away, and setling their wallets handsomly on their backes, they would shake as many lice on the ground as were able to vndermine my house, and vndoe me vtterly: It is their prayers would builde it againe, if it were ouerthrowne by this vermine, would it? I pray, who begun feasting and gourmandize first, but *Sardanapalus*, *Nero*, *Heliogabalus*, *Commodus*, tyrãts, whoremasters, vnthrifts? Some call them Emperours, but I respect no crownes but crownes in the purse. Any mã may weare a siluer crowne, that hath made a fray in Smithfield, & lost but a peece of his braine pan: And to tell you plaine, your golden crownes are little better in substance, and many times got after the same sort.

Summer. Grosse-headed sot, how light he makes of state!

Autumne. Who treadeth not on stars, when they are fallen?
Who talketh not of states, when they are dead?
A foole conceits no further then he sees,

1646 mouth-full. | Or *Q.* *Syharites Q*: Sybalites *Coll.* (*which Hasl. says is the reading of Q*). 1649 charges: it *Coll., Hasl.*: charges? It *Gro.* 1651 overladen *Coll., Hasl.* 1653 So say I, keep *Coll.*: So, say I, keep *Hasl., Gro.* hospitalitie and *Coll., Hasl.* 1654 day. What *Hasl.*: day: what *Gro.* 1658 It is] Is it *Coll., Hasl.* 1661 gormandis[ing] *Hasl.* 1662 vnthrifts. *Coll., Hasl.*: vnthrifts! *Gro.* 1665–6 pan. And *Q.*

He hath no scence of ought but what he feeles.

Christmas. I, I, such wise men as you come to begge at such fooles doores as we be.

Autumne. Thou shutst thy dore; how should we beg of thee?

No almes but thy sincke carries from thy house.

Wil Summer. And I can tell you, that's as plentifull almes for the plague as the sheriffes tub to them of Newgate.

Autumne. For feasts thou keepest none, cankers thou feedst:

The wormes will curse thy flesh another day,
Because it yeeldeth them no fatter pray.

Christmas. What wormes do another day I care not, but Ile be sworne vpon a whole Kilderkin of single Beere,
H 3 I will not | haue a worme-eaten nose like a Pursiuant, while I liue. Feasts are but puffing vp of the flesh, the purueyers for diseases; trauell, cost, time, ill spent. O, it were a trim thing to send, as the *Romanes* did, round about the world for prouision for one banquet. I must rigge ships to *Samos* for Peacocks, to *Paphos* for Pigeons, to *Austria* for Oysters, to *Phasis* for Phesants, to *Arabia* for Phœnixes, to *Meander* for Swans, to the *Orcades* for Geese, to *Phrigia* for Woodcocks, to *Malta* for Cranes, to the Isle of Man for Puffins, to *Ambracia* for Goates, to *Tartole* for Lampreys, to *Egypt* for Dates, to *Spaine* for Chestnuts; and all for one feast!

Wil Summer. O sir, you need not; you may buy them at London better cheape.

Christmas. *Liberalitas liberalitate perit;* loue me a little and loue me long: our feete must haue wherewithall to feede the stones; our backs walles of wooll to keepe out the colde that besiegeth our warme blood; our doores must haue barres, our dubblets must haue buttons. Item, for an olde sword to scrape the stones before the dore with, three halfe-pence: for stitching a wodden tanckard that was

1679 feast *Hasl.* 1686 diseases, trauell *Q.* time ill *Q.* 1690 Phœnixes *Q, Gro.* 1697 me little *Hasl.* 1702 with; three *Coll., Hasl.*: with: three *Gro.* 1703 halfe-pence for *Q, Coll., Hasl., Gro.*

burst—These Water-bearers will empty the conduit and a mans coffers at once. Not a Porter that brings a man a letter, but will haue his penny. I am afraid to keepe past one or two seruants, least, hungry knaues, they should rob me: and those I keepe, I warrant I do not pamper vp too lusty; I keepe them vnder with red Herring and poore Iohn all the yeare long. I haue dambd vp all my chimnies for feare (though I burne nothing but small cole) my house should be set on fire with the smoake. I will not deny, but once in a dozen yeare, when there is a great rot of sheepe, and I know not what to do with them, I keepe open house for all the beggers, in some of my out-yardes; marry, they must bring bread with them, I am no Baker.

Wil Summer. As good men as you, and haue thought no scorne to serue their prentiships on the pillory.

Summer. Winter, is this thy sonne? hear'st how he talkes?

Winter. I am his father, therefore may not speake, |
But otherwise I could excuse his fault. H 3v

Summer. Christmas, I tell thee plaine, thou art a snudge,
And wert not that we loue thy father well,
Thou shouldst haue felt what longs to Auarice.
It is the honor of Nobility
To keepe high dayes and solemne festiuals:
Then, to set their magnificence to view,
To frolick open with their fauorites,
And vse their neighbours with all curtesie;
When thou in huggar mugger spend'st thy wealth.
Amend thy maners, breathe thy rusty gold:
Bounty will win thee loue, when thou art old.

Wil Summer. I, that bounty would I faine meete, to borrow money of; he is fairely blest now a dayes that scapes blowes when he begges. *Verba dandi & reddendi*

1704 burst. These *Q, Coll., Hasl., Gro.* 1712 deny] dine *Hasl., Gro.* 1714 them; I *Hasl., Gro.* 1717–8 thought it no *Coll., Hasl.* 1730 wealth, *Gro.* 1733 would I] I would *Coll., Hasl.*

goe together in the Grammer rule: there is no giuing but with condition of restoring:

Ah, *Benedicite*,
Well is he hath no necessitie
Of gold ne of sustenance;
Slowe good hap comes by chance;
Flattery best fares;
Arts are but idle wares;
Faire words want giuing hãds;
The Lẽto begs that hath no lands;
Fie on thee, thou scuruy knaue,
That hast nought, and yet goest braue:
A prison be thy death bed,
Or be hangd all saue the head.

Summer. Back-winter, stand foorth.

Vertum. Stand forth, stãd forth; hold vp your head, speak out.

Back-winter. What, should I stand? or whether should I go?

Summer. Autumne accuseth thee of sundry crimes,
Which heere thou art to cleare, or to confesse.

Back-winter. With thee or Autumne haue I nought to do:
I would you were both hanged face to face.

Summer. Is this the reuerence that thou ow'st to vs?

Back-winter. Why not? what art thou? Shalt thou alwayes liue?

Autumne. It is the veriest Dog in Christendome.

Winter. That 's for he barkes at such a knaue as thou.

Back-winter. Would I could barke the sunne out of the sky;
Turne Moone and starres to frozen Meteors, |

1738–49 Ah . . . head.] *as verse, Coll., Hasl., Gro.: as prose, Q (all first words of lines l. c. except* Arts). 1740 ne] nor *Coll., Hasl.* 1747 goes *Coll., Hasl.* 1752 stand, or *Coll., Hasl., Gro.* whither *Coll., Hasl.* 1753 accuses *Coll., Hasl.* 1756 were both] both were *Coll., Hasl.* 1758 Shalt . . . liue ?] *So printed in Coll., Hasl., Gro.: as new line, Q.*

And make the Ocean a dry land of Yce; H 4
With tempest of my breath turne vp high trees,
On mountaines heape vp second mounts of snowe,
Which, melted into water, might fall downe,
As fell the deluge on the former world.
I hate the ayre, the fire, the Spring, the yeare,
And what so e're brings mankinde any good.
O that my lookes were lightning to blast fruites!
Would I with thunder presently might dye,
So I might speake in thunder, to slay men.
Earth, if I cannot iniure thee enough,
Ile bite thee with my teeth, Ile scratch thee thus;
Ile beate downe the partition with my heeles,
Which, as a mud-vault, seuers hell and thee.
Spirits, come vp; 'tis I that knock for you,
One that enuies the world farre more then you:
Come vp in millions; millions are to few
To execute the malice I intend.
Summer. *O scelus inauditum, O vox damnatorum!*
Not raging *Hæcuba*, whose hollow eyes
Gaue sucke to fiftie sorrowes at one time,
That midwife to so many murders was,
Vsde halfe the execrations that thou doost.
Back-winter. More I wil vse, if more I may preuaile:
Back-winter comes but seldome foorth abroad,
But when he comes, he pincheth to the proofe;
Winter is milde, his sonne is rough and sterne.
Ouid could well write of my tyrranny,
When he was banisht to the frozen Zoane.
Summer. And banisht be thou frō my fertile bounds.
Winter, imprison him in thy darke Cell,
Or, with the windes, in bellowing caues of brasse,
Let sterne *Hippotades* locke him vp safe,
Ne're to peepe foorth, but when thou, faint and weake,
Want'st him to ayde thee in thy regiment.

1776 Which] That *Coll., Hasl.* 1779 to[o] *Gro.* 1795 *Hippotades*] *Coll. conj., Hasl., Gro.*: *Hipporiatos Q.*

Back-winter. I will peepe foorth, thy kingdome to supplant: |
H 4v My father I will quickly freeze to death,
And then sole Monarch will I sit, and thinke,
How I may banish thee, as thou doost me.
Winter. I see my downefall written in his browes:
Conuay him hence to his assigned hell.
Fathers are giuen to loue their sonnes too well.

[*Exit Back-winter.*]

Wil Summer. No, by my troth, nor mothers neither: I am sure I could neuer finde it. This *Back-winter* playes a rayling part to no purpose; my small learning findes no reason for it, except as a Back-winter or an after winter is more raging tempestuous and violent then the beginning of Winter, so he brings him in stamping and raging as if he were madde, when his father is a iolly milde quiet olde man, and stands still and does nothing. The court accepts of your meaning; you might haue writ in the margent of your play-booke, Let there be a fewe rushes laide in the place where *Back-winter* shall tumble, for feare of raying his cloathes: or set downe, Enter *Back-winter,* with his boy bringing a brush after him, to take off the dust if need require. But you will ne're haue any ward-robe wit while you liue. I pray you holde the booke well, we be not *non plus* in the latter end of the play.

Summer. This is the last stroke my toungs clock must strike,
My last will, which I will that you performe:
My crowne I haue disposde already of.
Item, I giue my withered flowers and herbes
Vnto dead corses, for to decke them with;

1804 S. D. *Exit Back-winter.*] *Coll., Hasl., Gro.*: *om. Q.* 1813 nothing.—The *Gro.* meaning. You *Coll., Hasl.*: meaning.—You *Gro.* 1814 written *Coll., Hasl.* margin *Coll., Hasl.* 1820 well; we *Coll.*: well; [that] we *Hasl.*: well [that] we *Gro.* *nonplus Q*: *non-plus Coll.*

My shady walkes to great mens seruitors,
Who in their masters shadowes walke secure;
My pleasant open ayre, and fragrant smels,
To Croyden and the grounds abutting round;
My heate and warmth to toyling labourers,
My long dayes to bondmen and prisoners,
My short nights to young married soules,
My drought and thirst to drunkards quenchlesse throates,
My fruites to *Autumne*, my adopted heire,
My murmuring springs, musicians of sweete sleepe,
To murmuring male-contents, with their well tun'de cares,
Channel'd in a sweete falling quaterzaine, I 1
Do lull their eares asleepe, listning themselues.
And finally; O words, now clense your course,
Vnto *Eliza*, that most sacred Dame,
Whom none but Saints and Angels ought to name,
All my faire dayes remaining I bequeath,
To waite vpon her till she be returnd.
Autumne, I charge thee, when that I am dead,
Be prest and seruiceable at her beck,
Present her with thy goodliest ripened fruites,
Vnclothe no Arbors where she euer sate,
Touch not a tree thou thinkst she may passe by.
And, Winter, with thy wrythen frostie face,
Smoothe vp thy visage, when thou lookst on her;
Thou neuer lookst on such bright maiestie:
A charmed circle draw about her court,
Wherein warme dayes may daunce, & no cold come;
On seas let winds make warre, not vexe her rest,
Quiet inclose her bed, thought flye her brest.
Ah, gracious Queene, though Summer pine away,
Yet let thy flourishing stand at a stay;
First droupe this vniuersals aged frame,

1833 night *Coll.* My short night[s] to young [un]married souls *Hazl.*: My short[est] nights to young [new] married soules *Gro.* 1837 To malcontents [who], with their well-tun'd ears, *Hazl.*: To murmuring male-contents, whose well tun'd cares, *Gro.* 1839 eares] cares *Hazl.* 1840 finally,—O . . . course!—*Gro.*

E're any malady thy strength should tame:
Heauen raise vp pillers to vphold thy hand,
Peace may haue still his temple in thy land.
Loe, I haue said; this is the totall summe.
Autumne and Winter, on your faithfulnesse
For the performance I do firmely builde.
Farewell, my friends; Summer bids you farewell,
Archers, and bowlers, all my followers,
Adieu, and dwell with desolation;
Silence must be your masters mansion:
Slow marching thus, discend I to the feends.
Weepe, heauens, mourne, earth, here Summer ends.

Heere the Satyres and Wood-nimphes carry him out, singing as he came in.

1v The Song.

Autumne hath all the Summers fruitefull treasure;
Gone is our sport, fled is poore Croydens *pleasure:*
Short dayes, sharpe dayes, long nights come on a pace,
Ah, who shall hide vs from the Winters face?
Colde dooth increase, the sicknesse will not cease,
And here we lye, God knowes, with little ease:
From winter, plague, & pestilence, good Lord, deliuer vs.

London dooth mourne, Lambith is quite forlorne,
Trades cry, Woe worth that euer they were borne:
The want of Terme is towne and Cities harme;
Close chambers we do want, to keepe vs warme,
Long banished must we liue from our friends:
This lowe built house will bring vs to our ends.
From winter, plague, & pestilence, good Lord, deliuer vs.

Wil Summer. How is't? how is't? you that be of the grauer sort, do you thinke these youths worthy of a *Plaudite* for praying for the Queene, and singing of the Letany?

1870 marching thus descend *Coll.*: marching, thus descend *Hasl.* *Winter Gro.* 1879 *monrne Q.* 1888 singing the *Coll., Hasl.*

they are poore fellowes I must needes say, and haue bestowed great labour in sowing leaues, and grasse, and strawe, and mosse vpon cast suites. You may do well to warme your hands with clapping, before you go to bed, and send them to the tauerne with merry hearts. Here is a pretty boy comes with an Epilogue, to get him audacity. I pray you sit still a little, and heare him say his lesson without booke. It is a good boy; be not afraide; turne thy face to my Lord. Thou and I will play at poutch to morrow morning for a breakfast. Come and sit on my knee, and Ile daunce thee, if thou canst not indure to stand. | *Enter a little boy with an Epilogue*

The Epilogue. [2]

VLisses, a Dwarffe, and the prolocutor for the *Græcians*, gaue me leaue, that am a Pigmee, to doe an Embassage to you from the Cranes: Gentlemen, (for Kings are no better,) certaine humble Animals, called our Actors, commend them vnto you; who, what offence they haue committed I know not (except it be in purloyning some houres out of times treasury, that might haue beene better imployde), but by me (the agent for their imperfections) they humbly craue pardon, if happily some of their termes haue trodde awrye, or their tongues stumbled vnwittingly on any mans content. In much Corne is some Cockle; in a heape of coyne heere and there a peece of Copper; wit hath his dregs as well as wine; words their waste, Inke his blots, euery speech his Parenthesis; Poetical fury, as well Crabbes as Sweetings for his Summer fruites. *Nemo sapit omnibus horis.* Their folly is deceased, their feare is yet liuing. Nothing can kill an Asse but colde: colde

[1] *Enter . . . Epilogue.*] *As* S. D. *after* hearts. *Coll., Hasl., Gro.*

1890 sewing *Coll., Hasl.* 1894–5 Epilogue: to get him audacity, I *Gro.* 1898 for breakfast *Coll., Hasl.* 1908 imployde; but *Q.* for] of *Coll., Hasl.* 1909 haply *Coll., Hasl.*

entertainement, discouraging scoffes, authorized disgraces, may kill a whole litter of young Asses of them heere at once, that haue traueld thus farre in impudence, onely in hope to sit a sunning in your smiles. The Romanes dedicated a Temple to the feuer quartane, thinking it some great God, because it shooke them so: and another, to Ill fortune in *Exquilliis*, a Mountaine in Roome, that it should not plague them at Cardes and Dice. Your Graces frownes are to them shaking feuers, your least disfauours the greatest ill fortune that may betide them. They can builde no Temples, but themselues and their best indeuours, with all prostrate reuerence, they here dedicate and offer vp wholy to your seruice. *Sis bonus, O, fælixque tuis.* To make the gods merry, the cœlestiall clowne *Vulcan* tun'de his polt foote to the measures of *Apolloes* Lute, and
I 2v daunst a limping Gallyard in *Ioues* starrie hall. | To make you merry, that are the Gods of Art and guides vnto heauen, a number of rude *Vulcans*, vnweldy speakers, hammer-headed clownes (for so it pleaseth them in modestie to name themselues) haue set their deformities to view, as it were in a daunce here before you. Beare with their wants, lull melancholie asleepe with their absurdities, and expect hereafter better fruites of their industrie. Little creatures often terrifie great beasts: the Elephant flyeth from a Ramme, the Lyon from a Cock and from fire, the Crocodile from all Sea-fish, the Whale from the noyse of parched bones; light toyes chase great cares. The great foole *Toy* hath marde the play: Good night, Gentlemen; I go.

[*Let him be carryed away.*

Wil Summer. Is't true, Iackanapes, doo you serue me so? As sure as this coate is too short for me, all the Points of your hoase for this are condemnde to my pocket,

1920 haue] hath *Coll., Hazl.* 1924 *in Gro.* 1934 are gods *Coll., Hazl.* 1944 cares: the *Coll., Hazl.*: cares.—The *Gro.* 1945 S. D. *Let . . . away.*] *As* S. D. *Coll., Hazl., Gro.*: *as part of text Q, which reads* I go, let him be carryed away.

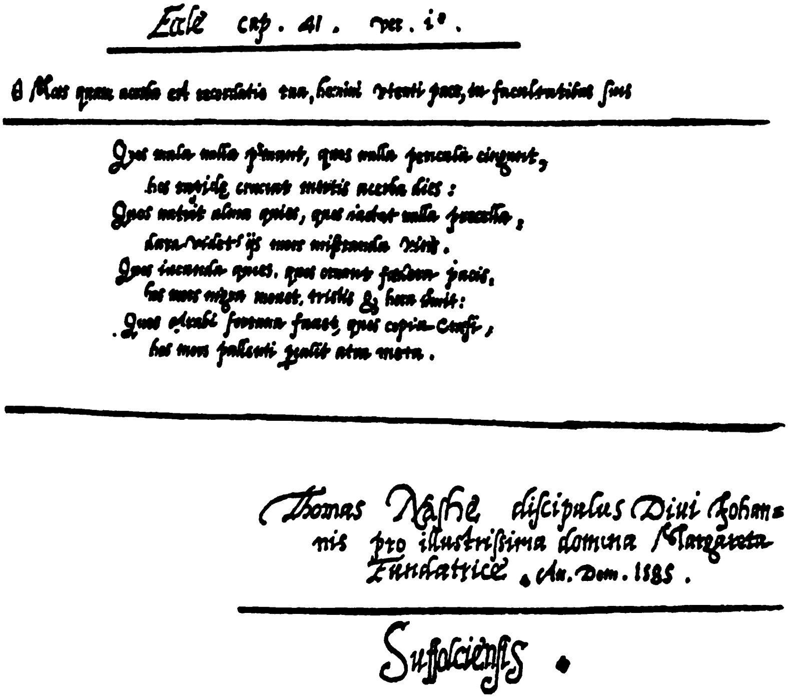
if you and I e're play at spanne Counter more. *Valete, spectatores;* pay for this sport with a *Plaudite*, and the next time the winde blowes from this corner, we will make you ten times as merry.

Barbarus hic ego sum, quia non
intelligor vlli.

FINIS.

SHORTER PIECES

LATIN VERSES
ON ECCLESIASTICUS 41. 1.



These verses are found ninth among a collection of eleven sets of verses on the same subject in the State Papers at the Record Office (Dom. Add. Eliz. vol. 29, f. 167[1]). Each poem is carefully written on one leaf of a doubled sheet of

[1] The eleven sets of verses occupy ff. 151–172, alternate leaves being blank. At the time when these papers were calendared, the numbering of the folios was different, the verses by Nashe then being on f. 82; the order of the several pieces was, however, the same as at present. There is nothing to indicate whether this order has any significance: with one exception the names are placed alphabetically.

paper, and, as all are in different hands, it may, I think, be concluded that each is in the writing of its composer.

The signatures affixed to the eleven poems are as follows (in most cases the author's county is added):—

1. Joannes Archer. 2. Guilielmus Bailie, Salopiensis. 3. Joannes Conierus, dunelmensis. 4. Lionel Ducket. 5. Gulielmus Harris. 6. Robertus Mills, Lincolniensis. 7. Rodolphus Smithe, Lincolniensis. 8. Guilielmus Mottershed, Northamptoniensis. 9. Thomas Nashe, Suffolciensis. 10. Guilielmus Orwell, Norfolciensis. 11. Thomas Wilsonus, Norfolciensis.

The facsimile here given is much reduced: the dimensions of the original writing, i. e. those of the smallest rectangle which would contain it with two sides parallel to its lines, are $6\frac{1}{4}$ inches in height by $7\frac{3}{4}$ in width. The length of Nashe's signature, including flourishes, is $2_{\frac{1}{16}}$ inches. The leaf, or half sheet, of paper on which the poem is written is 12 by 8 inches.

Eccle. cap. 41. ver. 1°.

O Mors quam acerba est recordatio tua, homini vtenti pace, in facultatibus suis.

Quos mala nulla *pre*munt, quos nulla pericula cingunt,
hos rapide cruciat mortis acerba dies:
Quos nutrit alma quies, quos iactat nulla procella,
dura videt*ur* ijs mors miseranda viris.
Quos iucunda quies, quos ornant fœdera pacis,
hos mors nigra mouet, tristis & hora p*re*mit:
Quos Arabi fortuna fauet, quos copia Crœsi,
hos mors pallenti p*er*culit atra metu.

Thomas Nashe discipulus Diui Iohannis, pro illustrissima domina Margareta Fundatrice. An. Dom. 1585.

Suffolciensis.

PREFACE TO R. GREENE'S 'MENAPHON'

Entry in the Stationers' Register:

23° die Augusti [1589] /
Sampson Clerke / Entred for his Copie, menophon Camillus allarum to slumberinge Ephewes in his melancholy cell at Silexedria. / Vnder th[e h]andes of Master doctour Staller and bothe the Wardens. . . . . vj[d] /
(*S. R.*, ed. Arber, II. 529.)

Editions: (1) *Early:*

1589. MENAPHON | Camillas alarum to | ſlumbering Euphues, in his | *melancholie Cell at Si-*|lexedra. | *VVherein are deciphered the variable effects* | of Fortune, the wonders of Loue, the tri-|*umphes of inconſtant Time.* | Diſplaying in ſundrie conceipted paſsions (figu-|*red in a continuate Hiſtorie*) *the Trophees that* | Vertue carrieth triumphant, maugre | the wrath of Enuie, or the reſo-|lution of Fortune. A worke worthie the youngeſt eares | *for pleaſure, or the graueſt cenſures* | *for principles.* | Robertus Greene in Artibus magiſter. | *Omne tulit punctum.* | [ornament] | *LONDON* | *Printed by T. O. for Sampſon Clarke,* | and are to be ſold behinde the Roy-|all Exchange. 1589.

No colophon. Quarto. Not paged.

Collation: *[2], **[4], A-K[4], L[2]. (*1) Title, *v.* blank. *2 'To the right Worshipfull and ver-*tuous Ladie, the Ladie Hales, wife to the late*

deceased Sir Iames Hales . . .' *Rom. and Ital.* *2ᵛ 'To the Gentlemen Rea-*ders, health.*' *Ital. and Rom.* ** 'To the Gentlemen Students *of both Vniuersities.*' *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. To the Gentlemen | Students. [A 3 wanting.] (A 4) '☙ In laudem Authoris, *Distichon amoris.*' *Ital. and Rom.* (*Signed*) HENRIE VPCHEAR Gentleman. A 4ᵛ '☙ Thomas Brabine Gent. *in praise of the Author.*' *Ital. and Rom. B.* '*Arcadia.* (in place of R-T.) The reports of the Shepheards.' *B. L., Rom., and Ital.* R-T. The reports of the | Shepheards.

Signatures are in Black Letter with Arabic numerals except A, A 2, which are in Roman, and B, F, I 2, I 3, Italic. Fourth leaves not signed.

Catch-words: *2. To 2*1. I 2*2. of 2*3. howers 2*4. hunger A 1. (ma-)ny, A 2. of B 1. *When* C 1. then D 1. was E 1. thee, F 1. *Meli-*(*certus*) G 1. (o-)rators H 1. (renow-)med I 1. I K 1. is L 1. stiffe (Those of sheets *, 2*, and A in Roman, those of B 1, F 1, in Italic, the rest in Black Letter.)

Copy used: That in the British Museum (95. b. 18. (5.)), which wants A 3.

1599. [See the 'List of the Works of Robert Greene' by J. H[aslewood]. in Brydges' *Censura Literaria*, vol. viii, p. 386.]

I cannot trace any copy of this edition, nor have I been able to discover from whence Haslewood took the date. An imperfect copy in the Library of Mrs. Christie-Miller at Britwell Court may possibly belong to this edition, though it is of course impossible to say with certainty that it does so. It is in quarto, without pagination, and wants all before B 1, and all after K 3ᵛ.

Begins on *B* 'Greenes Arcadia | The reports of the Shepheards.' *B. L., Rom., and Ital.* R-T. Greenes Arcadia.

Catch-words: B 1. *When* C 1. mildlie D 1. was E 1. thee, F 1. *Meli-*(*certus*) G 1. (O-)rators H 1. (renow-)med I 1. might K 1. is

It will be seen that in arrangement and catch-words there is a general correspondence with the edition of 1589, while the running-title is the same as that of 1610. It thus seems that it may well belong to an edition intermediate between these two, and as an imperfect copy of the work at Trinity College, Cambridge, also, apparently, of about this date, corresponds more closely with the 1610 edition, I presume that this was the earlier of the two and place it here.

1605. [See *Censura Literaria*, as above.]

As in the case of the edition of 1599, I can trace no copy, and cannot learn what is the ultimate authority for the date given. An imperfect copy of the work at Trinity College, Cambridge, may possibly belong to this edition, and is accordingly described here. It is a quarto, not paged, running to L 4 in fours: it wants all before B 1, also E 4, F 1.

(T.) Begins on B. 'and set before our eyes a more perfect methode of studie.' (p. 317 l. 30 in the present edition.) *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. *To the Gentlemen* | *Students.* (on B 1ᵛ–B 2 *To the Gentlemen.* | *Students.*) (B 4)ᵛ verses signed 'Henry Vpcher.' C. '*Greenes Arcadia.* (as R-T.) The reports of the Shepheards.' *B. L., Rom., and Ital.* R-T. *Greenes Arcadia.* (frequently with a tailed *a* and no stop.)

Signatures are in Black Letter, with Arabic numerals, except those of sheet B and G 2, K 2 and L 2, in which the letter is Roman. Fourth leaves are not signed.

Catch-words: B 1. vnlearned B 2. deeme B 3. least C 1. When C 2ᵛ. (Vo-)taries D 1. but E 1. A [F 1. wanting] G 1. his G 2ᵛ. (ring-)lea-(der) H 1. ignorance H 2ᵛ. warrant H 3. Farewell I 1. (Hes-)peria, K 1. As L 1. both (Those of sheet B and of C 1, H 3, I 1, and K 1 in Roman, others in Black Letter.)

It will be seen that the running-title of the Epistle in this copy resembles that of 1589 in extending over two pages instead of being repeated on every page as in 1610 and 1616, while, on the other hand, the running-title of the work itself agrees with that of 1610. In general arrangement and in catch-words T agrees with 1610, to which edition it seems altogether to be more closely related than to 1589[1]. The readings of what remains of the Epistle agree generally with the later, but occasionally with the earlier edition[2].

Thus, although we have hardly sufficient evidence to settle the matter positively, it is, I think, not unreasonable to conclude that in date this imperfect copy comes between 1589 and 1610, and that it should be placed after the Britwell copy in view of the closer affinity which the latter has to 1589. As to the subsidiary question of whether it is on the direct line of descent between 1589 and 1610 I can say

[1] It may be remarked that the editions of 1610 and 1616, so far at least as the Epistle is concerned, agree page for page and generally line for line, while T also generally agrees with them line for line, but not page for page. It might be expected that from the cases in which the editions disagree in this respect we might deduce something as to their relationship, but it seems impossible to do so. The fact that in the concluding paragraph the line-endings of T agree with 1616 against 1610 might suggest that T is really 1634, but this is more than balanced by cases in which T agrees with 1610 against 1616. The edition of 1589 is not divided into paragraphs, and therefore naturally differs in line-division from the later ones.

[2] The readings which seem of most importance in determining the relationship of the editions are those noted at p. 318, ll. 18, 19, 20, p. 320, ll. 2, 6, 7, 11, p. 322, ll. 1–2, 27, p. 324, l. 10.

nothing. It seems to have been the general practice to print each edition of a book from the one immediately preceding, and the great majority of the readings accord perfectly with the theory that this was done in the present instance. On the other hand, there are two or three cases[1] of 1589 and 1610 agreeing in a reading against T, though it cannot be said that any of them are of much importance. This of course suggests that T may have been an offshoot from an edition intermediate between the others.

1610. GREENES | ARCADIA. | *OR* | MENAPHON: CAMIL-|laes Alarum to ſlumber Eu-|phues in his Melancholy | Cell at Silexedra. | Wherein are deſciphered, the variable effects | of Fortune, the wonders of Loue, the tri-|umphs of inconſtant Time. | A worke worthy the yongeſt eares for pleaſure, | or the graueſt cenſures for principles. | *By* ROBERTVS GREENR, *in Arti-|bus Magiſter.* | Omne tulit punctum. | [device: Smethwick's, smew with scroll bearing 'wick' in its bill, motto NON ALTVM PETO . . I . S.] | *LONDON* | Printed for *Iohn Smethwicke*, and are to be ſold at his Shop | in Saint *Dunſtanes* Church-yard vnder the Diall, | in Fleeteſtreete. 1610.

No colophon. Quarto. Not paged.

Collation: A-L⁴. (A1) Title, *v.* blank. A 2 'TO THE GETLEMEN STVDENTS . . .' *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. *To the Gentlemen Students.* (B 4)ᵛ verses signed 'Henry Vpcher.' C 'The reports of the Shepheards.' *B. L., Rom., and Ital.* R-T. Greenes Arcadia.

Signatures are in Black Letter, with Arabic numerals, except those of sheets A, B, and C 1, E 1, G 2, K 1, K 2, L 2, which have Roman letters. Fourth leaves are not signed.

Catch-words: A 2. their A 3. But A 4. French B 1. Latine, B 2. (discoue-)red B 3. praise, C 1. When C 2ᵛ. (Vo-)taries D 1. but E 1. A F 1. (ex-)cellency G 1. his G 2ᵛ. (Ring-)lea-(der) H 1. ignorance H 2ᵛ. warrant H 3. Farewell I 1. (Hes-)peria K 1. As L 1. both (Those of sheets A, B, and of C 1, E 1, H 3, I 1, and K 1 in Roman, others in Black Letter.)

Copy used: That in the British Museum (95. b. 15.).

[1] See the collation notes on p. 321, ll. 22, 23, p. 322, l. 8.

1616. GREENES | ARCADIA, | *OR* | MENAPHON: CA-|MILLAES Alarum to ſlumber EV-|PHVES in his Melancholy Cell at | SILEXEDRA. | *Wherein are deſcyphered, the variable effects of* | FORTVNE, the wonders of LOVE, the | triumphs of inconſtant TIME. | A worke, worthy the yongeſt eares for pleaſure, | OR, | *The graueſt cenſures for principles.* | By ROBERTVS GREENE, in Artibus Magiſter. | *Omne tulit punctum.* | — | [device as in 1610.] | — | *LONDON* | Printed by *W. Stansby* for *I. Smethwicke*, and are to be ſold | at his Shop in *S. Dunſtanes* Church-yard vnder the | Dyall, in Fleet-ſtreet. 1616.

No colophon. Quarto. Not paged.

A–L^4. (A 1) Title, *v.* blank. A 2 'TO THE GENTLEMEN STVDENTS...' *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. *To the Gentlemen Students.* (B 4)^v verses signed 'Henry Vpcher.' C 'The reports of the Shepheards.' *B.L., Rom., and Ital.* R-T. Greenes Arcadia.

Signatures as in the edition of 1610, but E3, H3, and I are Roman.

Catch-words: As in the edition of 1610 (so far as given), except C 2^v. such F 1. (ex-)cellency; G 2^v. (Ring-)leader H 2^v. war-(rant) H 3 Fare-(well) (The last in Roman.)

Copy used: That in the British Museum (C. 40. e. 5).

1634. [See *Censura Literaria*, vol. viii, p. 386.]

I have been unable to trace any copy of this edition or to learn anything about it [1].

(2) *Modern Editions:*

1808. Censura Literaria . . . [Edited by (Sir) S. E. Brydges] . . . London: for Longman, Hurst, &c. 1805–9. Vol. vii, pp. 152–69.

In the original spelling. Edited by J. H[aslewood]. from the edition of 1616. There are a few notes. The Epistle alone is printed in full, some account of the rest of the work, with extracts, being given at pp. 265–72.

1815. Archaica. Containing a Reprint of Scarce Old English Prose Tracts. With Prefaces . . . by Sir E.

[1] The statement in Mr. Hazlitt's *Handbook*, p. 238, that it was reprinted in *Archaica* is an error, if, indeed, it is intended to refer to this edition, as it appears to do, and not to the work generally.

Brydges, . . . London: Longman, Hurst, &c. Vol. i, (Part the Second).

In modern spelling from the edition of 1616. The whole work.

1878. The English Scholar's Library of Old and Modern Works. No. 12. Robert Greene, M.A. Menaphon.

In the original spelling. Edited by Prof. E. Arber from the edition of 1589. The copy used is not stated. The part of the Epistle which is wanting in the copy of -89 at the British Museum corresponds closely with -10 and may be from this edition. A Limited Library Edition of the same was published in 1880, and the work has since been reissued by Messrs. Constable.

1881–3. The Life and Complete Works . . . of Robert Greene . . . edited by A. B. Grosart. Vol. vi, pp. 9–28.

In the original spelling, from the copy of -89 in the British Museum, except the last page of the Epistle, which is apparently from -10.

1883–4 (Gro.) The Complete Works of Thomas Nashe . . . edited by A. B. Grosart. Vol. i, pp. xix–xxxviii.

The Epistle alone, reprinted from the Works of Greene.

1904 (Smith) Elizabethan Critical Essays . . . edited . . . by G. Gregory Smith. Oxford: at the Clarendon Press. Vol. i, pp. 307–320.

In the original spelling, with modern punctuation, from the copy of -89 at the British Museum, the part there wanting being supplied from -10. The Epistle alone. There are six pages of notes.

1905. (The present edition.)

From the copy of -10 at the British Museum with collations from -89 and from the imperfect copy at Trinity College, Cambridge. The edition of 1616 has also been collated in every case where a difference is recorded between the others, but variations of reading found in this edition alone are generally ignored. The text of the Epistle, at least as printed in 1589, being unusually free from corruption, it has seldom been necessary to give readings from modern editions, which introduce few, if any, emendations.

Note on the Editions:

The question of the date of the original publication

of *Menaphon* will be referred to in the notes, but I may say here that there seems to me to be little, if any, reason for thinking it to have appeared earlier than 1589; while even if there was, as has been supposed, an edition in 1587, it is unlikely that it contained the Epistle by Nashe, and certain that it did not contain it in the form in which we now have it[1]. As in any case no copy is known to exist it is not necessary to discuss the point further at present.

Of the six editions which are stated to have appeared from 1589 to 1634 inclusive[2], three, namely those of 1589, 1610, and 1616, are represented by copies in the British Museum, but of the supposed editions of 1599, 1605, and 1634 I have been able to learn nothing. There are however at Britwell Court and at Trinity College, Cambridge, two imperfect copies neither of which belongs to an edition otherwise known to me. These I have already described, giving at the same time my reasons for believing that they should be placed between those of 1589 and 1610. They may thus represent the editions of 1599 and 1605, though it is of course impossible to say that they certainly do so, for we have no means of knowing that the traditional list of editions, even if accurate so far as it goes, is complete.

The editions of 1610 and 1616 differ from that of 1589 in the following respects:

(1) The title is altered and part of the wording of the title-page is omitted.

(2) The dedication and the author's epistle to the

[1] See J. Petheram's Introduction to his reprint of *An Almond for a Parrat*, 1846, pp. iv–viii. The chief arguments against the Epistle having appeared in 1587 are the references to '*Martin*' and to '*Tho. Newton* with his *Leyland*' (cf. p. 315, l. 2, and p. 320, l. 28). The entry in the Stationers' Register in 1589 is by itself almost conclusive.

[2] The same list of editions, namely 1587, 1589, 1599, 1605, 1610, 1616, and 1634, in some cases with doubt or denial of the first, is given by J. Haslewood in the *Censura Literaria*, vol. viii, p. 386, in A. à Wood's *Fasti Oxon.*, ed. Bliss, i. 247, Watt's *Bibl. Brit.*, Lowndes' *Bibl. Manual*, Mr. Hazlitt's *Handbook*, Greene, *Dr. Wks.*, ed. Dyce, *The Dictionary of National Biography*, and elsewhere. In no case does it appear that the writer had himself seen the editions of 1599, 1605, or 1634, and I am quite unable to learn on what authority they rest in the first instance.

gentlemen readers are omitted, as are also the verses by 'Thomas Brabine.'

(3) There are a few variations in reading.

The change in title, that is, the addition of the head-title of the work itself, namely 'Arcadia,' to the original 'Menaphon,' may, I think, be attributed to a desire to profit by the popularity of Sidney's *Arcadia*, which was first published in 1590, though it had no doubt been known in literary circles many years before. The omission of part of the wording of the title-page was perhaps due to the printer's wish to use his device, for which the full wording of the original would hardly have given room, while that of the dedication, epistle to the readers, and the verses by 'Brabine' may have been dictated by the necessity or convenience of getting the preliminary matter into a certain fixed number of pages, this occupying in the later editions only eight leaves as against ten in the earlier one.

It is, I think, impossible to claim that such changes as these show any revision on the part of the author or of any person instructed by him: they may well be due to the printer alone. But when we come to the work itself, or rather to Nashe's preface to it, with which alone I am concerned, we find certain variations of reading, which, though in no case are they of much importance, possibly indicate a certain amount of deliberate correction. Whether they actually do so or not is a question which must be answered, or at least discussed, before it can be decided which edition should form the basis of a reprint.

It is frequently a difficult matter to say whether a change in the text of a book is accidental or not and whether, if intentional, it is due to the author or to the printer, and it is especially difficult when the changes are few in number as here, and when the work, at least in the later editions, is far from carefully printed. In the present case the problem is complicated by the fact that we possess no perfect copy of an edition which shows these variations until some ten

years after the author's death. If we had the intermediate editions and could say at what date the changes first appeared it would obviously be of great assistance in deciding the point, for if they could be found in an edition issued when the author was still living, say in that of 1599, it would add probability to the theory that he was responsible for them: if they appeared in the first edition published after his death, we should have less ground for connecting them with him, though it could indeed be argued that the printer might have used a copy of a former edition corrected by him; while if they did not appear until still later we could say, with some approach to certainty, that he had nothing to do with them.

The first of the two imperfect copies which I place between 1589 and 1610 gives us no help at all in the matter, for in it the Epistle of Nashe is entirely wanting. The second, if I am right in the position which I assign to it, supports to some extent the contention that these changes in the later editions are due to revision on the part of the author, for it shows that the corrections, or some of them at least, were earlier than 1610. Unfortunately however all the more important variations occur in the early part of the Epistle, which is wanting in this copy.

We are thus driven to rely chiefly on the nature of the changes themselves. These can of course be seen in the collation-notes, but it seems useful to call attention here to some of the more important. First come two cases of words added[1]:

P. 312, ll. 7–8 deepe read Grammarians –89: deep read Schoolemen or Grammarians –10.

P. 314, ll. 13–4 vnexperienst punies –89: vnexperienced and illiterated Punies –10.

Besides these there are a few other changes which can hardly be considered as accidental:

[1] The insertion of the word 'all' at p. 312, l. 13 is, I think, probably accidental.

P. 313, l. 19 indifference –89: difference –10.

P. 315, l. 10 oppose –89: expose –10.

P. 318, ll. 18–9 be –89: had beene T, –10.

P. 318, l. 19 take –89: tooke T, –10.

P. 321, l. 15 in whole or in a parte –89: in whole or in part T, –10.

The correction of *colona* to *colonia* at p. 317, l. 23 is balanced by the curious change of *tandem aliquando* at p. 312, l. 31 to the apparently meaningless *tanquam aliquando*, a change which it seems equally difficult to attribute to a person ignorant of Latin and to one acquainted with it.

I cannot maintain that the text gains much, if it gains at all, by these changes, though 'difference' at least seems certainly to be an improvement upon the word for which it was substituted, but to assume that they are merely compositors' corrections seems somewhat daring. It is surely unlikely that under ordinary circumstances a printer would insert words into a text where there is no apparent omission—words, that is, which make sense and are not traceable to his eye catching some other phrase of the copy. Such insertions must, it seems to me, be considered as deliberate corrections, and, in the absence of evidence to the contrary, must be attributed to the author of the work. In this particular case it might indeed be suggested that, the piece in question being merely a preface, it is not impossible that the author of the book itself, in touching up his work preparatory to a new edition, might have made a few slight changes even in a part which was not his own, but we must remember that Greene died three years after the publication of the first edition, while Nashe lived some eight years longer, and further that so far as we know no second edition was published in Greene's lifetime nor for several years after his death.

All things considered it seemed better to print from the edition of 1610, in the absence of those of 1599 and 1605. At any rate this may be said in favour of so doing, that, while there are already two easily accessible reprints of the

edition of 1589, that of 1610 has never been made the basis of a text.

I feel that I owe some apology to readers for the length to which this introductory note has extended, especially as the part of *Menaphon* with which I have to do is itself short and but a small portion of the whole, and as, after all, I have not been able to arrive at any very definite results. I can only plead in excuse that there were questions which it was impossible to discuss without treating the work as a whole, and that the bibliography of *Menaphon* is, owing to the great rarity of copies of the early editions, by no means easy to work out, and, so far as I am aware, no attempt had ever been made to deal with it. I was obliged for my own satisfaction to go into the matter in some detail, and having done so and arrived at certain conclusions, I was unwilling to state these without, so far as was possible, giving others the means of criticizing them.

TO THE GENTLEMEN STVDENTS OF BOTH VNIVERSITIES.

CVrteous and wise, whose iudgements (not entangled with enuie) enlarge the deserts of the learned by your liberall censures; vouchsafe to welcome your Scholler-like Shepheard with such Vniuersity entertainment as either the nature of your bounty or the custome of your common ciuility may affoord. To you he appeales that knew him *ab extrema pueritia*, whose *placet* he accounts the *plaudite* of his paines; thinking his day-labour was not altogether lauisht *sine linea*, if there bee any thing at al in it that doth *olere Atticum* in your estimate. I am not ignorant how eloquent our gowned age is grown of late; so that euery mechanicall mate abhorreth the English he was borne too, and plucks, with a solemne periphrasis, his *vt vales* from the inke-horne: which I impute, not so much to the perfection of Arts, as to the seruile imitation of vaine glorious Tragedians, who contend not so seriously to excell in action, as to embowell the cloudes in a speech of comparison, thinking themselues more then initiated in Poets immortality, if they but once get *Boreas* by the beard and the heauenly Bull by the deaw-lap. But heerein I cannot so fully bequeath them to folly, as their ideot Art-masters, that intrude themselues to our eares as the Alcumists of eloquence, who (mounted on the stage of arrogance) thinke to out-braue better pennes with the swelling bumbast of bragging blanke verse. Indeede it may bee the ingrafted ouerflow of some kil-cow conceit,

1 GETLEMEN *10*. 13 at] of *89*. 16 abhorres *89*. 19 vainglorious *89*: vaine-glorious *16*. 22 than (*so throughout*) *89*. 29 of a bragging *89*.

A 2v that ouercloyeth | their imagination with a more then drunken resolution, being not extemporall in the inuention of any other meanes to vent their manhoode, commits the disgestion of their cholericke incumbrances to the spacious volubilitie of a drumming decasillabon. Mongst this kind of men that repose eternitie in the mouth of a Player, I can but ingrosse some deep read Schoolemen or Grammarians, who, hauing no more learning in their skull then will serue to take vp a commoditie, nor Art in their braine then was nourished in a seruing mans idlenesse, will take vppon them to be the ironicall Censors of all, when God and Poetrie doth know they are the simplest of all. To leaue all these to the mercy of their Mother tongue, that feed on nought but the crums that fall frõ the Translators trencher, I come (sweet friend) to thy *Arcadian Menaphon*, whose attire (though not so stately, yet comely) doth intitle thee aboue all other to that *temperatum dicendi genus* which *Tully* in his Orator termeth true eloquence. Let other men (as they please) praise the Mountaine that in seauen yeares bringeth forth a Mouse, or the Italianate penne that, of a packet of pilfries, affords the presse a pamphlet or two in an age, and then in disguised array vaunts *Ouids* and *Plutarchs* plumes as theyr owne; but giue me the man whose extemporall veine in any humour will excell our greatest Art-maisters deliberate thoughts; whose inuentions, quicker then his eye, will challenge the prowdest Rhetoritian to the contention of like perfection with like expedition.

What is he among Students so simple, that cannot bring foorth (*tandem aliquando*) some or other thing singular, sleeping betwixt euery sentence? Was it not *Maroes* twelue yeeres toile that so famed his twelue *Æneidos*?

7–8 Schoolemen or] *om. 89.* 13 leaue these *89.* 16 attire though *89.* 17 comelie, dooth *89.* 19 *Orator 89.* 21 brings *89.* 22 affoordeth *89.* 26 inuention *89.* 28 Rethoritian *89.* 30 *Run on in 89.* amongst *89.* 31 *tandem*] *89*: *tanquam 10, 16.* 32 Was it] *89*: What is *10, 16.* 33 xij. (*twice*) *89.*

Or *Peter Ramus* sixteene yeeres paines that so praised his petty Logicke? How is it, then, our drowping wits should so wonder at an exquisite line, that was his Masters day-labour? Indeede I must needes say, the descending yeares from the Philosophers *Athens* haue not been supplied with such present Orators, as were able in any English veine to be elo-|quent of their owne, A 3 but either they must borrow inuention of *Ariosto* & his countrimen, take vp choise of words by exchange in *Tullies Tusculans* & the Latine Historiographers store-houses; similitudes, nay, whole sheetes & tractates *verbatim*, from the plentie of *Plutarch* and *Plinie*; and, to conclude, their whole methode of writing from the libertie of comicall fictions that haue succeeded to our Rhetori-tians by a second imitation: so that well may the Adage, *Nil dictum quod non dictum prius*, be the most iudiciall estimate of our latter Writers. But the hunger of our vnsatiate humorists, beeing such as it is, ready to swallow all draffe without difference, that insinuates it selfe to their sences vnder the name of delights, imploies oft-times many thredbare wits, to emptie their inuention of their apish deuices, and talke most superficially of Policie, as those that neuer ware gowne in the Vniuersitie; wherein they reuiue the old said Adage, *Sus Mineruam*, and cause the wiser to quippe them with *Asinus ad lyram*. Would Gentlemen and riper iudgements admit my motion of moderation in a matter of folly, I would perswade them to physicke their faculties of seeing and hearing, as the Sabæans doe their dulled sences with smelling; who (as *Strabo* reporteth), ouercloyd with such odoriferous sauours as the naturall increase of their country (Balsamum, Amomum, with Myrrhe and Frankencense) sends forth, refresh their nosthrilles with the vnsauourie sent of the pitchy slime that *Euphrates* casts vp, & the cõtagious

1 xvj. *89* 2 our] out *89*: our *Gro., Smith.* 5 Philosophers of *Athens Gro.* 10 *Tusculane 89.* 14 Rethoritians *89.* 17 But . . .] *New par. Gro.* 19 difference] indifference *89.* 20 delight *89.* 29 *Sabæans* 89. 34 casts] *89*: cast *10, 16.*

fumes of Goats beards burned: so would I haue them, beeing surfeited vnawares with the sweet saciety of eloquence, which the lauish of our copious language may procure, to vse the remedie of contraries; and recreate their rebated wits, not, as they did, with the senting of slime or Goates beards burned, but with the ouerseeing of that *sublime dicendi genus*, which walkes abroade for wast paper in each seruing-mans pocket, and the otherwhile perusing of our Gothamists barbarisme; so should the opposite comparison of *Puritie* expell the infection of Absurditie, and their ouer-racked Rhetoricke be the Ironicall recreation of the Reader. |

A 3v But so farre discrepant is the idle vsage of our vnexperienced and illiterated Punies from this prescription, that a tale of Ioane of Brainfords will, and the vnlucky frumenty, will be as soone entertained into their Libraries as the best Poëme that euer *Tasso* eternisht: which, being the effect of an vndiscerning iudgment, makes drosse as valuable as gold, and losse as wel-come as gaine, the Glowworme mentioned in *Æsops* Fables, namely the Apes folly, to be mistaken for fire; when as, God wot, poore soules, they haue nought but their toyle for their heate, their paines for their sweate, and (to bring it to our English Prouerbe) their labour for their trauell. Wherein I can but resemble them to the Panther, who is so greedy of mens excrements that if they bee hanged vp in a vessell higher then his reach, he sooner killes himselfe with the ouer-stretching of his windlesse body then he will cease from his intended enterprise. Oft haue I obserued what I now set downe: a secular wit that hath liued all dayes of his life by What doe you lacke? to be more iudiciall in matters of conceit then our quadrant crepundios, that spit *ergo* in the mouth of euery one they meete: yet

1 burnt *89*. 4–5 contraries; and . . . witts, not *89*: contraries, and . . . wits; not *10, 16*. 6 burnt *89*. 13 *Run on in 89*. 14 and illiterated] *om. 89*. 15 Ioane of] Ihon a *89*. 16 furmentie *89*. wilbe *89*. 17 poeme *89, 16*. 24 trauaile *89*. 27 killeth *89*. 31 what *Q*. lacke, to *89*. 32 crepundios] *89*: crepundious *10, 16*.

those and these are so affectionate to dogged detracting, as the most poysonous *Pasquil* any durty mouthed *Martin* or *Momus* euer composed is gathered vp with greedinesse before it fall to the ground, and bought at the dearest, though they smell of the friplers lauender halfe a yeere after: for I know not how the minde of the meanest is fedde with this folly, that they impute singularity to him that slaunders priuily, and count it a great peece of Art in an inkhorne man, in any tapsterly termes whatsoeuer, to expose his superiours to enuy. I will not deny but in scholler-like matters of controuersie a quicker stile may passe as commendable, and that a quip to an Asse is as good as a goad to an Oxe: but when the irregular Ideot, that was vp to the eares in diuinity before euer he met with *probabile* in the Vniuersitie, shall leaue *pro & contra* before hee can scarcely pronounce it, and come to correct common-weales, that neuer heard of the name of Magistrate before hee came to | *Cambridge*, it is no maruaile if euery A 4 Alehouse vaunt the table of the world turned vpside downe, since the child beateth his father, and the Asse whippeth his Master. But lest I might seeme, with these night-crowes, *Nimis curiosus in aliena republica*, I will turne backe to my first text of Studies of delight, and talke a little in friendship with a few of our triuiall translators. It is a common practise now a dayes amongst a sort of shifting companions, that runne through euery Art and thriue by none, to leaue the trade of *Nouerint*, whereto they were borne, and busie themselues with the indeuours of Art, that could scarcely Latinize their neck verse if they should haue neede; yet English *Seneca* read by Candle-light yeelds many good sentences, as *Blood is a begger*, and so forth; and if you intreate him faire in a frostie morning, hee will affoord you whole Hamlets, I should say handfuls of Tragicall speeches. But O griefe! *Tempus*

1 so] *89*: *om. 10, 16.* 2 *Pasquil*] *89*: *Pasquils 10, 16.* 10 expose] oppose *89.* 13 when an irregular *89.* 18 meruaile *89.* 20 beats *89.* whippes *89.* 21 least *89.* 22 *republica.* I'le *89.* 24 transsators (*broken* ſi) *10.* 33 *Hamlets 89.*

edax rerum, whats that will last alwayes? The Sea exhaled by droppes will in continuance bee drie, and *Seneca*, let blood line by line and page by page, at length must needes die to our Stage; which makes his famished followers to imitate the Kid in *Æsop*, who, enamoured with the Foxes newfangles, forsooke all hopes of life to leape into a newe occupation; and these men, renouncing all possibilities of credite or estimation, to intermeddle with Italian Translations: Wherein how poorely they haue plodded, (as those that are neither prouenzall men, nor are able to distinguish of Articles,) let all indifferent Gentlemen that haue trauelled in that tongue discerne by their two-pennie Pamphlets. And no maruell though their home borne mediocritie bee such in this matter; for what can bee hoped of those that thrust *Elisium* into hell, and haue not learned, so long as they haue liued in the Spheres, the iust measure of the Horizon without an hexameter? Sufficeth them to bodge vp a blanke verse with ifs and ands, and otherwhile for recreation after their Candle-stuffe, hauing starched their beards most curiously, to make a Peripateticall path into the inner parts of the Citie, and spend two or
A 4v three howers in turning ouer | French *Dowdie*, where they attract more infection in one minute, then they can do eloquence all daies of their life, by conuersing with any Authors of like argument. But lest in this declamatorie veine, I should condemne all and commend none, I will propound to your learned imitation those men of import that haue laboured with credite in this laudable kind of Translation; In the forefront of whom I cannot but place that aged father *Erasmus*, that inuested most of our Greeke writers in the robes of the ancient Romanes; in whose traces *Philip Melancthon*, *Sadolet*, *Plantine*, and many other reuerent Germaines insisting, haue reedified the ruines of our decayed Libraries, and maruellously enriched the Latine

5 Kidde *89*. 9 wherein *89*. 10 prouenzall men] *89*: Pouerzalmen *10*, *16*. 11 trauailed *89*. 12–3 pamphlets: & *89*. 22 *Doudie 89*. 25 least *89*. 29 Translation; In] *89*: Translation. In *10*, *16*. 31 *Romaines 89*.

tongue with the expence of their toyle. Not long after, their emulation being transported into England, euerie priuate scholer, *William Turner*, and who not, beganne to vant their smattering of Latine in English impressions. But amongst others in that age, sir *Thomas Eliots* elegance did seuer it selfe from all equals, although sir *Thomas Moore* with his comical wit at that instant was not altogether idle: yet was not knowledge fully confirmed in her Monarchy amongest vs, till that most famous and fortunate Nurse of all learning, Saint *Iohns* in *Cambridge*, that at that time was as an Vniuersity within it selfe, shining so farre aboue all other houses, Halles, and hospitals whatsoeuer, that no Colledge in the Towne was able to compare with the tithe of her Stüdents; hauing (as I haue heard graue men of credite report) moe Candles light in it, euery Winter morning before foure of the clocke, then the foure of the clocke bell gaue strokes; till she (I say) as a pittying mother, put to her helping hand, and sent, from her fruitfull wombe, sufficient Scholers, both to support her owne weale, as also to supply all other inferiour foundations defects, and namely, that royall erection of Trinity Colledge, which the Vniuersity Orator, in an Epistle to the Duke of Somerset, aptly termed *Colonia deducta* from the suburbs of Saint *Iohns*. In which extraordinary conception, *vno partu in rempublicam prodiere*, the Exchequer of eloquence, sir *Iohn Cheeke*, a man of men, superna-|turally traded in all B 1
tongs, sir *Iohn Mason*, Doctor *Watson*, *Redman*, *Ascam*, *Grindall*, *Leuer*, *Pilkinton*: all which haue, either by their priuate readings or publique workes repurged the errors of Arte, expelled from their puritie, and set before our eyes a more perfect methode of studie.

But how ill their precepts haue prospered with our

2 *England 89.* 4 vaunt *89, 16.* 5 amogst *10.* 9 amongst *89, 16.* 12 Houses . . . Hospitalls *89, 16.* 15 moe] more *89.* 16–7 fowre of clocke bell *89.* 17 Shee *89.* 21 *Trinitie Colledge 89*: *Trinitie* Colledge *16.* 22 *Somerset 89.* 23 *Colona diducta 89.* *Saint 89.* 27 *Aschame 89.* 28 *Pilkington 89.* 30 and set] *Here begins the imperfect copy at Trinity College, Cambridge, referred to as T.* 32 *Run on in 89.*

idle age, that leaue the fountaines of Sciences, to follow the riuers of Knowledge, their ouer-fraught studies with trifling compendiaries may testifie: for I know not how it commeth to passe, by the doting practise of our Diuinitie Dunces, that striue to make their pupills pulpit-men before they are reconciled to *Priscian*; but those yeares which should bee imployed in *Aristotle* are expired in Epitomies, and well too, they may haue so much Catechisme vacation, to rake vp a little refuse philosophy.

And heere I could enter into a large fielde of inuectiue against our abiect abbreuiations of Arts, were it not growne to a new fashion among our Nation, to vaunt the pride of contraction in euery manuarie action: insomuch that the *Pater noster*, which was wont to fill a sheete of Paper, is written in the compasse of a pennie: whereupon one merily affirmed that prouerbe to be deriued, *No penny, no pater noster.* Which their nice curtailing putteth mee in minde of the custome of the Scythians, who if they had beene at any time distressed with famine, tooke in their girdles shorter, and swaddled themselues straighter, to the intẽt, no *vacuum* being left in their intrailes, hunger should not so much tyrannize ouer their stomacks: euen so these men, oppressed with a greater penurie of Art, doe pound their capacitie in barren compendiums, and bound their base humours in the beggarlie straites of a hungry *Analysis*, lest, longing after that *infinitum* which the pouertie of their conceit cannot compasse, they sooner yeelde vp their youth to destinie, then their heart to vnderstanding.

How is it then such bungling practitioners in principles should euer profit the Common-wealth by their negligent paines, who haue no more cunning in Logicke or dialogue | Latine then appertaines to the literall construction of either?

B 1v

4 comes *89.* 7 Epitomes *89.* 9 rake] *89*: take *T, 10, 16.* 10 *Run on in 89.* I could] could I *89.* 11 growen *89.* 12 amongst *89.* 13 in so much *89.* 16 merelie *89.* affirmed] *89*: assumed *T, 10, 16.* 17 *noster*; which *89.* curtalling *89.* puts *89.* 18 *Scythians 89.* 18–9 had beene] be *89.* 19 take *89.* 20 swaddle *89, T.* streighter *89.* 26 Analysis *89.* least *89, T.* 29 *Run on in 89.* 31 hane *T.*

neuerthelesse, it is daily apparant to our domestical eyes that there is none so forward to publish their imperfectiõs, either in the trade of glose or translations, as those that are more vnlearned then ignorance, and lesse conceiuing than infants. Yet dare I not impute absurditie to all of that societie, although some of them haue set their names to their simplicity. Who euer my priuate opinion condemneth as faultie, Maister *Gascoigne* is not to bee abridged of his deserued esteeme, who first beate the path to that perfection which our best Poets haue aspired to since his departure; whereto hee did ascend by comparing the Italian with the English, as *Tully* did *Græca cum Latinis*. Neither was M. *Turberuile* the worst of his time, though in translating hee attributed too much to the necessitie of rime. And in this page of praise I cannot omit aged *Arthur Golding*, for his industrious toyle in Englishing *Ouids Metamorphosis*, besides many other exquisite editions of diuinitie, turned by him out of the French tongue into our owne. M. *Phaer* likewise is not to be forgot, in regard of his famous *Virgill*, whose heauenly verse had it not beene blemished by his hautie thoughts, England might haue long insulted in his wit, and *corrigat qui potest* haue been subscribed to his works. But Fortune, the Mistrisse of change, with a pittying compassion respecting Maister *Stanihursts* praise, would that *Phaer* should fall that hee might rise, whose heroicall poetry, infired, I should say inspired, with an hexameter furie, recalled to life what euer hissed Barbarisme hath been buried this C. yeere; and reuiued by his ragged quill such carterly varietie as no hodge plowman in a country but would haue held as the extremitie of clownerie: a patterne whereof I will propound to your iudgements, as neere as I can, beeing part of one of his descriptions of a tempest, which is thus,

3 the] *89*: theyr *T*: their *10, 16.* 4 than *89, T.* ignorance] *89*: ignorant *T, 10, 16.* 6 though *89.* 13 Master *Turbeuile 89.* although *89.* 14 rime] *89*: the time *T, 10, 16.* 19 Master *89.* 20 bin *89.* 21 *England 89.* 22 in] *89*: *om. T, 10, 16.* 28 bin *89.* C.] hundred *89, 16.*

Then did he make heauens vault to rebound,
with rounce robble hobble
Of ruffe raffe roaring,
with thwicke thwacke thurlerie bouncing. |

B 2 Which strange language of the firmament, neuer subiect before to our common phrase, makes vs that are not vsed to terminate heauens mouing in the accents of any voice, esteeme of their triobulare interpreter as of some Thrasonicall huffe snuffe, for so terrible was his stile to all milde eares, as would haue affrighted our peaceable Poets from intermedling hereafter with that quarrelling kind of verse, had not sweet Maister *France*, by his excellent translation of Maister *Thomas Watsons* sugred *Amintas*, animated their dulled spirits to such high witted indeuours. But I know not how, their ouer-timerous cowardise hath stoode in awe of enuie, that no man since him durst imitate any of the woorst of those Romane wonders in English; which makes me thinke that either the louers of mediocritie are very many, or that the number of good Poets are very small; and in truth, (Maister *Watson* except, whom I mentioned before,) I know not almost any of late dayes that hath shewed himselfe singuler in any speciall Latine Poeme; whose *Amintas*, and translated *Antigone*, may march in equippage of honour with any of our ancient Poets. I will not say but we had a *Haddon*, whose penne would haue challenged the Lawrell from *Homer*, together with *Car*, that came as neere him as *Virgill* to *Theocritus*. But *Thomas Newton* with his *Leiland*, and *Gabriell Haruey*, with two or three other, is almost all the store that is left vs at this houre. Epitaphers and position Poets wee haue more then a good many, that swarme like Crowes to a dead carcasse, but flie, like Swallowes in the Winter, from any continuate subiect of wit.

2 *hobble*] *89*, *T*: *bobble 10*, *16*. 6 makes] *89*, *T*: make *10*, *16*. 7 moueings *89*. 11 hereafter] *89*, *16*: here after (here *ending a line*) *T*, *10*. 14 But . . .] *New par. Gro.* 23 Poëm *89*. 24 our] *89*: your *T*, *10*, *16*. 24–5 Poets. I] *89*: Poets: I *T*, *10*, *16*. 27 *Carre 89*. 28 *Tho. 89*. 30 wee haue] haue wee *89*.

The efficient whereof I imagine to issue from the vp-start discipline of our reformatorie Churchmen, who account wit vanitie, and poetry impiety: whose errour although the necessitie of philosophie might confute, which lies couched most closely vnder darke fables profunditie, yet I had rather referre it as a disputatiue plea to diuines, then set it downe as a determinate position in my vnexperienced opinion. But how euer their dissentious iudgements should decree in their after noone sessions of *an sit*, the priuate truth of my discoue-|red Creede in this controuersie is this, B 2v that as that beast was thought scarce worthy to be sacrificed to the Egyptian *Epaphus*, who had not some or other blacke spot on his skin: so I deeme him farre vnworthy the name of a scholer, and so, consequently, to sacrifice his endeuours to Art, that is not a Poet, either in whole or in part.

And heere, peraduenture, some desperate quipper will canuaze my proposed comparison *Plus vltra*, reconciling the allusion of the blacke spot to the blacke pot, which maketh our Poets vndermeale Muses so mutinous, as euery stanzo they pen after dinner is full pointed with a stabbe. Which their dagger drunkennesse, although it might be excused with *tam Marti, quàm Mercurio*, yet will I couer it as well as I may with that prouerbiall *fœcundi calices*, that might well haue beene doore-keeper to the kanne of *Silenus*, when, nodding on his Asse trapped with Iuie, he made his moist nose-cloth the pausing *intermedium* twixt euery nappe. Let frugall scholers and fine fingered nouices take their drinke by the ounce and their wine by the halfe penny worths, but it is for a Poet to examine the pottle pots, and gage the bottome of whole gallons; *qui bene vult* poiein, *debet ante* pinein. A pot of blew burning ale, with a fiery flaming toste, is as good as *Pallas* with the nine

1 *Run on in 89.* 6 to] *89*: by *T*, *10*, *16*. 13 vnworthie of the *89*. 15–6 in a parte and [*No new par.*] *89*: in a parte; and *Gro.*: in a parte. And *Smith*. 17 proposed] *89*: purposed *T*, *10*, *16*. 19 makes *89*. so mutinous] *89*: to mutinous *T*: to mutinons *10*: too mutinous *16*. 21 mighr *10*. 22 *Tam 89*: *iam T*. 23 *fæcundi T*. 26 intermedium *89*. 28-9 halfe penny worths] halpe-worthes *89*: halfe-penny worths *16*: halfe-[pennie] worthes *Gro.* 31 ποίειν *89*. πίνειν *89*.

Muses on *Pernassus* top: without the which, in vaine they may crie, O thou my Muse, inspire me with some penne, when they want certaine liquid sacrifice to rouze her forth her denne.

Pardon mee (Gentlemen) though somewhat merrily I glance at their immoderate folly, who affirme that no man writes with conceit, except he take counsell of the cup: nor would I haue you thinke that, *Theonino dente*, I arme my stile against all, since I doe know the moderation of many Gentlemen of that studie to be so farre from infamie as their verse from equality: whose sufficiency, were it as well seene into by those of higher place as it wanders abroad vnrewarded in the mouthes of vngratefull monsters, no doubt but the remembrance of *Mæcenas* liberality extended to *Maro*, and men of like quality, would haue left no
B 3 memory to that | prouerbe of Pouerty, *Si nihil attuleris, ibis Homere foras.* Tush, say our English Italians, the finest wits our climate sends forth are but drie brained dolts in comparison of other countries: whom if you interrupt with *redde rationem*, they will tell you of *Petrarch*, *Tasso*, *Celiano*, with an infinite number of others; to whom if I should oppose *Chaucer*, *Lydgate*, *Gower*, with such like, that liued vnder the tyranny of ignorance, I do thinke their best louers would be much discontented with the collation of contraries, if I should write ouer all their heads, Haile, fellow, well met. One thing I am sure of, that each of these three haue vaunted their meeters with as much admiration in English as euer the proudest *Ariosto* did his verse in Italian.

What should I come to our Court, where the otherwhile vacations of our grauer Nobility are prodigall of more pompous wit and choice of words then euer tragicke *Tasso*

1–2 they may] may they *89*, *T.* 5 *Run on in 89.* merely *89*: merrilie *T.* 7 writes] can write *89.* 8 *theonino T.* 14 *Mæcenas*] *T*, *10*, *16*: *Mœcenas 89.* 17 Tush, say] *16*: Tut saies *89*: Tush say *T*, *10.* 20 *Petrache 89.* 23 I do not think *Gro.* 27 vaunted] *89*: vanted *T*: vented *10*, *16.* 30 *Run on in 89.*

could attaine to? But as for pastorall poems, I will not make the comparison, lest our countrimens credite should be discountenanced by the contention; who although they cannot fare with such inferiour facility, yet I know would carry the bucklers full easily from all forraine brauers, if their *subiectum circa quod* should sauour of any thing hautie. And should the challenge of deepe conceit be intruded by any forrainer, to bring our English wits to the touchstone of Art, I would preferre diuine Master *Spencer*, the miracle of wit, to bandie line by line for my life, in the honour of England, against Spaine, Fraunce, Italy, and all the world. Neither is he the onely swallow of our Summer, (although *Apollo*, if his Tripos were vp againe, would pronounce him his *Socrates*,) but he being forborne, there are extant about London many most able men to reuiue Poetry, though it were executed tenne thousand times, as in *Platoes*, so in Puritans Common-wealth; as, namely, for example, *Mathew Roydon*, *Thomas Achlow*, and *George Peele*; the first of whom, as he hath shewed himselfe singular in the immortall Epitaph of his beloued *Astrophell*, besides many other most absolute Comike inuentions (made more publike by euery mans | praise, then they can be by my B 3v speech), so the second hath more then once or twice manifested his deepe witted schollership in places of credite: and for the last, though not the least of them all, I dare commend him vnto all that know him, as the chiefe supporter of pleasance now liuing, the *Atlas* of Poetrie, and *primus verborum Artifex*: whose first increase, the arraignement of *Paris*, might pleade to your opinions his pregnant dexterity of wit, and manifold varietie of inuention; wherein (*me iudice*) he goeth a steppe beyond all that write. Sundry other sweete Gentlemen I doe know, that haue vaunted their pennes in priuate deuices, and tricked vp

1 coud *10*. too: but *89*: to: But *T*. Poëmes *89*. 2 least *89*, *T*. 7 haughtie: and *89*. 10 by] for *89*. 11 *England 89*. gainst *89*. *Spaine, France, Italie 89*. Itale *T*. 13 *Tripos 89*. 15 *London 89*. 17 namely] *om. 89*. 18 *Atchelow 89*. 26 vnto] to *89*. 32 doe] *om. 89*. that haue] *89*: that we haue *T*, *10*, *16*.

a company of taffaty fooles with their feathers, whose beauty if our Poets had not peecte with the supply of their periwigs, they might haue antickt it vntill this time vp and downe the Countrey with the King of Fairies, and dined euery day at the pease porredge ordinary with *Delfrigus*.

But *Tolossa* hath forgotten that it was sometime sacked, and beggars that euer they carried their fardels on foot-back: and in truth no maruaile, when as the deserued reputation of one *Roscius* is of force to enrich a rabble of counterfeits. Yet let subiects for all their insolence dedicate a *De profundis* euery morning to the preseruation of their *Cæsar*, lest their increasing indignities returne them ere long to their iugling to mediocrity, and they bewaile in weeping blankes the wane of their Monarchie.

As Poetrie hath beene honoured in those her forenamed professours, so it hath not beene any whit disparaged by *William Warners* absolute *Albions*. And heere Authoritie hath made a full point: in whose reuerence insisting I cease to expose to your sport the picture of those Pamphleters and Poets, that make a patrimonie of *In speech*, and more then a younger brothers inheritance of their *Abcie*. Reade fauourably, to incourage me in the firstlings of my folly, and perswade your selues, I will persecute those idiots and their heires vnto the third generation, that haue made Art bankerout of her ornaments, and sent
B 4 Poetry a begging vp and | downe the Countrey. It may be, my *Anatomie* of *Absurdities* may acquaint you ere long with my skill in surgery, wherein the diseases of Art more merrily discouered may make our maimed Poets put together their blankes vnto the building of an Hospitall.

If you chance to meete it in *Paules*, shaped in a new suite

1 taffata *89*, *T*: taffatie *16*. 2 peecte] *89*: pecked *T*, *10*, *16*. 4 *Fairies 89*. 5 *Delphrigus 89*. 6 *Run on in 89*. *Tolossa*] *89*: *Tolasso T*, *10*, *16*. forgot *89*. 8 meruaile *89*. 10 counterfets; yet *89*: counterfeits. Yet *T*, *10*: counterfeits: Yet *16*. 12 least *89*, *T*. 13 long to their] *89*, *T*: long their *10*, *16*. iugling] *The rest is wanting in the copy of 89 in the British Museum, the word* iuggling *being the catch-word of* A 2ᵛ. 16 whit] white *T*. 19 expose] oppose *T*. 22 Reade . . .] *New par. Gro*. 27 *A anatomie* os *10*. 31 yon *10*.

of similitudes, as if, like the eloquent apprentice of *Plutarch*, it were propped at seuen years end in double apparell, thinke his master hath fulfilled couenants, and onely cancelled the Indentures of dutie. If I please, I will thinke my ignorance indebted vnto you that applaud it: if not, what rests, but that I be excluded from your curtesie, like *Apocrypha* from your Bibles?

How euer, yours euer,

Thomas Nash.

9 How euer, yours euer. *T*: *How . . . euer.* 10: *How . . . euer:* 16. 10 Thomas Nash. 16.

PREFACE TO SIDNEY'S 'ASTROPHEL AND STELLA'

Entry in the Stationers' Register: None.

Editions (1) *Early:*

1591. Syr P. S. | *His Aſtrophel and Stella.* | Wherein the excellence of ſweete | Poeſie is concluded | (·.·) | *To the end of which are added, ſundry* | *other rare Sonnets of diuers Noble* | *men and Gentlemen.* | (*) | [ornament] | At London, | Printed for Thomas Newman. | *Anno. Domini. 1591.*

Quarto. No colophon. Paged from B 1 to L 4^{v} (1–80).

Collation: A–L^{4}. (A 1) Title, *v.* blank. A. ii. '☙ To the worshipfull and his very good Freende, Ma. *Frauncis Flower* . . .' (signed *Tho: Newman.*) *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. The Epistle. A. 3. 'Somewhat to reade for them *that list.*' *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. Somewhat to reade | for them that list. B. 1. '☙ SIR P. S. HIS ASTROPHEL AND *STELLA.*' *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. Sir P. S. his | Astrophel and Stella. I 3^{v}. '☙ Poems and Sonets of sundrie other Noble men and Gentlemen.'

Signatures are in Roman with Arabic numerals except A. ii. Those of G 3 and I 3 are larger than others. A 4 is signed, other fourth leaves unsigned.

Catch-words: A 2. graue A 3. The A 4. trunchions B 1. And C 1. In D 1. Who E 1. That F 1. Where-(fore) G 1. VVhich H 1. Yet I 1. Graunt K 1. For L 1. Ile

Copy used: That in the British Museum, G. 11543.

(2) *Modern Editions:*

1842 (Coll.) Pierce Penniless's Supplication to the Devil . . . with an introduction and notes, by J. Payne Collier . . . London: Reprinted for the Shakespeare Society. pp. xxiii–xxvi.

1873. The Complete Poems of Sir Philip Sidney . . . Edited . . . by the Rev. A. B. Grosart. Printed for Private Circulation. Vol. i, pp. 163–166.

The works of Sidney occupy two volumes in 'The Fuller Worthies' Library.'

1877. The Complete Poems of Sir Philip Sidney. Edited . . . by the Rev. A. B. Grosart. London: Chatto and Windus. Vol. iii, pp. 213–218.

This edition of Sidney's poems occupies three volumes in the series of 'Early English Poets.' It is, for the most part, a reprint of the preceding.

1883–4 (Gro.) The Complete Works of Thomas Nashe . . . edited by A. B. Grosart. Vol. i, pp. xxxix–xlv.

Reprinted from one of the editions of Sidney.

1889. Sir Philip Sidney's Astrophel and Stella und Defence of Poesie . . . herausgegeben von Dr. Ewald Flügel. Halle a. S., Max Niemeyer. pp. xcviii–ci.

From the copy in the British Museum.

1904 (Smith) Elizabethan Critical Essays, edited . . . by G. Gregory Smith. Oxford: at the Clarendon Press. Vol. ii, pp. 223–228.

From the copy in the British Museum. With notes.

1905. (The present edition.)

From the copy in the British Museum collated with the editions of Grosart (in his *Nashe*) and Mr. Gregory Smith, with occasional reference to that of Collier.

TEmpus adest plausus, aurea pompa venit, so endes the Sceane of Idiots, and enter *Astrophel* in pompe. Gentlemen, that haue seene a thousand lines of folly drawn forth *ex vno puncto impudentiæ*, & two famous Mountains to goe to the conception of one Mouse, that haue had your eares deafned with the eccho of Fames brasen towres, when only they haue been toucht with a leaden pen, that haue seene *Pan* sitting in his bower of delights, & a number of *Midasses* to admire his miserable hornepipes, let not your surfeted sight, new come frõ such puppet play, think scorne to turn aside into this Theater of pleasure, for here you shal find a paper stage streud with pearle, an artificial heau'n to ouershadow the faire frame, & christal wals to encounter your curious eyes, whiles the tragicommody of loue is performed by starlight. The chiefe Actor here is *Melpomene*, whose dusky robes, dipt in the ynke of teares, as yet seeme to drop when I view them neere. The argument cruell chastitie, the Prologue hope, the Epilogue dispaire; *videte, queso, et linguis animisque fauete.* And here peraduenture my witles youth may be taxt with a margent note of presumption, for offering to put vp any motion of applause in the behalfe of so excellent a Poet, (the least sillable of whose name, sounded in the eares of iudgement, is able to giue the meanest line he writes a dowry of immortality,) yet those that obserue how iewels oftẽtimes com to their hands that know not their value, & that the cockscombes of our daies, like *Esops* Cock, had rather haue a Barly kernell wrapt vp

3 *adus* [sic] *plausus Gro.* 20 *quæso Coll., Gro.*: *quaeso Smith.*

in a Ballet then they wil dig for the welth of wit in any ground that they know not, I hope wil also hold me excused, though I open the gate to his glory & inuite idle eares to the admiration of his melancholy.

Quid petitur sacris nisi tantum fama poetis?

Which although it be oftentimes imprisoned in Ladyes casks & the president bookes of such as cannot see without another mans spectacles, yet at length it breakes foorth in spight of his keepers, and vseth some priuate penne (in steed of a picklock) to procure his violent enlargement. |

A 3v The Sunne, for a time, may maske his golden head in a cloud; yet, in the end, the thicke vaile doth vanish, and his embellished blandishment appeares. Long hath *Astrophel* (Englands Sunne) withheld the beames of his spirite from the common veiw of our darke sence, and night hath houered ouer the gardens of the nine Sisters, while *Ignis fatuus* and grosse fatty flames (such as commonly arise out of Dunghilles) haue tooke occasion, in the middest eclipse of his shining perfections, to wander a broade with a wispe of paper at their tailes like Hobgoblins, and leade men vp and downe in a circle of absurditie a whole weeke, and neuer know where they are. But nowe that cloude of sorrow is dissolued which fierie Loue exhaled from his dewie haire, and affection hath vnburthened the labouring streames of her wombe in the lowe cesterne of his graue: the night hath resigned her iettie throne vnto *Lucifer*, and cleere daylight possesseth the skie that was dimmed; wherfore breake of your daunce, you Fayries and Elues, and from the fieldes with the torne carcases of your Timbrils, for your kingdome is expired. Put out your rush candles, you Poets and | Rimers, and bequeath your crazed quaterzayns to the Chaundlers; for loe, here he cõmeth that hath brokẽ your legs. *Apollo* hath resigned his Iuory Harp vnto *Astrophel*, & he, like *Mercury*, must lull you a sleep with his musicke. Sleepe *Argus*, sleep Ignorance, sleep Impudence, for

6 *Set in as new par. Q.* 11 *Run on in Gro., Smith.* 15 view *Coll., Smith.* 32 brocẽk *Q*: broek *Gro.*: broken *Coll.*: broke *Smith.*

Mercury hath *Io*, & onely *Io Pæan* belongeth to *Astrophel.* Deare *Astrophel*, that in the ashes of thy Loue liuest againe like the *Phœnix*; ô might thy bodie (as thy name) liue againe likewise here amongst vs: but the earth, the mother of mortalitie, hath snacht thee too soone into her chilled colde armes, and will not let thee by any meanes be drawne from her deadly imbrace; and thy diuine Soule, carried on an Angels wings to heauen, is installed, in *Hermes* place, sole *prolocutor* to the Gods. Therefore mayest thou neuer returne from the *Elisian* fieldes like *Orpheus*; therefore must we euer mourne for our *Orpheus.*

Fayne would a seconde spring of passion heere spende it selfe on his sweet remembrance: but Religion, that rebu-| keth prophane lamentation, drinkes in the riuers of those A 4 dispaireful teares which languorous ruth hath outwelled, & bids me looke back to the house of honor, where, frõ one & the selfe same roote of renowne, I shal find many goodly branches deriued, & such as, with the spreading increase of their vertues, may somwhat ouershadow the griefe of his los. Amongst the which, fayre sister of *Phœbus*, & eloquent secretary to the Muses, most rare Countesse of *Pembroke*, thou art not to be omitted; whom Artes doe adore as a second *Minerua*, and our Poets extoll as the Patronesse of their inuention; for in thee the *Lesbian Sappho* with her lirick Harpe is disgraced, & the Laurel Garlande which thy Brother so brauely aduaunst on his Launce is still kept greene in the Temple of *Pallas.* Thou only sacrificest thy soule to contemplation, thou only entertainest emptie handed *Homer*, & keepest the springs of *Castalia* from being dryed vp. Learning, wisedom, beautie, and all other ornaments of Nobilitie whatsoeuer, seeke to approue themselues in thy sight, and get a further seale of felicity from the smiles of thy fauour:

O Ioue digna viro ni Ioue nata fores.

I feare I shall be counted a mercenary flatterer, for mixing my thoughts with such figuratiue admiration, but generall report, that surpasseth my praise, condemneth my

rethoricke of dulnesse for so colde a commendation. Indeede, to say the truth, my stile is somewhat heauie gated, and cannot daunce trip and goe so liuely, with oh my loue, ah my loue, all my loues gone, as other Sheepheards that haue beene fooles in the Morris time out of minde; nor hath my prose any skill to imitate the Almond leape verse, or sit tabring fiue yeres together nothing but to bee, to hee, on a paper drum. Onely I can keepe pace with Grauesend barge, and care not if I haue water enough to lande my ship of fooles with the Tearme (the tyde I shoulde say). Now euery man is not of that minde, for some, to goe the lighter away, will take in their fraught of spangled feathers, golden Peebles, Straw, Reedes, Bulrushes, or any thing, and then they beare out their sayles as proudly as if they were balisted with Bulbiefe. Others are so hardly bested for loading that they are faine to retaile the cinders of *Troy*, and the
A 4v shiuers of broken | trunchions, to fill vp their boate that else should goe empty: and if they haue but a pound weight of good Merchandise, it shall be placed at the poope, or pluckt in a thousande peeces to credit their carriage. For my part, euery man as he likes, *Mens cuiusque is est quisque.* Tis as good to goe in cut fingerd Pumps as corke shooes, if one were Cornish diamonds on his toes. To explain it by a more familiar example, an Asse is no great stateman in the beastes common-wealth, though he weare his eares *vpseuant muffe*, after the Muscouy fashion, & hange the lip like a Capcase halfe open, or looke as demurely as a sixpenny browne loafe, for he hath some imperfections that do keepe him frõ the cõmon Councel: yet of many he is deemed a very vertuous mẽber, and one of the honestest sort of men that are; So that our opinion (as *Sextus Empiricus* affirmeth) giues the name of good or ill to euery thing. Out of whose works (latelie translated into English, for the benefit of vnlearned writers) a man might collect a whole

3 daunce, trip, and *Gro., Smith.* goe it so *Coll.* 7 to bee, to bee *Coll.* 21 *Mens Coll., Gro.* 23 were] weare *Coll.*: wore *Gro.* 24 statesman *Coll., Gro., Smith.* 31 *Empiricus*] *Smith*: *Empedocus Q., Gro.*: Empedocles *Coll.*

booke of this argument, which no doubt woulde proue a worthy commonwealth matter, and far better than wits waxe karnell: much good worship haue the Author.

Such is this golden age wherein we liue, and so replenisht with golden Asses of all sortes, that, if learning had lost it selfe in a groue of Genealogies, wee neede doe no more but sette an olde goose ouer halfe a dozen pottle pots, (which are as it were the egges of inuention,) and wee shall haue such a breede of bookes within a little while after, as will fill all the world with the wilde fowle of good wits; I can tell you this is a harder thing then making golde of quick-siluer, and will trouble you more then the Morrall of *Æsops* Glow-worme hath troubled our English Apes, who, striuing to warme themselues with the flame of the Philosophers stone, haue spent all their wealth in buying bellowes to blowe this false fyre. Gentlemen, I feare I haue too much presumed on your idle leysure, and beene too bold, to stand talking all this while in an other mans doore; but now I will leaue you to suruey the pleasures of *Paphos*, and offer your smiles on the Aulters of *Venus*.

Yours in all desire to please,

Tho: Nashe.

3 karvell *Coll.*

DOUBTFUL WORKS

AN ALMOND FOR A PARRAT

Entry in the Stationers' Register: None.

Editions: (1) *Early:*

[1590.] An Almond for a Parrat, | *Or* | Cutbert Curry-knaues | *Almes.* | Fit for the knaue Martin, and the | *reſt of thoſe impudent Beggers, that* | can not be content to ſtay their ſtomakes | with a Benefice, but they will needes | breake their faſtes with | our Biſhops. | *Rimarum ſum plenus.* | Therefore beware (gentle Reader) you | catch not the hicket with laughing. | [ornament] | Imprinted at a Place, not farre from | a Place, by the Aſſignes of Signior Some-body, and | are to be ſold at his ſhoppe in Trouble-knaue | Street, at the ſigne of the | Standiſh.

Quarto. No colophon. Paged from B 1v to B 3 (2–5), leaves numbered from B 4 to F 3 (4–19); leaves 6, 7, 8 are misnumbered 5, 11, 7, and leaf 16 is misnumbered 21.

Collation: A–F^4. (A 1) Title, *v.* blank. A 2 'TO THAT MOST Comicall and conceited Caualeire *Monsieur du Kempe . . .' Rom. and Ital.* R-T. none. B. 'An Almond for a Parrat.' *B.L. and Rom.* R-T. An Almond | for a Parrat. (F 4) blank.

Signatures are in Black Letter with arabic numerals, except those of A, of which the letters are Roman. Fourth leaves not signed.

Catch-words: A 2. two A 3. to B 1. shroude C 1. arte. D 1. euery E 1. (Phe-)bus F 1. into (All in Black Letter except those of A, which are Roman.)

Copy used: That in the British Museum (C. 37. d. 45). The text has also been compared with the other copy in the same Library (96. b. 15. (4.)), which has a few different readings, though the two are evidently from the same setting-up of type. When it is required to distinguish between the copies C. 37. d. 45. is referred to as a and 96. b. 15. (4.) as b.

(2) *Modern Edition:*

1846. (Peth.) An Almond for a Parrot: being a reply to Martin Mar-Prelate . . . London: John Petheram. pp. xi and 60.

In the series called 'Puritan Discipline Tracts.' Edited, with an introduction and notes, by J. Petheram. An accurate reprint in the original spelling with a few changes in punctuation, &c. The copy used corresponded sometimes with **a** and sometimes with **b**, and perhaps in a few instances varied from both. I have therefore thought it well to give a full collation of this text, so far, at least, as verbal differences are concerned, though not as regards punctuation.

An Almond for a Parrat,

Or

Cutbert Curry-knaues

Almes.

Fit for the knaue Martin, and the *reſt of thoſe impudent Beggers, that* can not be content to ſtay their ſtomakes with a Benefice, but they will needes breake their faſtes with our Biſhops.

Rimarum ſum plenus.

Therefore beware (gentle Reader) you catch not the hicket with laughing.

Imprinted at a Place, not farre from a Place, by the Aſſignes of Signior Some-body, and are to be ſold at his ſhoppe in Trouble-knaue ſtreet, at the ſigne of the Stantſtill.

TO THAT MOST

A 2

Comicall and conceited Caualeire

Monsieur du Kempe, Iestmonger and

Vice-gerent generall to the Ghost of
Dicke Tarlton.

His louing brother Cutbert Curry-knaue
sendeth Greeting.

BRother Kempe, as many alhailes to thy person as there be haicocks in Iuly at Pancredge: So it is that, what for old acquaintance, and some other respectes of my pleasure, I haue thought good to offer here certaine spare stuffe to your protection, which if your sublimitie accept in good part, or vouchsafe to shadow with the curtaine of your countenance, I am yours till fatall destiny | two yeares after doomes day. Many write A 2v bookes to knights and men of great place, and haue thankes with promise of a further reward for their paines: others come of with a long Epistle to some rufling Courtier, that sweares swoundes and bloud, as soone as euer their backe is turnd, a man can not goe in the streetes for these impudent beggers. To auoide therefore as well the worthlesse attendance on the one, as the vsuall scorne of the other, I haue made choise of thy amorous selfe to be the pleasant patron of my papers. If thou wilt not accept of it in regard of the enuy of some Citizens, that can not away with argument, Ile preferre it to the soule of Dick Tarlton, who, I know, will entertaine it with thankes, imitating herein that merry man Rablays, who dedicated most of his workes to the soule of the old Queene of Nauarre many yeares after her death, for that she was a maintainer of mirth in her life. Marry, God send vs more of her making, and then some of vs should not liue so discontēted as we do: for, now | a dayes, a man A 3 can not haue a bout with a Balletter, or write *Midas habet aures*

8 BRrother *Q*. 31 about *Q*.

asininas in great Romaine letters, but hee shall bee in daunger of a further displeasure. Well, come on it what will, Martin and I will allow of no such doinges; wee can cracke halfe a score blades in a backe-lane though a Constable come not to part vs. Neither must you thinke his worship is to pure to be such a swasher, for as Scipio was called Africanus, not for relieuing and restoring, but for subuerting and destroying of Africa; so he and his companions are called Puritans, not for aduancing or supporting of puritie by their vnspotted integritie, but of their vndermining and supplanting it by their manifold heresies. And in deed therein he doth but apply himselfe to that hope which his holinesse the Pope and other confederate forriners haue conceiued of his towardnesse. For comming from Venice the last Summer, and taking Bergamo in my waye homeward to England, it was my
A 3v happe, soiourning there some foure or fiue dayes, | to light in
felowship with that famous Francatrip' Harlicken, who, perceiuing me to bee an English man by my habit and speech, asked me many particulars of the order and maner of our playes, which he termed by the name of representations: amongst other talke he enquired of me if I knew any such Parabolano here in London as Signior Chiarlatano Kempino. Very well, (quoth I,) and haue beene oft in his company. He, hearing me say so, began to embrace me a new, and offered me all the courtesie he colde for his sake, saying, although he knew him not, yet for the report he had hard of his pleasance, hee colde not but bee in loue with his perfections being absent. As we were thus discoursing, I hard such ringing of belles, such singing, such shouting, as though Rhodes had beene recouered, or the Turke quite driuen out of Christendome, therewithal I might behold an hundreth bonefiers together, tables spred in the open streetes, and banquets brought
A 4 in of all handes. Demaunding the reason of him | that was next me, he told the newes was there (thankes be to God) that there was a famous Schismatike, one Martin, newe sprung vp in England, who by his bookes, libels, and writings, had brought that to passe which neither the Pope by his Seminaries, Philip by his power, nor all the holy League by their vnderhand practises and policies could at any time effect: for wheras they liued at vnitie before, and might by no meanes be drawne vnto discord,

14 It *Q.* 16 Francatrip' (*broken* r) *a*: Francattip' *b*, *Peth.*

hee hath inuented such quiddities to set them together by the eares that now the temporaltie is readie to plucke out the throtes of the Cleargie, & subiects to withdraw their allegeance from their Souerayne: so that in short time it is hoped they will bee vp in armes one against another, whiles we, aduantaged by this domesticall enuy, may inuade them vnawares, when they shall not be able to resist. I, sory to heare of these triumphes, coulde not rest till I had related these tidinges to my countrimen. If thou hast them at the second hand, (fellow Kempe,) impute it to the intercepting of my papers, that haue stayed for a good winde A 4v euer since the beginning of winter. Now they are arriued, make much of them, and with the credit of thy clownery protect thy Cutbert from Carpers.

Thine in the way of brotherhood,
Cutbert Curry-knaue.

3 of Clergie, and . . . withdrawe *b*.

An Almond for a Parrat.

WElcome, Mayster *Martin*, from the dead, and much good ioy may you haue of your stage-like resurrection. It was told me by the vndanted purseuants of your sonnes, and credibly beleeued in regard of your sinnes, that your grout-headed holinesse had turnd vppe your heeles like a tired iade in a medow, and snorted out your scornefull soule, like a mesled hogge on a muckehill, which had it not beene false, as the deuill woulde haue it, that long tongd doctresse, Dame *Law.*, muste haue beene faine (in spite of insperation) to haue giuen ouer speaking in the congregation, and employ her Parrats tong in stead of a winde-clapper to scarre the crowes from thy carrion. But profound *Cliffe*, the ecclesiasticall cobler, interrupted from his morning exercise with this false alarum, broke vp his brotherly loue-meeting abruptly, when the spirite had but newly moued him, and betooke him to his solitary shoppe, abutting on the backe side of a bulke. Nor was his souterly sorrow so hippocritically ingratefull, but he determined in the aboundance of his teares, that made a ful tide in his blacking tubbe, to haue stitcht vp your traytourshippe a tumbe of vntand leather, wherein, *tanquam culeolo insutus*, hee mought haue sought his fortune in the seas. But I know not how this parracides exequies were prorogd, in so much as a brother in Christ of his at Northhampton fetcht a more thriftier president of funeralls piping hot from the primitiue church, which, including but a few words and those passing well expounded, kept his wainscot from waste, and his linnen from wearing; sufficeth he tombled his wife naked into the earth at high noone,
B 1v without sheete or | shroude to couer her shame, breathing ouer her in an audible voice: Naked came I out of my mothers wombe, and naked shall I returne againe. Tut, tut, a thousand of these pranks make no discord in my young maisters discipline, whose reformed fraternity quoat Scripture so confidently as if they had

9 faine] faint *Q*, *Peth.*

lately purchast a commission of *cum priuilegio ad interpretandum solum* from Christ and his twelue Apostls. And in deede who knowes whether Maister *Martin* being inspired, as earst one of his faction, who, hearing the waites play vnder his window very early, insulted most impudently that in the midst of his morning praiers he was presented with the melody of Angels, so hee in like manner shoulde vaunt of some reuelation, wherein the full sinode of *Lucifers* ministers angells assembled did parlament all their enuy to the subuersion of our established ministry, and then comes forth some more subtile spirite of hipocrisie which offers himself to be a false prophet in the mouths of our *Martinists*; to whom the whole sedition house of hel condiscending, break vp their sessions, and send this seducer into the world; where finding no such mutinous seate as the heart of our seconde *Pilate Marprelate*, he chose it in steade of a worser, to bee vnto England as *Zidkiah*, son of *Chenaanah*, was vnto *Ahab*. Beare with me, good Maister Pistle-monger, if, in comparing thy knauery, my full points seeme as tedious to thy puritane perusers as the Northren mans mile, and a waybitte to the weary passenger, for I tell thee troth, till I see what market commission thou hast to assiste any mans sentences, I will neuer subscribe to thy periode prescisme. And hearest thou, old *Martin*, did all thy libells iointly shroude so much substance of diuinity in their outlandish letters as that one periode of vniformity in *T. C.* directing to obedience, I would thinke God had bin mercifull to thee in inspiring thy soule with some one separate motion from reprobation, but when whole reames of paper are blotted with thy huperbolical blasphemies, and religious matters of controuersy | more then massacred by thy B 2
prophane scurrility, I cā but suppose thy hart ỹ house swept and garnished, into the which the foule spirit returned with other 7. spirits worse then himself. Malicious hipocryt, didst thou so much malign the successeful thriuings of the Gospell, that thou shouldst filch thy selfe, as a new disease, into our gouernement? wert thou the last instrument of Sathans enuy, that, as the abhortiue childe of a *Chaos* of heresies, thou sholdst adorne thy false dealing with the induments of discipline? Me thinks I see thee smile from vnder thy double-fact hood, to thinke howe craftily thou hast crept into mens cōsciences: but wouldst thou

11 be be *Q.* 21 mans] *Peth.*: many *Q.*

obserue, how il thy alarums haue prosperd in our peaceable ears, that make no more breach into our state then the iron hornes of those hony tõgd prophets into the arraies of the *Aramites*, Chro. 2. and tenth Chap., thou wouldest, with *Achitophell*, return to thy house (at least if thou hast any) and hang thy selfe in a melancholie, for that thy counsaile was turned to follye. When I first saw thy books, I ascribed thy impudence to the *Calabrian* wonders of 88.; but when 89. beheld thee in a new sute, I imagined the excesse of our sins sent thee forth to geue railing sentence against vs, as *Simei* against *Dauid* in the 2. of Kings. Yet, seely sophister, wouldest thou return the sobrietie of thy morning wittes to this ouerworne Simile, that the rodde which was made to correct, *post destinatum finem*, is cast into the fire, thy despaire would deeme euery darke hole the entraunce into hell, thy soule being the cittie whereof the deuill is made free by endenture. And be it true which pittying report hath auouched, *Herostratus* desire to be famous made thee to seale him a conueiance of it many yeares since, so that now thy notorious pamphlets hauing passed the Presse, it is to be feared he will come ouer thee for couenantes ere many yeares to an end. It may bee thou hast redde *Foxes* Monuments more idlely, where lighting on the example of *Luther*, that by his praiers importunitie made the deuil to deliuer vp the obligation of his dãnation, that sold the ioies of
B 2v Heauẽ for the inheritance of earth, | thou hopest in like manner in the age of thine iniquities to bee restored to eternity by the vncessant inuocation of the Church which thou termest Antichristian. Deceiue not thy selfe, thou man of security, for the enemy of *Adam* is no poeticall *Argus*, that his eies should bee put out by thy arguments. I tell thee troth, he wil be-pistle thee so peuishly, with allegations of vnuenidall sinnes, as though hee were borne within two houses of Battle bridge. It is not thy despairing protestations can make thy peace with God, whose church thou hast sought to deuide, as did *Herods* souldiers his garmentes: wele geue thee leaue to tell vs a smooth tale of the intercepting of thy treasons, and curry fauour, like a crafty foxe, with the ciuill magistrate in politique termes of feare and reuerence, but thy heart is no more disguised in this hypocriticall apparel then a trenchour *Aristippus* in the coate of a Parasite. Why discourse

1 il] if *Peth.* 2 state, then *Q*, *Peth.* 30 *Qy. read* vnueniall?

I so soberly with the mortall enemy of modesty, when as the filth of the stewes, distild into ribauldry termes, cannot confectionate a more intemperate stile then his Pamphlets? Thou calst our Bishops wicked by comparison, whereas (wert thou strooken, as thou protests, with the vntoward euentes of thy villanies) thou shouldst find the defilings of the 7. deadly sins to haue broght thee, by a pleasant pollution, within the possitiue degree of damnation. What talk I to him of hel or damnation, whom *Lucifer* hath furnisht to infection with the painted poison of snout-holy deuotion, and all the powers of darknesse haue adorned as an intelligencer to their kingdome of the infirmities in our flourishing Church of England? To this purpose haue they inspired him with a most scurrile spirite of lying, that when his eagle-sighted enuy can truely atract no argument of infamy, his *poetica licentia* may haue a fresh supply of possibilities, that encrease by cõtinuance to a compleat libell of leasings. All you that be schollers, read but his last challenge, wherein he laies about him so lamely as though of his limping brother *Pag.* hee had lately learned to play | at cudgels. But how euer his crazed B 3 cause goes on crutches, that was earst so brauely encountered by *Pasquin* and *Marphoreus*, and not many moneths since most wittily scofte at by the extemporall endeuour of the pleasant author of Pap with a hatchet; yet is not the good olde creeple vtterly discouraged, or driuen cleane from his dounghill, but he meanes to make the persecuted Coblers once more merrie. Yet by your leaue his other dayes daunger is not so fully disgested that he shuld forget the sanctified martyrs, his brethren, those runagate Printers, to whose reuenge he bequeatheth a large Pistle of rayling Epithites, and mistearmeth our Bishoppes authoritie with a whole *Textor* of tyrannie. A few of whose milder tearms are of this making, wicked Priests, presumptuous Priests, proude Prelates, arrogant Bishops, horseleeches, butchers, persecutors of the truth, Lamhethical whelps, Spanish Inquisitours. Thinke you this myrie mouthed mate a partaker of heauenly inspiration, that thus aboundes in his vncharitable railings? yet are these nothing in comparison of his auncient burlibond adiunctes, that so pester his former edition with their vnweldie phrase, as no true syllogisme can haue elbowe roome where they are. In

18 brother. *Pag.* hee *Q.* 19 learndd *Q.*

which Alphabet these that followe may bee placed: bounsing Priests, terrible Priests, venerable Maisters, proud and pontificall Patripolitians. Gentle reader, I giue you but a tast of them by the waie, that you may knowe them the next time you meete them in your dish, and learne to discerne a poysonous scorpion from wholesome fish. *Martin*, you must thinke, was moude, when his gun-pouder papers were fired aboute his eares, and the spendthriftes, his Printers, haled to the prison their patrimonies. Wherefore I cannot blame him though he sends abroade his Letters of supplication in behalfe of his seruants that did but his bidding. The Church, the Church is persecuted amongst you, my maisters, and *Martin* gettes nere a superintendentship by the shift, but let not *Meg Law.* crie once more to the Churchwardens for her
B 3v foode, least shee | bring with her a campe royall of scoldes, to scratch out your eyes. Oh, she will declaime brauely ouer a Cuckstoole, and plaie the gyant in a narrowe lane with her distaffe. Maister *Cooper* shall haue his stipend still at Paules chaine, or else shee will sweate for it. I lyke such a wench that will stande to her tackling; why, Bishoppes are but men, and she will carrie a *Martin* in her plackarde in despite of the proudest of them all. Learne of her, you London Matrones, to make hodie-peeles of your husbandes, and leade them like good soules vp and downe the streetes by the hornes: let it be seene by your courages in scolding, that women haue soules, which a balde eloquent brother of yours denide not long since in his Sermon at Lichfielde. I, I, my maisters, you may mocke on, as you see cause, but I warrant you the good olde true-pennie *Marprelate* is not so merrie; hee sits ruminating vnder an oake, or in the bottome of a haystacke, whose bloud shall be first spilte in the reformation of the Church. And not without cause, for hee that hath so lately felte the paine of worming and launcing cannot but stande in awe of *Buls* slicing tooles one two moneths after. O, it is a hairebrande whooresonne, and well seene in Phlebotomie; if a but once take knife in hande, cha will as soone let out the seditious humours forth a Martinistes bodie, as the best he in England, that hath bin twentie yeeres practioners in Surgerie. Good munckie face Machiuell, shew but thy head once, and trie him at my request, and if he doe it not

21 *Qy. read* hodie-peekes? 26 mocke, on as you *Q*, *Peth.* *Qy. read* mocke, an you? 32 *Qy. read* hairebrainde? 36 *Qy. read* practitioner?

more handsomely then those whom thou callest Butchers and Horseleeches, then neuer trust an olde ladde whilest thou liuest. How euer it happens, thou bearest thy resolution in thy mouth at highe midnight, and hast Scripture enough to carrie thee to heauen, though thou wert hangde to morrowe. We feare not men that can kill the bodie, quoth *Martin*, because we feare God, who can cast both bodie and soule into vnquenchable fire. Doest thou feare God in deede? I praie thee, good hedge-creeper, how shall | we knowe that? What, by the smoothing of thy face, the B 4 simpering of thy mouth, or staring of thy eies? Why, if that be to feare God, Ile haue a spare fellowe shall make mee a whole quest of faces for three farthinges. But thou wilt peraduenture saie, by thy obedience vnto him. Then will I catechise thee more kindly with a fewe more Christian questions: the first whereof shall be this, wherein thou placest obedience; which if thou aunswerest, by doing that which God hath commaunded in his worde, then would I knowe of thee whether that of Paul be Canonicall or Apocripha, He that resisteth the magistrate, resisteth the ordinaunce of God. And here I am sure to be had by the eares with a Geneua note of the distinction of magistrates, but all that shall not serue your turnes, for Ile driue you from your *Dic Ecclesiæ* ere I haue done: ware the vnmasking of *Martin*, when it comes tis lyke to bee a shrewde Pistle, I can tell you. Prepare your argumentes as you will, for *Mar-Martin Iunior* meanes to make such hauocke of you in that his next peece of seruice, as all your borrowed weapons of simple *T. C.* shall not bee able to withstande. For your olde soaking Demonstrationer, that hath scrapte vp such a deale of Scripture to so lyttle purpose, Ile leaue his confusion to the vacaunt leasure of our grauer Diuines, who, I knowe, did they but once sette penne to paper, woulde grinde his discipline to powder. Thou art the man, olde *Martin* of Englande, that I am to deale withall, that striues to outstrip all our writers in witte, and iustle our gouernement forth of doores with a iest. What, wee must not let you passe with such fauourable tearmes as our graue Fathers haue done; your Bookes must bee lookt ouer, and you beaten lyke a dogge for your lying. I thinke, I thinke I shall haue occasion to close with you sweetlie in your Hay anie worke for a Cooper, and cutte off the traynes of your tedious syllogismes, that nowe haue no

27 scrapte *Q.*

B 4v | lesse then seauen or eight Termini waiting on them. Fortifie your ruinous buildinges betimes, and saie hee was your friende that badde you: for I can tell you thus much, a whole hoast of *Pasquils* are comming vppon you, who will so beleaguer your paper walles as that not one idle worde shall escape the edge of their wit. I giue thee but a brauado now, to let thee knowe I am thine enemie; but the next time you see *Mar-Martine* in armes, bidde your sonnes and your familie prouide them to God-warde, for I am eagerly bent to reuenge, & not one of them shall escape, no, not *T. C.* himselfe as full as he is of his myracles. But to pursue maister Protestationer in his common place of persecution. I remember we talkt euen now of a dudgen destinction from which my Bedlam brother *Wig.* and poltfoote *Pag.* with the rest of those patches striue to deriue theyr discipline disobedience. Our Ecclesiasticall gouernment & gouernours, say they, are wicked and vnlawfull. Why? because Sir *Peter* nor Sir *Paul* were neuer Archbishoppes of Canterbury, London, or Yorke. They were Fisher-men, and were not able. When *Cæsars* Officers demaunded their tribute to make fiue groates amongst them, then what reason is it our Bishoppes should inioy their fiue hundreds, nay, that which is more, their thousand and two thousands? They were none of these Cartercaps, Graduates, nor Doctors, therfore why should we tie our Ministrie to the prophane studies of the Vniuersitie? What is Logicke but the highe waie to wrangling, contayning in it a world of bibble babble. Neede we anie of your Greeke, Latine, Hebrue, or anie such gibbrige, when wee haue the word of God in English? Go to, go to, you are a great company of vaine men, that stand vpon your degrees and tongues, with tittle tattle, I cannot tell what, when as (if you looke into the matter as you ought) the Apostles knew neare a Letter of the booke. Iwis it were not two pins hurt if your Colledges wer fired ouer your heades, and you turnde a begging forth your fellow-
C 1 shippes, like Fryers | and Monkes, vp and downe the Countrie. I, marie, sir, this is somewhat like, now *Martin* speakes like himselfe; I dare saie for him, good man, he could be contented there were nere a maister of Art, Bachelour of Diuinitie, Doctor, or Bishop in England, on that condition he prest Fishermen, scullers, Coopers, Stitchers, Weauers, and Coblers into theyr

22 *Qy. read* Catercaps?

places. You talke of a Harmonie of the Churches, but heere would be a consort of knauerie worth the publishing to all posteritie. Would you not laugh to see *Cli.*, the Cobler, and *New.*, the souter, ierking out theyr elbowes in euerie Pulpit? Why, I am sure Ladie *Law.* would fast mans flesh a whole moneth together, but shee woulde giue either of them a gowne cloth on that condition. My selfe doe knowe a zealous Preacher in Ipswich that, beeing but a while a goe a stage player, will now take vpon him to brandish a Text agaynst Bishoppes as well as the best Martinist in all Suffolke. Why, I praie you goe no farther then Batter: haue wee not there a reuerent Pastour of *Martines* owne making, that vnderstands not a bit of Latine, nor neuer dyd so much as looke towards the Vniuersitie in his life? yet you see for a neede he can helpe discipline out of the durt, and come ouer our Cleargie verie handsomely with an heere is to bee noted. Oh, he is olde dogge at expounding, and deade sure at a Catechisme, alwayes prouided that it bee but halfe a sheete long, and he be two yeeres about it. And well too, my maisters, for such a one that vauntes himselfe to bee, as hee is, as good a Gentleman euerie inch of him as anie is in all Stafford sheere. Bee what he will, one thing I wote, hee is seldome without a good Cheese in his studie, besides apples and nuttes, although his wife can neuer come at them. I hearde not long since of a stoute conference hee had with a yong scholer, who, taking my Deske-man somewhat tardie in his disputations, told him hee was inspired with too much Logique. Wherevnto hee replyed with this solempne protestatiõ, I thank God, al the world cannot accuse me of that | arte. C 1v
I hope anon, maister *Martin*, I shall bee meetelie euen with you for your knauerie, if I goe but two mile further in your Ministrie. It is not the Primitiue Church shall beare out the Vicar of little *Down.* in Norfolke, in groaping his owne hennes, like a Cotqueane; I am to come ouer him, when I haue more leasure, for his tenne shillings Sermons at Thetforde; wherein if he raue as hee was wont to doe, Ile make him wishe that hee had beene still Vsher of Westminster. Well, to the purpose. You saie Bishoppes are no Magistrates, because they are no lawfull Magistrates. Is it euen so, brother *Timothie*, will it neuer be better, must I euer leade you vp and downe antiquitie by the nose lyke an Asse? May

11 Batter. haue *Q.* *Qy. read* Battel? 21 wiihout *Q.*

neither Scriptures nor Fathers goe for paiment with you, but still you will bee reducing vs to the president of the persecuted Church, and so confounde the discipline of warre and peace? If you will needes make vs the apes of all their extremities, why doe not you vrge the vse of that communitie wherein *Ananias* and *Saphira* were vnfaythfull? Perswade Noble men and Gentlemen to sell theyr landes, and laie the money at your feete; take awaie the title of mine and thine from amongst vs, and let the worlde knowe you heereafter by the name of Anabaptistes. Admit that the authoritie of Bishoppes were as vnlawfull as you woulde make it, yet since it is imposed vnto them by the Princes owne mouth, and ratified by the approbation of so many Kings and Emperours, as well in their particular Parliamentes as generall counsayles, you are bounde in conscience to reuerence it, and in all humilitie to regarde it, insomuch as Christ denide not tribute to *Cæsar*, an vsurper, nor appealde from *Pilate*, a Pagan, who occupied that place by the intrusion of tyrannie. Were the Israelites in captiuitie anie whit exempted from the obedience of subiectes, in that they liued vnder the scepter of *Nabuchodonesor*, an Idolater, who had blasphemed their God, defaced their Temple, and defiled their
C 2 holie vesselles? Nay, | are they not expreslie commaunded by the Lordes owne mouth, to honour him as their King? Howe can they then escape the dampnation of contempte, that, beeing priuate subiectes to such a vertuous Soueraigne as is zealous of Gods glorie, will controll her disposing of honours, and oppose vnto publique derision those the especiall pillers and ornamentes of her state, whome shee hath graced from their infancie with so many sundrie ascentes of dignities? But were this all, then shoulde not treason bee such a braunche of your religion as it is. Haue not you and your followers vndermined her Graces Throane, as much as traytours might? Call to minde the badde practise of your brother, the Booke-binder, and his accomplishes at Burie, who beeing as hotte spirited as your worshippes in the schismaticall subiect of reformation, and seeing it woulde not come of halfe kindlie to theyr contentment, made no more a doe, but added this newe Posie to her Maiesties armes: Those that bee neither hotte nor colde, Ile spue them out of my mouth, sayth the Lorde.

14 renerence *Q.* 20 defafaced *Q.* 22 King: Howe *Q.* 25 her, disposing Q. 31 might: call *Q.* 36 armes. Those *Q.*

Denie this, and Ile bring a whole Assizes, as *Obsignatos testes* of your trecherie. To come neerer to thee, Brother *Martin*. Hast not thou in thy firste booke agaynst Doctour *Bridges*, as also in Hay anie worke for Cooper, excluded her Highnesse from all Ecclesiasticall gouernement, saying shee hath neyther skill nor commission, as shee is a Magistrate, to substitute anie member or minister in the Church? And in an other place, that there is neither vse nor place in the Church for members, ministers, or officers of the magistrates making? If this wyll not come in compasse of treason, then farewell the title of Supremacie, and welcome agayne vnto Poperie. By this time, I thinke, goodman Puritan, that thou art perswaded that I knowe as well as thy owne conscience thee, namely *Martin Makebate* of Englande, to bee a moste scuruie and beggerlie benefactor to obedience, *& per consequens*, to feare neyther men nor that God who can | cast C 2v both bodie and soule into vnquenchable fire. In which respect I neyther account you of the Churche, nor esteeme of your bloude, otherwise then the bloud of Infidelles. Talke as long as you will of the ioyes of heauen, or paines of hell, and turne from your selues the terrour of that iudgement howe you will, which shall bereaue blushing iniquitie of the figge leaues of hypocrisie, yet will the eie of immortalitie discerne of your painted pollutions as the euerliuing foode of perdition. The humours of my eies are the habitations of fountaines, and the circumference of my heart the enclosure of tearefull contrition, when I thinke howe many soules at that moment shall carrie the name of *Martine* on their foreheads to the vale of confusion, in whose innocent bloude thou swimming to hell, shalt haue the tormentes of tenne thousande thousande sinners at once, inflicted vppon thee. There will enuie, mallice, and dissimulation bee euer calling for vengeance agaynst thee, and incite whole legions of deuilles to thy deathlesse lamentation. Mercie will saie vnto thee, I knowe thee not, and Repentaunce, what haue I to doe with thee? All hopes shall shake the head at thee, and saie, there goes the poyson of puritie, the perfection of impietie, the serpentine seducer of simplicitie. Zeale her selfe will crie out vppon thee, and curse the time that euer shee was maskte by thy mallice, who, lyke a blinde leader of the blinde, sufferedst her to stumble at euerie steppe in Religion, and madest

25 tearefull] fearefull *b*, *Peth.*

her seeke, in the dimnesse of her sight, to murther her mother, the Churche, from whose pappes thou lyke an enuious dogge but yesterdaie pluckest her. Howe euer, proude scorner, thy whoorishe impudencie may happen heereafter to insiste in the derision of these fearefull denuntiations, and sporte thy iesters penne at the speach of my soule, yet take heede least despayre bee predominant in the daie of thy death, and thou, in steade of calling for
C 3 mercie to thy Iesus, repeate more oftner to thy | selfe, *Sic morior damnatus vt Iudas.* And thus much, *Martin*, in the way of compassion, haue I spoke for thy edification, moued therto by a brotherly commiseration, which, if thou bee not too desperate in thy deuilish attempts, may reform thy heart to remorse, and thy pamphletes to some more profitable theame of repentance. But now haue at thee for the goodnesse of the cause, of which thou saist: We must not reason from the successe.

Trust me therein thou hast spoke wiser then thou art aware of, for if a man should imagine of fruite by the rottennesse, of garmentes by the moath frets, of wine by the sowrnesse, I warrant him for euer being good costerd-monger, broker, or vintner whiles he liues. Therefore we must not measure of *Martin* as he is allied to *Elderton* or tongd like *Will Tony*, as he was attired like an Ape on ỹ stage, or sits writing of Păphlets in some spare outhouse, but as hee is *Mar-Prelat* of Englād, as he surpasseth King & colier, in crying, So ho ho, brother *Bridges*. Wo ho ho, *Iohn* a London. Ha ha he, Doctor *Copecotes*. Doe this & I warrant you for sauoring of the fleshe, though you take the oportunity of the spirite with euery sister in Christ. Beholde the state of the low Countryes, since your Plaintife Pistler will needs make the comparison, suppose *Martin* to be the map of *Belgia dilacerata*, whose chiefe prouinces as they are wholye possessed with Spaniards, so thinke his hart and soule enhabited with spite, they Romists in the matter of Religion, and he a Papist in supremacies contradiction, her inward partes possessed with Anabaptists and Lutherans, and his more priuate opinions polluted with the dregs of them both, her farthest borders of Holland and Zeland peopled, God wot, with a small number of vnperfite Protestants, and the furthest and fewest of his thoughts

21 *Tong b, Peth.* 23 as is *b, Peth.* England *b, Peth.* 24 collier *b, Peth.* 32 spiet *b, Peth.*

taken vppe with some odde true points of Religion. How now, Father *Martin*, haue not I hit your meaning patte in this comparison? Say, wil you haue any more such interpretations? If you say *Amen* to | it, Ile also reconcile your allegoricall induc- C 3ᵛ
tion of France to the present constitutiõ of your frowardnes: but that shal not neede, since the misery of the one is the mirrour of the other, and the Reader must suppose that *Martin* would neare haue compared himselfe to Flaunders nor France, but as they reflect by allusion the distraction of his factious faith. Howeeuer you take him at the worst, yet is his welchnes perswaded that the Lord hath some speciall purpose, by preuentinge of his presse, to try who they be that are hipocrites, and what they be ẏ are innocent: And not vnlike too, for hauing interrupted the trafique of honestye, so long as thou hast, with thy coũterfet knauery, tis more thẽ hie time thy vnder-hãd treachery were broght to the touchstone of authority. You think we know not how pretily your Printers were shrouded vnder the name of saltpetermen, so that who but *Hodgkins*, *Tomlins*, and *Sims* at the vndermining of a house, and vndoing of poore men by diggyng vp their floars and breaking down their wals. No, no, we neuer heard how orderly they pretended the printing of Accidences, when my L. of *Darbies* men came to see what they were a doing, what though they damned themselues about the deniall of the deede, is periury such a matter amongst puritans? Tush, they account it no sin as long as it is in the way of protestation, being in the mind of a good old fellow in Cambridge, who, sitting in S. *Iohns* as Senior at the fellowes election, was reprehended by some of his betters, for that hee gaue his voice with a dunce like himself, contrary to oath, statute, and conscience: why, quoth hee, I neither respect oath, statute, nor conscience, but only the glory of God. Men are but men and may erre, yea, goodman *Spe.* himselfe in Paules church-yard, although he saith he hath no sinne; what maruaile is it then, though some corruption cleaue vnto our aged Gentleman by his owne confession? Learne of me to iudge charitably, and thinke that nature tooke a scouring purgation, when she voided all her imperfections in the birth of one *Martin*: which if it be so, hee is | not to be blamed, since C 4
as *Arist.* sayes, *vitia naturæ nõ sunt reprehendenda.* Gibe on, gibe

3 interpretations, if *Q*, *Peth.* 4 it. Ile *Q*, *Peth.* 11 specicll *b*: speciell *Peth.*

on, and see if your father *Mar-martin* will beare you out in it or no: you thinke the good sweete-faced prelate, *Masse Martin*, hath neuer broke sword in ruffians hal; yes, that he hath, more then one or two, if the truth were known, and fought for his wench as brauely as the best of them all; therefore take heede how you come in his way, least hee belabour you with his crabtree stile for your lustines, and teache you howe to looke into a *Martins* neaste againe while you liue. Alas, you are but young, and neuer knewe what his Bumfeging ment, for if you did, you woulde thinke fiue hundreth fistes about your eares were more then Phisicke in a frosty morning. Write or fight, which you will, our champion is for you at all weapones, whether you choose the worde or the sworde, neither comes amisse to him, he neuer took his domesticall dissention in hand to leaue it soone. All England must bee vp together by the eares, before his penne rest in peace, nor shall his rebellious mutinies, which he shrouds vnder the age of *Martinisme*, haue any *intermedium*, till religions prosperity and our Christian libertye, mis-termed of him by the last yeare of Lambethisme, doe perishe from amongst vs and depart to our enemies: then shall you see what seditious buildinges will arise on the vnfortunate foundations of his folly, and what contentious increase will come from the schoole of contempt.

If they will needes ouerthrowe mee
let them goe in hand with the
exploite &c.

HOlla, holla, brother *Martin*, you are to hasty; what, Winter is no time to make warres in, you were best stay til summer, & then both our brains wilbe in a better temperature, but I think
C 4v ere that time your | witte wilbe welny worn thredbare, and your banquerout inuention cleane out at the elbowes; then are we well holpen vp with a witnesse, if the aged champion of Warwicke doe not lay to his shoulders, and support discipline ready to lie in the dust with some or other demonstration. I can tell you *Phil. Stu.* is a tall man also for that purpose. What, his Anatomy of Abuses, for all that, will serue very fitly for an Antipast before one of *Egertons* Sermons; I would see the best of your *Trauerses* write such a treatise as he hath done against short heeld pantoffles. But one thing it is great pitty of him, that, being such a good fellow as hee is, hee shoulde speake against dice, so as he doth:

neuerthelesse ther is some hope of him, for as I heard not lõg since, a brother of his, meting him by chance (as theeues meete at the gallowes), after many christian questions of the well fare of his persecuted brethren and sistern, askt him when they should haue a game at tables together: by the grace of God the next Sabaoth, quoth *Phil.*, and then, if it shal so seeme good to his prouidence, haue at you for ames ase and the dise. I forgette to tel you what a stirre he keepes against dumbe ministers, and neuer writes nor talkes of them but hee calleth them minstrels, when his mastershippe in his minority plaide the Reader in Chesshire for fiue marke a yeare and a canuas dublet, couenanted besides, that in consideration of that stipend he make cleane the patrones bootes euerye time hee came to towne. What need more words to proue him a protestãt? did not he behaue himselfe like a true Christian when hee went a wooing for his friend *Clarke*, I warrant you hee saide not God saue you, or God speed you, with good euen or good morrow, as our prophane woers are wont, but stept close to her, with peace bee with you, very demurely, and then told her a long tale, that in so much as widowhoode was an vncleane lyfe, and subiect to many temptations, shee might doe well to reconcile her selfe to the Church of God, in the holy ordinance of matrimony. Manye wordes past to this purpose, but I | wotte well the conclusion was this, that since D 1
she had hitherto conuerst with none but vnregenerate persons, and was vtterly carelesse of the communion of Saints, she would let him, that was a man of God, put a new spirite into her, by carnall copulation, and so engraft her into the fellowshippe of the faithfull; to which that shee might more willingly agree, hee offered her a spicke and spanne new Geneua Bible, that his attendant Italian had brought with him, to make vp the bargaine. But for all the Scripture he could alledge, it should not bee, *Phil. Stu.* was no meate for her tooth, God wote he could not get a penyworth of leachery on such a pawne as his Bible was, the man behinde the painted cloth mard all, and so, O griefe, a good Sabaoths day work was lost. Stand to it, *Mar-martin Iunior*, and thou art good inough for ten thousand of them; tickle me my *Phil.* a litle more in the flanke, and make him winche like a resty iade, whereto a dreaming deuine of Cambridge, in a certain priuate

21 ceconcile *Q.* 23 woote *c.w.* 38 cextain *Q.*

Sermon of his, compared the wicked. Saist thou me so, good heart, then haue at you, Maister Compositor, with the constructiõ of *Sunt oculos clari qui cernis sydera tanquam.* If you be remembred you were once put to your trumpes about it in *Wolfes* Printing-house, when as you would needes haue *clari* the infinitiue moode of a verbe passiue, which determined, you went forwards after this order. *Sunt* there are, *oculos* eies, *qui* the which, *cernis* thou doest see, *clari* to be cleare, *tanquam sydera* as the Stars. Excellent well done of an old Maister of Arte, yet why may not hee by authority challenge to himselfe for this one peece of worke the degrees hee neuer tooke? Learning is a iewel, my maisters, make much of it, and *Phil. Stu.* a Gentleman euery haire of his head, whom although you doe not regard according as he deserues, yet, I warrant you, *Martin* makes more account of him then so, who hath substituted him long since (if the truth were well boulted out) amongst the number of those priuy *Martinists,*

D 1v which he threatens to place in | euery parish. I am more then halfe weary of tracing too and fro in this cursed common wealth, where sinfull simplicitye, pufte vppe with the pride of singularity, seekes to peruerte the name and methode of magistracy. But as the most of their arguments are drawn from our graue fathers infirmities, so al their outrageous endeuors haue their ofspring from affected vainglory. Agreeing with the saying of *Hug.*: *Innobedientiæ morbus ex superbiæ tumore procedit, sicut sanies ex vlcere;* The disease of disobedience proceeds from the swelling of pride, as madnesse from some vntollerable vlcer. The cause whereof *Gregory* thus expresseth: *Dum plus exquirunt,* saith he, *contemplando quam capiunt, vsque ad peruersa dogmata erumpunt, & dum veritatis discipuli esse negligunt, humiliter magistri erroris fiunt;* Whiles by study they search out more then they vnderstand, they breake forth into peruerse opinions, and whiles they neglect to be the schollers of truth, they most basely become the schoolemaisters of error. For such is the boldnesse of our boyish deuines that they will leape into the pulpet before they haue learned *Stans puer ad mensam,* and talke very desperately of discipline before they can construe *Qui mihi discipulus. Qui*

Hug. lib. de duod. abusio.

Greg. lib. 8.

[1] *duod.*] duob. *Peth.*

18 tracing] *a*: trotting *b*. 21 our] the *b*. 23–4 *Hug. Innobedientiæ Q.* 25 *vlcere.* The *Q.* 27 expresseth. *Dum Q.* 30 *fiunt.* Whiles *Q.*

venit institui, saith *Cassiodorus*, *antequam instituatur*, *alios instituere cupit*, *&c.*; The nouice that comes to be informed desireth to enforme others before he bee enformed himselfe, and to teach before hee bee taught, to prescribe lawes before he hath redde *Litleton*, & play the subtile Philosopher before he knowes the order of his sillables: he wil needes haue subiects before he can subiugate his affections, and couets the office of a commander before he hath learned to stoupe to the admonitions of his elders, and beginneth to instruct and perswade before he bee instructed and perswaded in any kind of art, which their folly, once fuelled with ỹ frowardnesse of blind zeal, makes thē cōfound cōtempt with gods true worship, & open their mouths against his ordinance, as did the Prophets against *Ierobo-|ams* hil altars. *T. C.* in D 2
Cambridge first inuented this violent innouation, when as his mounting ambition went through euery kinde of *Ambitus*, to compasse the office of the Vice-chauncelour-ship. But after he saw himselfe disfauourd in his first insolence, and that the suffrages of the vniuersity would not discend to his dissentious indignityes, his seditious discontent deuised the meanes to discredite that gouernement which he through his il behauiour might not aspire to. Thē began his inueterat malice to vndermine the foundations of our societies and reduce our Colledges to the schooles of the Prophets, to discard all degrees of art as antichristian, to condemne all decency in the ministery as diabolicall, and exclude all ecclesiasticall superiority forth the Church as *Apocripha*. No sooner had these new fangled positions entred the tables of young students, but Singularity, the eldest childe of heresy, consulted with male-conted melācholy how to bring this misbegottē scisme to a monarchy. To which purpose hipocriticall zeale was addrest as a pursuiuant into all places of Suff., Norff., Essex, and Midlesex, with expresse commandement from the sinod of Saints to proclaime *T. C.* supreme head of the Church. This past on thus, whiles the sworde of iustice slept in his scaberd, whose vnprouident eie, neglecting the beginning of such burnings, hath added a more confirmed fury to the flame, which hath now taken hold on ỹ buildings of our bishopricks. How it hath raged in those

2 *&c.* The *Q.* 10 fuelled] swelled *b.* 11 ỹ] the *b.* zeale *b.* thē] *om. b.* 18 difcend *Q.* 28 *Qy. read* male-content *or* male-contented *?* 28–9 misbegottē . . . monarchy] *Peth.*: misbegottēscisme to a monarchy *a*: misbegotten scisme to monarchy *b.* 36 Bishopricks *b.* those] our *b.*

quarters before mentioned, to ỹ vtter impouerishing of the allegeance of the communalty, and lamentable vndoing of the estimation of diuers other knights and gentlemen, the whole course of the high commission may testify. Nether was this plague of apostacy vndeserued of their inconstancy, who forsook ỹ true seruice of God, to worship the idoll of Warwicke. Put case his reading be gret and his malice more, that he hath plodded through ten cart loade of paper, and bin the death of
g. lib. ten thousand pound of candels, yet, as *Gregory* saith, *perit omne quod agitur, si non humilitate custodiatur;* Whatsoeuer is done
D 2v doth vanish to infamy, if it be not vpholden by humi-|lity: What childe doth not see into the pride of his heart, that first entertained the impudency of controlling antiquity, and preferd the poison of his owne peruerse opinions before the experience of so
. 2. ser. many Churches, counsails, and fathers? *Quæ maior superbia,*
tr. saith *Bernarde, quam vt vnus homo toti congregationi iudicium suum preferat, tanquã ipse solus habeat spiritũ Dei?* What greater pride then that one man should aduance his iudgement aboue the sentence of a whole congregation, as if he alone had the spirit of God? Pride ouerthrew the towr of *Babell*, prostrated *Golias*, hũg vp *Haman*, kild *Nichanor*, consumed *Herod*, destroied *Antiochus*, drowned *Pharao*, subuerted *Senacherib*, &, I hope, will also confound arrogant *T. C.* and all his accomplishes in the Lords good time. And now that I haue vnburdened my shoulders of the weight of his learning, Ile ribroste my brother *Martin* a litle, for obiecting to my Lord Archbishop the not answering of his bookes. Therefore first would I know of sweete M. sauce malapert whether he would haue the care of the common-wealth, and forseing consultation of domestical and forreine affaires, resigned to the retorting of *T. C.* his vnreuerent railings. Next, what such equall proportion his mastership finds in their places, that the grauity and mildnes of the one should stoupe his attention so low as the iangling leuity of the other. Were there no other thing to refrayn his grace from combating with a common barretour then this, that *in discordia nemo benedicit Dominum*, it were sufficiẽt to pleade his absence from this inferiour fight. But when he considers that

1 y^e^ *Peth.*: ỹ *Q.* 10 *custodiatur.* Whatsoeuer *Q.* 12 that] ihat *Q.* 15 *superbia*] *superioria Q, Peth.* 16 *toti*] *Peth.*: *tori Q.* 17 *prefcrat Q.* *Dei.* What *Q.* 28 cousultation *Q.* 35 in *Q, Peth.*

saiyng of *Augustine, Nullus est modus inimicitiis, nisi ob tempus obtẽperemus iratis*, ther is no meane of mallice, vnles for a time we giue place to the furious, & that which another sais, *Sicut nihil est deformius quam respondere furiosis, ita nihil vtilius quam tacere prouocatis;* As there is nothing more vnseemely then to aunswere the froward, so there is nothing more profitable then scilence to such as are prouokt. Let him vse the libertye of his speache as hee please, and detracte from | his learninge in what tearmes hee D 3 see cause, yet will all Christendome admire his perfection, when *T. C.* his singularitie shall go a begging vp and downe the low Countries. I will not gainsaie but your reuerend Pastor may haue as knauish a vaine in writing as your selfe, and fasten a slander on the Saintes of heauen, as soone as anie of your sect, for *nil tam facile est*, as *Ierom* sayth, *quam ociosum & dormientem de aliorum labore & vigiliis disputare;* There is nothing so easie for a man that is sluggish and idle, as to call in question other mens watchings and labours. *Mens praua*, sayth *Gregorie, semper in laboribus est, quia aut molitur mala quæ inferat, vel metuit ne sibi ab aliis inferantur, & quicquid contra proximos cogitat, hoc contra se a proximis cogitari formidat;* A wicked mind liuès in continuall toile, because it eyther meditates the iniuries which he is about to inferre, or feares some reproch to be inferred by others, and whatsoeuer hee pretendes agaynst his neighbor, the same he mistrusts to be pretended against himselfe. If *T. C.* hath made thee his atturney, to vrge the not answering of his bookes, then I praie thee bee my Mercurie this once, and tell him thus much from *Mar-Martine*, that he hath vndone more Printers with his py-bald pamphlets, then his dish-clout discipline will sette vp agayne this seauen yeeres. Much inkehorne stuffe hath hee vttered in a iarring stile, and intruded a greate deale of trashe to our eares by a daintie figure of *idem per idem*, but for anie new peece of arte he hath shewed in those idle editions, other then that his famous aduersary hath before time confuted, he may wel enough bequeth it to Dunce or Dorbel, whẽce his blundering capacity is lineally descended. What, maister *T. C.*, you think that no man dare touch you, because you haue plaid the scuruie scolde anie time

Ierome. per Osea

Greg. 1.

1 *Augustine. Nullus Q.* 4 *furiosis ita, nihil Q.* 5 *prouocatis.* As *Q.* 8 tearmes hoe *Q.* 15 *disputare.* There *Q.* 16 is] Is *Q.* others *Q, Peth.* 19 *inferantur*] *infeãnt Q, Peth. proximis*] *proximus Q, Peth.* 20 *formidat.* A *Q.* 33 time] tsme *Q.*

these twentie yeeres, but Ile so hamper your holynes for all the offences of your youth, as all geering puritans shall haue small cause to insult and reioyce at my silence. Then see whether I
D 3v dare stand to the defence of | your defame or no. Take heede, good-man Howlyglasse, that I make not such a hole in your coate the nexte Tearme, as *Martine* and his sonnes shall not sowe vp in hast; I tel you I am a shreud fellow at the vncasing of a fox, and haue cats eyes to looke into euerie corner of a Puritans house. I warrant you my brother *Pag.* will saie so, by that time I haue talkte with him a little, who although hee bee none of the straightest men that euer God made, yet hath he as good skill in milche bullocks as anie huswife within fortie miles of his head. Let him alone, and if he doe not know by a cowes water how many pintes of milke she will giue in a yeere, then wyll he neuer help his wife to make cheese agayn whiles hee liues: and without offence to his Pastorshippe bee it spoken, hee will saie pretyly well to a henne, if shee bee not too olde, alwayes prouided shee haue a neaste of cleane strawe in his studie, and hee groape her with his owne handes euening and morning. Then see if hee doe not make three pounds a yeere of her ouer and aboue all costes and charges. I, marie, sir, is not this a husbande in deede, that, besides the multiplying of the Church of God in his householde ministerie, will keepe his wife and familie by crosse bargaines a whole twelue moneth? What woulde he doe, my maisters, if he had two good legges, that wil thus bestirre him in his vocation with one and a stump? The world may saie he is lame, and so forth, but hee that had seene him runne from Houns. the other daie, for getting his maide with childe, woulde neuer thinke so. I meruaile with what face our Bishoppes could depriue such a man of God, that beeing knowen to bee a most heauenly whooremaister, a passing zealous worldling, and a most mortified schismatique, was fitter iwis to teache men then boyes. Bee ruled by *Martine*, and send him home into Deuon-sheere, or else hee will wrappe all your Cleargie once agayne in Lazarus winding sheete. Which fauour if hee obtayne contrarie to desert, I woulde wishe him, as
D 4 a friend, neare more to vrge | Fathers to sweare at the Funt that the children that are brought thether to be christned are of none but their owne begetting, lest olde *Ragdale* plie him, as he did in

36 Father *c.w.*

times past, about the shoulders with his plowe staffe. Haue with you, *Giles Wig.*, to Sidborough, and let vs haue you make another Sermon of *Sedgwickes* pack-prickes: or such another Prayer as you did of three hours long, when as a friend of yours (that best knew your armes) cast in the Rammes hornes at your windowe. If you be remembred, it was the same time when you cride, Come, wife, come, seruants, let vs fall on our knees, and praie to the Lorde God to deliuer vs from all euill temptation, for the deuill is euen new gone by, and looke where he hath throwne in his hornes at the windowe. *Giles, Giles*, I haue to talke with ⁷you for your saucinesse with the right Honorable the Earle of Huntington, in whose presence you (though of all other vnworthie) then beeing, when conuersant with other Gentlemen, hee calde for a boule of Beere, which brought, and set downe by him, and he yet busie in talke, you tooke verie orderlie from before him, and trilled it off without anie more bones, bidding his man, if he would, goe fill him another. And what of all this, I praie you? was that such a wonderous matter? doth *Giles* care for anie of your Lordes, Earles, Barons, or Bishops? No, no, no barrell better herring with him: we are all made of one and the selfe same molde, and *Adam* signifieth but red earth. I could tell you a tale worth the hearing, that would counteruaile *Glib.* of Haustead, were it not that it woulde make M. *Wig.* as cholerike as when he burst in the Church maugre excõmunication, & knockt the keies about ꝯ Sextens head for not opening vnto him. Come on it what wil, in spite of midsũmer moone, you shal haue it as it is, therefore attend, good people, to the vnfortunate sequele. *G. W.* of Wig. house, in the land of little Wittam, chosen to the place & function of a pastor, by those reuerend elders of the Church, Hicke, Hob, and Iohn, Cutbert C., the Cobler, and New., the broomseller, | *cum multis* D 4ᵛ *aliis quę nunc prescribere longum est*, at length seased (after many yeeres stragling) on the superintendentship of Sidborough, wher hauing worn out three or four pulpits with the vnreasonable bounsing of his fistes, it was his chance on a time to haue one quarrell more to another of them: so that, no sooner mounted on her backe, but he began to spurre her with his heeles, to boxe her about the eares with his elbowes, and so pittiously misuse her in

1 the] his *b.* 9 new] *Qy. read* now? 22 Hamstead *b.* 31 *que Q, Peth. Qy. read perscribere?* 32 stragling on *Q, Peth.*

euerie part as would haue greeued anie heathen Ioyner to the heart to beholde. Nor coulde his Text containe him in this choler, or pleade anie pardon or pittie for this poore pulpit, but he wold needes ride her to death from one Diocesse to another, from Yorke to London, from London to Canterbury, from Canterburie to Winchester, and all without a baite, insomuch that, tyred in his waie homeward to his Text, he had stucke in the myre for anie more matter hee had, had not Iohn a Borhead come into the church as he did. Whom he espying in good time, crost the midwaie of a sentence to let flie at him in this manner: As for the discipline which those wretches doe hinder, looke, looke, good people, where that vile whooremaster Iohn a Borhead comes in piping hot from Clayphams wife. Whose verie sight put him so cleane besides himselfe, that he could neyther goe forward nor backward, but stil repeated, Iohn a Borhead, Iohn a Borhead, that vild whooremaister Iohn a Borhead: to whom with the Father, the Sonne, and the holy Ghost, be al honor and praise both now and for euer. Ah hah, maister *Martine*, what get you nowe by your red cap? Whether was Clayphams wife or Iohn a Borhead more in fault, for marring this good sermon? If I. a Borhead, then is it not best for him to come in my brother *Wig.* waie, least he stabbe him, as hee did the Drumme once for playing after seruice. How euer it was, may it please you, Lordes of the spiritualtie, in consideration of these laudible premises, to sende him home to his charge, that hee may once more preache in the yewe tree.

E 1 My brother *Vd.* of | Kingston thinkes Ile spare him for his wiues sake, that is reported to be as good a wench as euer playde her prises at Pancredge, although she is not altogether such a gyantesse as my brother *Wig.* female, but *forma fragilis*, and Ale is not worth a button if it be too stale. Wherefore prepare you, good neighbour *V.*, to vndergoe the crosse of persecution. *Martine* hath vaunted you to be a venterous knight, and I doe meane to breake a launce with you, ere you and I part. Wherfore what saie you nowe to the matter, is Christ descended of bastardisme or no, as you gaue out in the pulpyt? Would you not haue your tongue cut out for your blasphemie if you wer wel serued? Are you a notable preacher of the word of God and a vehement reprouer of sin, that thus seeke to discredit the fleshly descent of our Sauiour? I thought you such another,

7 hss *Q.* 10 manner. As *Q.* 23 ener *Q.* 29 *fragulis Q, Peth.*

when I first sawe you emblazoned in *Martins* bookes. Tis you that are so holy that you wil not forsooth be seene to handle anie monie, nor take golde though it shoulde filch it selfe into your purse, but if God moued the heartes of anie of your brethren or sistren in the Lord, to bring in pots, beds, or houshold stuffe into your house, you would go out of doores of purpose whiles it was brought in; and then if anie man aske you how you come so well storde, your answere is that you know not how, but only by the prouidence of God. I must belabour you, when all is done, for your backbiting & slandering of your honest neighbours, and open inueighing against the established gouernment in your sermons. Helpe him, *Martin*, or else his vpbraided absurdities will make thee repent that euer thou belyedst or disgracedst *Hone*, *Cottington*, or *Chatfield* in his cause. May it please you therefore that are in authoritie, considering how reuerently hee hath abused Christs birthright, to restore him to preach, that the blockes, stockes, and stones of Kingstone do not crie out against you. I followe the riuers of folly, whiles the fountaines of infection do propagate their poison. *Martin* all this while thinkes himself in league with obscuritie, whiles Phe-|bus, the discouerer of Mars & Venus E 1v
adultery, hath streamed his bright day light into the net where he daunceth. Blush, squint-eied caitife, since thy couert no more wil contain thee. *Cælum te contegit, non habes vrnam.* Therfore let al posteritie that shall heare of his knauerie attend the discouery which now I will make of his villanie. *Pen.*, *I. Pen.*, welch *Pen.*, *Pen.* the Protestationer, Demonstrationer, Supplicationer, Appellationer, *Pen.* the father, *Pen.* the sonne, *Pen. Martin Iunior*, *Martin Martinus*, *Pen.* the scholler of Oxford to his friend in Cambridge, *Pen. totum in toto, & totum in qualibet parte*, was somtimes (if I be not deceiued) a scholler of that house in Cambridge whereof D. *Per.* was maister. Where, what his estimation was, the scorn wherin he liued can best relate. For the constitution of his bodie, it was so cleane contrarie to all phisiognomie of fame, that a man wold haue iudged by his face, God and nature deuising our disgrace had enclosde a close stoole in skinne, and set a serpentine soule, like a counterfet diamond, more deepe in dong. Neither was this monster of Cracouia vnmarkt from his bastardisme to mischiefe: but as he was be-

16 stockes] *om. Peth.*

gotten in adultery and conceiued in the heate of lust, so was he brought into the world on a tempestuous daie, & borne in that houre when all planets wer opposite. Predestination, ỹ foresaw how crooked he should proue in his waies, enioyned incest to spawne him splay-footed. Eternitie, that knew how aukward he shoulde looke to all honesty, consulted with Conception to make him squint-eied, & the deuill, that discouered by the heauens disposition on his birth-day, how great a lim of his kingdom was comming into the world, prouided a rustie superficies wherin to wrap him as soone as euer he was separated from his mothers wombe: in euerie part whereof these words of blessing were most artificially engrauen, *Crine ruber, niger ore, breuis pede, lumine lustus.* To leaue his natiuitie to the Church porch, where the parish found him, & come to his riper yeres, that now had learnd
E 2 *Puerilis* of the poore mans | boy, and nere as pretily entred in Aue Marie English as any parish clarke in those parts. I am to tel you how laudibly he behaued himselfe in Peterhouse, during the time of his subsistership. First, therfore, he began with his religion at his first comming thether; *Hoc scitote viri*, that he was as arrant a papist as euer came out of Wales. I tell you *I. a P.* in those daies would haue run a false gallop ouer his beades with anie man in England, and helpt the Priest for a shift to saie Masse at high midnight; which, if need were, I doubt not but he would do at this houre. It was not for nothing, my masters, that he so be-baited his betters, for shewing the people the relique of our Ladies smock in his sermon, & open detecting of all their other blind superstition. Say what you will, he is a close lad, & can carrie a ring in his mouth, though all the world see it not: what though hee now dissemble with the time, & disguise his Spanish heart in a Precisians habit. May not he hereafter proue a necessarie mẽber in conspiracies common wealth, & aduantage the holy league as much in this meanes of sedition, as all *Philips* power by inuasion? Simple English men, that cannot see into pollicie before it supprise your peace, nor interrupt the ambition of trechery before it hath besieged your prosperitie, doe you beholde whiles innouations bud, & do not you feare lest your children and family be poisoned with the fruit? The Scythians

9–10 wherinto wrapt him *Q*, *Peth.* 13 *Qy. read luscus?* 15 by, *c.w.* 35 prosperitie. Doe *Q.* 37 fruit. The *Q.*

are barbarous, yet more fore-seeing then you, who so detested al forren innouations, tēding to the derogation of theyr ancient customes, that they kild Anacharsis for no other cause but for ỹ he performed the rights of Sibil after the manner of the Grecians. What should I vpbraide your simplicitie with the Epidaurians prouident subtiltie, who fearing least their Countrie men shoulde attract innouations from other nations, & especially from their riotous neighbors, the Illirians, interdicted theyr merchants from al trafick with them, or trauaile vnto them; but least they should be vtterly destitute of their commodities, they chose a graue man amongst | them, knowen to be of good gouernment & reputation, E 2v who dealt continually for the whole Countrie in the waie of exchange, and meruailously augmented their wealth by the reuerence of his wisedome. But you, fond men, as in garments so in gouernment continually affecting new fashions, thinke no man can be saued ỹ hath not bin at Geneua. Your beleefe forsooth must be of that Scottish kinde, & your Bibles of the primitiue print, else your consciences, God wot, are not of the cannonical cut, nor your opinions of the Apostles stamp. *Pen.*, with Pan, hath contended with Appollo, and you, lyke Midasses, haue ouerprised his musick. Good God, ỹ a Welch harpe should inchant so many English harts to their confusiō, especially hauing nere a string belonging to it but a treble. Had a syren sung, & I drownd in attending her descante, I would haue bequeathed my bane to her beautie, but when Cerberus shall barke & I turne back to listen, thē let me perish without pittie in the delight of my liuing destruction. Deceit hath tooke vp his seat in a dunce, & you thinke him a saint, because he comes not in the shape of a deuil. We know M. *Pen. intus & in cute*, first for a papist, then for a Brownist, next for an Anabaptist, & last for ỹ blasphemous *Martin*, whose spirite is the concrete compound of all these vnpardonable heresies. But had not the frantike practise of his youth throughly founded his confirmed age in this furie, I woulde haue imagined his vpstart spite a wōder aboue vsual speech, whereas now the coniectures drawen from his cradles detract frō his mallice all maruels. For whiles hee was yet a fresh man in Peterhouse, and had scarce tasted, as we say, of *Setons modalibus*, he began to affect factions in art, & shew himselfe openly a studi-

24 descante. I *Q.* 30 ỹ] y^e *Path.*

ous disgracer of antiquitie. Who then such an vnnatural enemie to *Aristotle*, or such a new-fãgled friend vnto *Ramus*? This one thing I am sure of, hee neuer went for other then an asse amongst his companions and equalles, yet such a mutinous block-head was he alwaies accounted that through town and Colledge he was cõmonly called the seditious dunce. For one while he wold be
E 3 libelling | against *Arist.* and all his followers he knew, another while hee would all to be-rime Doctour *Perne*, for his new statutes, & make a by-word of his bald pate, yea, had the Dean, President, or any other officer neuer so litle angerd him, they were sure ere the weeke went about to haue hard of it, in some libell or other. This humor helde him at that time, when, by conuersing with French men neare Christes Colledge, of a Papist hee became a Brownist: how afterwards from a Brownist hee fell to bee an Anabaptist, I referre it to those that knewe his after behauiour in Oxford. But for his last discent, *a malo in peius*, from an Anabaptist to be that infamous *Martin*, impute it to the age of his heresies, that are now in there Haruest. Neither would I haue you thinke there was no more heades in it then his owne, For I can assure you to the contrary, that moste of the Puritane preachers in Northampton shire, Warwick shire, Sufolke and Northffolke, haue eyther brought stone, strawe, or morter to the building of this *Martin*. Only *Pen.* found nothing but *ry*, which the last part of his name affordeth sufficiently. You may see what it is for a nest of hornets to hiue together, oh, they wil make braue combes to choake bees withal, if they be let alone but one quarter, not so much as *T. C.* himselfe but will haue the helpe of his fellow Brethren, if he hath any thing to write against Bishops. Were not al the elected in Cambridge assembled about the shaping of the confutation of the Remish Testament? O, so deuoutly they met euery Friday at Saint *Laurence* his Monastery, wher the counsails & fathers were distributed amongst seueral companies, & euery one of the reformed society sent there combined quotations weeke by weeke in a Capcase to my brother *Thomas*, yet wandring beyond sea; such a Chaos of common places no apothegmatical *Lycosthenes* euer conceited. Bishops

8 Doctour *Q.* 13 Colledge of a Papist, hee *Q.* 22 Northssolke *Q.* 24 sufficiently, you *Q*, *Peth.* 29 Bishops, were *Q*, *Peth.* 30 Testament, O *Q*, *Peth.* 35 succh *Q.*

were the smallest bugs that were aimed at in this extraordinary beneuolence, God shield the court haue escapt their collectiõs. Some thing it would proue in the end | if it wer published, that is E 3v pouldred with the brains of so many Puritan springols, and polluted with the pains of such an infinite number of Asses. Much good do it you, M. *Martin*, how like you my stile, am not I old *Ille ego qui quondam* at ẏ besleeuing of a sichophant? Alas, poore idiot, thou thinkest no man can write but thy selfe, or frame his pen to delight except he straine curtesie with one of thy Northren figures; but if authority do not moderate the fiery feruence of my enflamed zeale, ile assaile thee from terme to terme, with *Archilochus*, in such a compleat armour of Iambicks, as the very reflexcye of my fury shall make thee driue thy father before thee to the gallows, for begetting thee in such a bloody houre. O God, that we two might bee permitted but one quarter, to try it out by the teeth for the best benefice in England, then would I distill my wit into incke, and my soule into argumentes, but I would driue this *Danus* from his dunghill, and make him faune like a dog for fauour at the magistrates feete. But it is our English policy to aduantage our enemies by delaies, and resist a multitude with a fewe, which makes sedition seede before the haruesters of our souls suppose it in the blade: it is not the spirite of mildenesse ẏ must moderat the hart of folly; dogs must be beaten with staues, & stuborn slaues cõtrolled with stripes. Authority best knows how to diet these bedlamites, although *Segnior Penry* in his last waste paper hath subscribed our magistrats infants. Repent, repent, thou runnagate lozill, and play not the Seminary any longer in corners, least thy chiefest benefactors forsake thee, and recouer the pouerty of their fines by bringing the pursiuants to thy forme. I heare some vnderhande whisperers and greeneheaded nouices exclaime against our Bishops for not granting thee disputation. Alas, alas, brother *Martin*, it may not be: for thou art known to be such a stale hackster with thy welch hooke, that no honest man wil debase himselfe in buckling with such a braggar. But suppose we should send some Crepundio forth our schools to beat thee | about the E 4 eares with *ergo*. Where should this *sillogistica concertatio* be solemnized? what, in our Vniuersity schooles at Oxford, or in

7 ẏ] ỹ *Q*. 15 houre, O *Q*. 18 *Qy. read Dauus?* 21 seditõn *Q*, *Peth*.

puluere Philosophico at Cambridge? No, they were erected in time of Popery, and must be new built againe before they can giue any accesse to his arguments. Truly I am afraide ẏ this Generall counsaile must be holden at Geneua, when al is done, for I know no place in England holy inough for their turne, except it be some barne or out-house about Bury, or some odde blind cottage in the hart of Warwicke shire; and thither, peraduenture, these good honest opponents would repaire without grudging: Prouided alwaies that they haue ther horse-hire and other charges allowed them out of the poor mans box, or ẽls it is no bargain. All this fadges wel yet, if we had once determined who shold be father of the act. Why, what a question is that, when we haue so many persecuted elders abroad. The blinde, the halt, or the lame, or any serues the turn with them, so he hath not on a cloak with sleues, or a cap of the vniuersity cut. Imagin that place to be furnished; where shall we finde moderators, that may deale indifferently twixt both parts? *Machiuell* is dead many a yeare agoe, or els he had bene a fit man for this may-game; therefore whom shal we haue now, since it must be neither yours nor ours? Some vpstart countrey Gentleman, that hath vndone all his tenants by oppression, euen such a one as *Scar.* of Warwicke shire, that, being a noted *Martinist*, befrinded his poor coppi-holder *Criar*, & turnd him out of all that ere he had very orderly. How thinke you, my lay brethren? is not here a trim conuocation towards? But mark the end of it, and then you may haps see odde buffeting with the buttond bookes, and battring down of bishopricks. *Giles* of Sidborough wil off with his gown at least, & make demonstrations of Logique with his fists, like *Zeno*; what though he be low and cannot reach so hie as an Archbishop, may not he stãd like a iackanapes on his wiues shoulders, & scold for the best game with all that come? He is, sauing a reuerence, a
E 4ᵛ spritish disputer, and a pestilence felow at an vnper-|fect sillogisme. Nay, mark me well, & take me at my words, he shal speake false Latine, forge a text, abuse a Bishop, or make a lie of reuelation for more then I speak off with any man in Englãd. Neither do I flatter him herin for he hears me not: if I did, it were no matter, considering that *virtus laudata crescit.*

5 Enland *Q.* 8 grudging. Prouided *Q.* 22 be frinded *Q.*
27 with] *om. Peth.* 32 dispuer *Q.* pestilent *Peth.* 35 Engãld *Q.*

From iest to ernest, I appeale to you, Gentlemen, how ridiculous in pollicy this disputation would proue if it were granted. First for there Bibles, the touchstone of all controuersies, they must bee of their fauorites translation, or els they will deny there authority as friuolous. Admit they go to the originall (which but few of them vnderstand), they wil haue euery man his sundry interpretation. Let our deuines alledge any text, they will expound it as they list, say the fathers or other auncient writers what they will. For such is the growth of ther arrogancy that they are not ashamed to compare themselus with *Ierome* or *Austen*, and in their tedious sermons preach against them as prophane. If this thē bee any betraying of the wretchednesse of our cause (as they call it) not to dispute with them that deny all principles, not to contend with thē that wilbe tride by none but themselus, I refer it to all considerate iudgementes, that haue no more experiēce in the actions of peace then a reasonable soule may afford. The more pacified sort of our Puritans would needs perswade the world that it is nought but a learned ministry which their chāpion *Martin* endeuors: were it no otherwise his pardon were easely sealed; but those that know the treasō of his books can report of his mallice against Bishops. One thing I am perswaded, that he neither respects the propagation of the Gospel, nor the prosperity of the Church, but only the benefite that may fall to him and his boulsterers by the distribution of Bishoprickes. Beshrewe mee but those Church-liuings would come well to decayed courtiers. O, howe meerilye the Dice woulde runne, if our lustye laddes might goe to hazard for halfe a dozen of these Dioses. Not a page but woulde haue a flinge at some or | other impropriation or F 1
personage: and, in conclusion, those liuings which now maintaine so many schollers and students would in two or three yeares be all spent in a Tauerne amongst a consort of queanes and fidlers, that might carouse on their wine-bench to the confusion of religion. Well, to proceede in this text of reformation: is not this thy meaning, *Martin*, that thou wouldest haue two and fiftie thousand Pastors, for two and fiftie thousand Parish churches in England and Wales? If thou saiest the word, we will haue a place in both Vniuersities; begin in Oxford first with the fresh-men, and so go vp to the heades of the Vniuersitie, and then count

19 otherwife *Q.* 23 bnt *Q.* 27 Dioses[es] *Path.*

how many thou canst make. Our Beadles that know the number best would needes perswade vs that of all sortes there is not full three thousand: in Cambridge they say there is not so many by a thousand: then call thy wits together, and imagin with thy selfe, out of these three thousand and two thousand of all gatherings, how many good preachers may be mustered: some foure hundreth as I gesse; peraduenture thou maist rebate them to some fiftie or threescore, because there is no more open-mouthes of thy profession in both Vniuersities: How farre this fiftie is from fiftie thousand, a farthing worth of Arithmetike will teach you: where wilt thou haue then a competent number to fill vp those defects of dum ministers? inspiration I perceiue must helpe to patch vp your knauerie, and then welfare the cobler of Norwitch, that being one morning somthing earelie at Saint Androwes, and the Preacher not come before the Psalme was ended, stept vp into the pulpet verie deuoutly, and made me a good thriftie exhortation in the praise of plaine dealing. If this bee not true, aske the Maior that committed him to prison for his labour. Such another Doctour would he proue, that standing in election for a liuing that was then in her Maiesties bestowing, came to be examined by men of grauitie in the circumstance of his sufficiencie, who
F 1v discending eft soones | into his vnschooled simplicitie, gaue him this litle English to be made in Latin: There be three Creedes, the Nycen Creede, Athanatius Creede, and the Apostles Creede, all which ought to be belieued vpon paine of damnation. The good simple superintendant, that saw himselfe so hardly beset, craued respite to compasse this vulgar, which graunted, after some deliberation he began thus to go forward, *Tria sunt Creda, vnum Niceni, alterum Athanasii, tertium Apostolorum, quæ omnes debent esse creditum, sub pœna condemnationis.* I, marrie, Sir, here is a peece of scholershippe of the new cut, which for the goodnesse of the Latin might haue borne a part in the Pewteres paggeant. I keepe a register of ten thousand such knacks. Why, there is not a Presician in England that hath abused arte, or mistoken a metaphor, but I haue his name in blacke and white; what say you to that zealous sheepebyter of your owne edition in Cambridge, that saide the wicked had a scabbe, a braune, and a crust on their conscience, being so full of their wilie gilies, that we that are the

23 Latin. There *Q.* 27 graunted *Q.* 32 *Qy. read* Pewterers?

true children of God can not tell how to concerne them? or was not hee a sound carde, that, talking of the maiestie and authoritie of the scriptures, said they were the sweete meates of Saintes, the houshold stuffe of heauen, and the home spunne cloth of the Lords own loombes, being deliuered from the stonebow of his mouth when he appeared in glory on mount Sinay? But this is nothing to the good sport of that is behinde. What, I must tell you of a fellow that trolles in his rethorike like *Martin* in his riddles. This hors-holy father, preaching on a time in Saint Maries at Oxford, came off with this mannerly comparison: There is an vglie and monstrous beast in our tongue called a hogge, and this vgly and monstrous beast in boistrous and tempesteous weather lifts vp his snoute into the ayre, and cryes wrough, wrough: euen so (deare people) the children of God in the troublesome time of temptations, cry, Our helpe is | in the name of the Lord. Such F 2
another woodcocke was he of Yarmouth, that said openly in the pulpet, whosoeuer weares a vayle is an whore without exception, and on an other time, two women comming to be churched, whereof the one wore a vaile, the other went without, he began his thankesgiuing in this forme: Let vs giue God thankes for the safe deliuery of one of our sisters; for the other let vs not giue God thankes, for she is a straunger, and we haue nothing to doe with her; I take her to be *Dinah* the harlot, that sat by the high way side, for she hath a vayle ouer her face. In the next place to him shall he be put that, railing on the Papists in his Sermon, alledged this argument to confute their religion, Nay (saith he) you may gather what a wicked and spotted religion this papistrie is, for Campion himselfe, that was accounted their chiefest piller, was reported to haue had the poxe. I haue another in my tables, that, handling that place of *Iosua* where *Rahab* entertained his spies, would needes conclude all Inkeepers to be harlots, because *Rahab* the harlot was an Inkeeper. I shall run my penne out of breath, if I articulate all the examples of their absurdeties that I could. Haue not Trinitie Hall men in Cambridge a preaching brother in Bury yet in sute, for saying all ciuillians were papists? To let him passe for a patch, that, being maister of none of the meanest Colledges in Cambridge, and, by the oth of his admission, bound to take no money for preferments, made answere to one

8 rethotike *Q.* 19 without. He *Q*, *Peth.* 24 face, In *Q.*

that offered him fortie markes to make his sonne fellow: God forbid I should take any money, for it is against my oth, but if you will giue me it in plate, Ile pleasure him in what I may. This is the dreamer, if you be aduised, that is indebted aboue two thousand houres to the Vniuersitie, which he hath borrowed by three and foure at a time vpon seuerall sundayes preaching as it came to his course: it is a shame for him that he doth not pay them, professing such puritie as he doth. *Martin*, thou seest
F 2v I | come not abruptly to thee like a rednosde ieaster, that in the pride of his pottle-pots curries ouer a reuelling riffe raffe of Tapsterly tauntes, and course hempen quippes, such as our brokerly wits doe filsh out of Bull the Hangmans budget, but I speake plaine English, and call thee a knaue in thine owne language. All the generation of you are Hipocrites and belli-gods, that deuoure as much good meat in one of your brotherly loue meetings, as would wel-nye victuall the Queenes ships a whole moneth. It is a shame for you to exclame so against Cardes, and play thus vnreasonably at Maw as you do. Gaffe *Martin*, doe you remember whom you vpbraided by Primero? well, let not me take you at Noddy anie more, least I present you to the parish for a gamster; this is the ninth set that you haue lost, and yet you will not leaue off. Beware *Anthony Munday* be not euen with you for calling him Iudas, and lay open your false carding to the stage of all mens scorne. I maruell *Pasquill* comes not away with his legends, considering that the date of his promise is more then expired. It seemes he stayes for some Saintes that are yet to suffer, and wants none but *Martin* to make vp his legend of Martyres: if it be so, I woulde thou wouldest come aloft quickly, that we might haue this good sport altogether, and not liue euer in expectation of that which is not. O, I could furnish him to the proofe with such a packet of male and female professors, as the world might not patterne. A good old dunstable doctor here in London should be the formost of them, that saide his wife was as good as our Ladie: and another time, quarrelling with one of his neighbours, that was a sadler, about setting vp of the Organs, in a good zeale he lift vp his fist, and stroke out two of his fore teeth, like a right man of peace: where haue you liued, my brethren, that you haue not heard of that learned Presbiter, that,

5 Vnersitie *Q.* 21 this the *Peth.*

talking how *Adam* fell by eating of the Apple, discourst thus: *Adam* eate the Apple and gaue it to his wife, whereby is to | be F 3
noted that the man eate and the woman eate: the man eate, but how? a snap and away: the woman eat, but how? she laide her thumbe on the stalke and her finger on the coare, and bitte it ouerthwart, in which byting it ouerthwart she broke all the commaundements; insomuch as vnder ten greene spots the ten commandements in euery Apple are comprised: and besides that corrupted her fiue senses. From whence wee may gather this obseruation, that a woman alwaies eates an Apple ouerthwart. Why, this is sound diuinitie, and apt for to edify, *Sed abeundum est mihi*, and from the Cleargie must I leape to the Laytie. Wherefore God euen, good man *Dauy* of Canterbury, and better lucke betide thee and thy limbes then when thou dauncedst a whole sunday at a wedding, and afterwardes repenting thy selfe of thy prophane agilitie, thou entredst into a more serious meditation against what table thou hadst sinned, or what part was the principall in this antike iniquitie. The eyes they were the formost in this enditement, but the legs, (O, those leude legs,) they brought him thither, they kept him there, they leapt, they daunced, and I leualted to the Vials of vanitie: wherefore, what didst thou but like a true christian chastised them accordingly? The scripture saith, if thine eye offend thee, plucke it out; *Dauy* saith, my hose and shoes haue offended mee, therefore will I plucke them off. This text thus applyed, off went the wollen stockings with a trice, and they with the good neates leather shoes were cast both into the bottom of a well. The sinners thus punished, and all parties pleased, home went the pilgrim *Dauy* barefoote and barelegge. And now since wind and tide serues, now I care not if I cut ouer to Ipswitch: there is a Cowdresser there that I am sure will entertaine me if she be not dead, great *Iane* of Ipswitch they call her, one that hath beene a tender mother to many a Martinist in her time, and hath a very good insight in a canne of strong wine. A good vertuous | Matrone is she and a wise, hauing no fault but this, that she will F 3ᵛ
be drunke once a day, and then she lyes her downe on her bedde, and cryes, O my God, my God, thou knowest I am drunke, and why I should offend thee, my God, by spuing thus, as I do. I haue

34 will *c.w.*

not beene in Essex yet, but Ile set in my staffe there as I go home, for I haue a petition for my brother that made the Sermon of Repentance to deliuer vp for me to the Councell: but it must not be such a one as he deliuered for him selfe to my Lord Treasurer, beginning with O sweet Margery, could thy eyes see so fare, thy hands feele so farre, or thy eares heare so farre &c., for then euerie seruing man will mocke vs, but it must be of another tune, with most pitifully complaining, that a man can not call an Asse, asse, but he shall be had *coram nobis*. In this vaine enough, because actions of the case are chargeable, & Guilde men vncharitable. If the dogge *Martin* barke againe, Ile hold him tugge for two or three courses, and then beware my blacke booke you were best, for I haue not halfe emboweld my register. Amend, amend, and glorie no more in your hipocrisie, least your pride and vaine glory betray our prosperitie to our enimies, and procure the Lords vengeance to dwell in the gates of our citie. The simple are abused, the ignorant deluded, & Gods truth most pitifully peruerted, and thou art that most wretched seducer, that vnder wolues raiment deuourest widowes houses. Visions are ceast, and all extraordinarie reuelation ended, although a good fellow in Cambridge, hearing all thinges might be obtained by prayer, prayed two dayes and two nightes for visions: wherefore broach no more heresies vnder colour of inspiration: if thou doest, thou art like to heare of me by the next Carrier. And so bon nute to your Noddishippe.

Yours to command as your owne
for two or three cudgellings at all times.

Cuthert Curriknaue
the yonger.

5 fare] *Qy. read* farre *?* 9 *nobis*, In *Q.*

A WONDERFVLL STRANGE AND MIRACVLOVS ASTROLOGICALL PROGNOSTICATION

Entry in the Stationers' Register: None.

Editions: (1) *Early:*

[1591.] ❧ A Wonderfull, | *ſtrange and miraculous, Aſtro-* | logicall Prognoſtication for | this yeer of our Lord God. | 1591. | Diſcouering ſuch wonders to | *happen this yeere, as neuer chaunced* | ſince Noes floud. | *Wherein if there be found one lye,* | the Author will looſe his credit | for euer. | By Adam Fouleweather, Student | in Aſſe-tronomy. | [ornament] | Imprinted at London by *Thomas* | *Scarlet.*

No colophon. Quarto. Not paged.

Collation: A-D^4. (A 1) Title, *v.* blank. A 2 '¶ To the Readers health.' *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. To the Reader. A 3 '❧ Of the Eclipses that shall happen this present *yeere,* . . .' *B. L., Rom., and Ital.* R-T. A Prognostication. D4 wanting, probably blank.

Signatures in B. L. with Arabic numerals, except A 2, of which the letter is Roman. Fourth leaves not signed.

Catch-words: A 2. (But-)chers B 1. And C 1. if D 1. to

Copy used: That in the Bodleian Library (Malone, 729).

(2) *Modern Editions:*

1883–4 (Gro.) The Complete Works of Thomas Nashe . . . edited by A. B. Grosart. Vol. ii, pp. 139–69.

From the copy at the Bodleian Library.

1892. Elizabethan & Jacobean Pamphlets. Edited by George Saintsbury. London: Percival and Co. pp. 184–208.

In the series called 'The Pocket Library of English Literature.' This text is apparently a reprint of Grosart's.

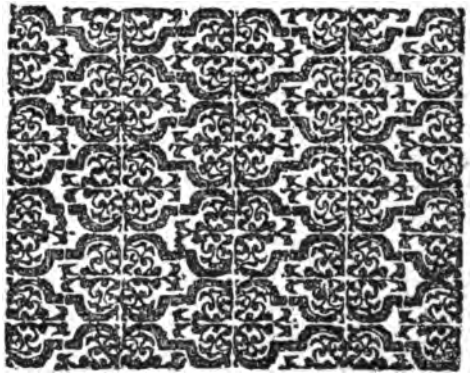
A Wonderfull,

Strange and miraculous, Aſtro-
logicall Prognoſtication for
this yeer of our Lord God.
1591.

Diſcouering ſuch wonders to
happen this yeere, as neuer chaunced
ſince Noes flood.

Wherein if there be found one lye,
the Author will looſe his credit
for euer.

By Adam Foulweather, Student
in Aſſc-tronomy.



Imprinted at London by *Thomas*
Scarlet.

¶ To the Readers health. A 2

SItting, Gentlemen, vpon Douer cliffes, to quaint my selfe with the art of Nauigation and knowe the course of the Tides, as the Danske Crowes gather on the Sandes against a storme, so there appeared on the downs such a flock of knaues that by Astrological coniectures I began to gather that this yeere would proue intemperate by an extreme heat in Sõmer, insomuch that the stones in Cheap side should be so hot that diuers persons should feare to goe from Poules to the Counter in the Poultrye: wherupon I betook me to my Ephimerides, and, erecting a figure, haue found such strange accidents to fall out this yeere, Mercury being Lord and predominate in the house of Fortune, that many fooles shall haue full cofers, and wise men walke vp and downe with empty pursses; that if Iupiter were not ioyned with him in a fauourable aspect, the But-|chers of East-cheape should doo little A 2v or nothing all Lent but make prickes: seeing therefore the wonders that are like to fall out this present yeere, I haue for the benefit of my Countrymen taken in hand to make this Prognostication, discoursing breefelye of the Eclipses both of Sunne and Moone, with their dangerous effectes like to followe; which if God preuent not, many poore men are like to fast on Sondaies for want of food, and such as haue no shooes to goe barefoot, if certaine deuout Coblers proue not the more curteous: but yet Astrologie is not so certaine but it may fayle; and therfore diuers Hostesses shall chaulke more this yeere then their Guests wil wipe out: so that I conclude, whatsoeuer is saide by art, *Sapiens dominabitur astris.*

Your freend and Student in Asse-trologie.
Adam Fouleweather. |

4 on] ou *Q.* storme: so *Q*, *Gro.* 27 art. *Sapiens Q*, *Gro.* 28 *dominalitur Q.*

A 3

Of the Eclipses that shall happen this present yeere, to the great and fearfull terrifying of the beholders.

IF we may credit the authenticall censures of Albumazar and Ptolomey about the motions of celestiall bodies, whose influence dooth exitat and procure continuall mutability in the lower region, we shal finde ☾ the Moon this yeere shall be eclipsed,
A 3ᵛ which shall happen in one of ♍ 12. moneths & some of the | foure quarters of the yeere, whose pointes as they shall be totallye darkened, so the effectes shall be wondrous and strange. For Cancer being the sole house of the Moone dooth presage that this yeere fruits shall be greatly eaten with Catterpillers as Brokers, Farmers, and Flatterers, which, feeding on the sweate of other mens browes, shall greatlye hinder the beautye of the spring, and disparage the growth of all hottest hearbes, vnlesse some northerly winde of Gods vengãce cleere the trees of such Catterpillers, with a hotte plague and the pestilence: but Cancer being a watrie signe and cheefe gouernour of flouds and streams, it foresheweth that Fishmongers, if they be not well lookt to, shall goe downe as farre as Graues end in Wherries and forestall the market, to the great preiudice of the poore, that, all Lent, ground their fare on the benefit of Salte fishe and red herring: besides it signifieth that Brewers shal make hauocke of Theames water, and put more liquour then they were accustomed amongst their Maulte; to the ouerthrowe of certaine crased Ale knights, whose morning draughtes of strong Beere is a great staye to their stomacks: a lamentable case if it be not lookt into and preuented by some speedye supplication to the woorship-
A 4 full order of ale cun-|ners. But in this we haue great hope that, because the effects cannot surprise the cause, diuers Tapsters shall trust out more then they can get in; and although they fill their Pots

but halfe full, yet for want of true dealing die in the Brewers debt.

Thus much for the watry signe of Cancer, and because this Eclipse is little visible in our horison, I passe it ouer with this prouiso to all seafaring men, to cary more shirts then one with them a ship boord, lest to their great labor they spend many houres in murthering their vermin on the hatches.

The Eclipse of the Sunne.

THe Eclipse of the Sun according to Proclus opinion is like to produce many hot and pestilent infirmities, especiallie amongst Sumners and Pettifoggers, whose faces being combust with many fiery inflamatiues shal shew ỹ dearth that by their deuout drinking is like to ensue of Barly, if violent death take not away such cõsuming mault worms: diuers are like to be troubled with such hotte rewmes in their heads that their haire shall fall off: and such hot agues shall raigne this yeere, with strange feuers and calamaties, | that if the Sunne were not placed in a colde signe, A 4v Renish wine would rise to ten pence a quarte before the latter end of August: but diuers good Planets being retrograde foretelleth that Lemmans this yeere shalbe plenty, insomuch that many shall vse them to bedward, for the quallifying of their hot and inflamed stomackes. And Mars being placed neere vnto the Sunne sheweth that there shalbe a great death among people: olde women that can liue no longer shall dye for age: and yong men that haue Vsurers to their father shal this yeer haue great cause to laugh, for the Deuill hath made a decree that, after they are once in hell, they shall neuer rise againe to trouble their executors: Beside that by all coniecturall argumentes the influence of Mars shall be so violent that diuers souldiers in partes beyond the seas shall fall out for want of their paye, and heere in our meridionall clyme great quarrelles shal be raised between man and man, especially in cases of Law: gentrye shall goe check mate with Iustice, and coyne out countenance ofttimes equitie: the poore sitting on pennylesse benche shall sell their Coates to striue for a strawe, and Lawyers laugh such fooles to scorne as cannot keep their crownes in their pursses.

B 1 Further, there is like to be great falling out | amongst Church men and certaine fond sects of religion like to trouble the commons: selfe conceipters and ouer holy counterfeites that delight in singularitie shall rise vp and despise authoritie, presuming euen to abuse the higher powers, if Saturne with a frowning influence did not threaten them with Tibornes consequence. But wheras the Sun is darkned but by digits, and that vpon ☍ south points, it presageth great miseries to Spain and those Southerlye Countries: Friers and Monks shal heat them so this yeer with confessing of Harlots, that their crownes shall wax balde of the one accord, to the great impouerishing of the Spanish Barbers: Surgeons in Spain shall wax rich, and their Hospitals poore; such a pestilent mortallitie is like to fall amongst those hipocriticall massemongers. The Dukes, Marquesses, & Counties shall haue their dublets closed with such Spanish buttons that they shal neuer proue good quiresters, for the hotte and inflamed rewmes fallen down into their throats: It is further to be feared that, because the Eclipse hapneth in Iulye, there will through the extrem heat grow such abundãce of Fleas, that women shall not goe to bed before twelue a clocke at night, for the great murthers and stratagems they are like to commit vpon those little animalls. |

B 1v And whereas this Eclipse falleth out at three of the clocke in the afternoone, it foresheweth that manye shall goe soberer into Tauernes then they shall come out: and that he which drinkes hard and lyes cold shal neuer dye of the sweate, although Gemini combust and retrograde sheweth that some shall haue so sore a sweating that they may sell their haire by the pound to stuffe Tennice balles: but if the Beadelles of Bridewell be carefull this Summer, it may be hoped that Peticote lane may be lesse pestered with ill aires then it was woont; and the houses there so cleere clensed that honest women may dwell there without any dread of the whip and the carte: and I finde that the altitude of that place and of Shordich are all one eleuated, and 2 degrees, and vnder the zenith or verticall point of Venus, which presageth that sundry sorts of men and women shall be there resident: some shalbe so short heeld & so quesie stomackt that they shal ly in their beds while noon, by which means they shal grow so ful of grosse humors that they shalbe troubled with strange timpanies & swellings in

3 *Qy. read* counterfeiters *?* 12 pestilenit *Q.* 34 venus *Q.*

their bellies, vncurable for fortye weekes vntill they be helped by the aduice of some skilfull Midwife.

Besides, other of the same sex and faction | shall learn to B 2
cosin young nouices, and fetch in young Gentlemen, to the great ouerthrow of youth, if some sharpe and speedye redresse be not fetcht from the woorshipfull Colledge of the Phisitions in the parrish of S. Brides. But heere by the waye, gentle Reader, note that this Eclipse sheweth that this yeer shall be some strange birthes of Children produced in some monstrous forme, to the greefe of the Parentes and fearefull spectackle of the beholders: but because the Eclipse chaunseth Southerlye, it is little to be feared that the effectes shall fall in England: yet somewhat it is to bee doubted that diuers Children shall be borne, that when they come to age shall not knowe their owne Fathers: others shall haue their fingers of the nature of Lyme twigges, to get most parte of their liuing with fiue and a reache: some shall be born with feet like vnto Hares, that they shal run so swift that they shall neuer tarry with maister, but trudge from poste to piller, till they take vp beggars bush for their lodging: Others shall haue Noses like Swine, that there shall not be a feast within a myle, but they shall smell it out: But especiallye it is to be doubted that diuers women this yeere shall bee borne with two tungs, to the terrible greefe of such as shall marry them, | vttering in their B 2v
furye such rough cast eloquence that knaue and slaue shalbe but holyday woords to their husbands. And whereas this fearefull Eclipse dooth continue but an houre and a halfe, it signifieth that this yeere womens loues to their husbands shall be very shorte, some so momentarye that it shall scarse continue from the Church doore to the wedding house; and that Hennes, Capons, Geese, and other pullin shall little haunt poore mens tables, but flye awaye with spittes in their bellies to fatte Churlles houses, that pamper themselues vp with delicates and dainties. Although very fewe other effectes are to be prognosticated, yet let me giue this caueat to my Countrymen, as a clause to this wonderfull Eclipse: Let such as haue clothes enow, keep themselues warme from taking of colde: and I would wishe rich men all this winter to

1 iheir *Q.* 12 fall (*first* l *broken*) *Q*: fail *Gro.* 15 their] theie *Q.* the] he *Q.* 27 loue *Gro.* 32 dainties: although *Q*, *Gro.* 35 Eclipse. Let *Q*, *Gro.*

sit by a good fire, and hardlye to goe to bed without a Cuppe of Sack, and that so quallified with Suger that they proue not rewmatick: let them feede daintilye and take ease enough, and no doubt according to the iudgement of Albumazar, they are like to liue as long as they can, and not to dye one hower before their time.

Thus much for this strange Eclipse of the Sunne. |

B 3 ¶ *Of the second Eclipse of the Moone, which is like to fall out when it chaunseth, either before the* 31. *of December or els not at all, this present yeere,* 1591.

THe second Eclipse of the Moon shalbe but little seene in England, wherevpon the effectes shall be nothing preiuditiall to our clyme: yet as the bodye of the Moone is neuer obscure in part or in whole, but some dangerous euents doo followe: so I meane to set downe breefely what is to be lookte for in these westerne partes of the worlde.

First therefore it is to bee feared that the Danes shall this yeere bee greatlye giuen to drincke, insomuch that Englishe Beere shall there be woorth fiue pence a stoape, that their Hoffes and tappe houses shall be more frequented then the Parishe Churches, and many shall haue more Spruce Beere in their bellies then wit in
B 3ᵛ their heads: wherevpon | shall growe Apoplexies and colde palsies in their legges, that they shall diuers times not bee able to stand on their feete. Vpon this shall growe great commoditye to the Potters and Glasse makers, for it is like there shall be a great ouerthrowe of them, if there bee not some act made for drinking in blacke Iackes. But if the weather prooue seasonable, and the Haruest great, and the Barnes full of Corne, Rye is like to be cheap in Denmarke, and bread to be of a reasonable size, for the releeuing of the poore. Mary, Fraunce is like to haue a great dearth of honest men, if the king preuaile not against these

12 *yeere.* Q. 33 releeuing Q.

mutenous Rebelles of the League, and Papists in diuers places to be plentye, if God or the King rout them not out with a sharpe ouerthrow: But this hope we haue against that rascall rabble of those shauelinges, that there was found in an olde booke this Prophecie spoken about Ierusalem long since by a Iew: The tree that God hath not planted shall be pulled vp by the roots. Some curious Astronomers of late dayes, that are more Propheticall then Iuditiall, affirme that Martin the kill-hog (for his deuout drincking by the Pope canonized a Saint) shall rise againe in the apparell of a Minister, and tickle some of the baser sorte with such lusty humors in their braines | that diuers selfe conceited fooles shal B 4 become his disciples, and grounding their witlesse opinion on an heriticall foundation, shall seeke to ruinate authoritie and peruert all good orders established in the Church, to the great preiudice of vnity and religion, tituling thẽselues by the names of Martinistes, as the Donatists grew from Donatus: were it not that the Moone being in Taurus, which gouernes the neck and throat, shewes that the Squinancie shall raigne amongst them, and diuers for want of breath dye of the strangling. Now for that Capricornus is a signe wherein Luna is often resident, it prognosticateth a great death amongst hornde beasts. The Butchers shall commit wilfull murther vpon Sheepe and Oxen, and diuers Keepers kill store of Buckes, and reserue no other fees to their selues but the hornes, insomuche that, if the Person of Horne-Church in Essex take not heede, there maye hap to prooue this yeere some Cuckoldes in his Parrish.

But there is like to bee concluded by an act set downe in Graues ende Barge, that hee that wypes his Nose and hath it not shall forfeite his whole face, and that all such as are Iealous ouer their wiues without cause are worthie to bee punisht | with the B 4ᵛ horne plague for their labour. And wheras this Eclipse is farre from the signe Pisces, it shewes that there shall bee much stinking fish this yere at Billings gate, and that Quinborowe oyster boates shall ofte times carrie knaues as wel as honest men: but let the Fish-wiues take heed, for if most of them proue not scoldes, yet because Pisces is a signe that gouernes the feete, they shall weare out more shooes in Lent then in anie two months beside through the whole yeere, and get their liuing by walking and

6 roots: some *Q*, *Gro.* 8 (] *before* by *in l.* 9 *Q*, *Gro.* 16 Donates *Q*.

crying, because they slaundered Ram alley with such a tragical infamie. The rest I conceale as friuolous, and little necessarie to be touched in this Prognostication.

A declaration of the generall disposition of sundrie conceited qualities incident vnto mens mindes & natures throughout these foure quarters of the yere, by the merrie influence of the Planets, with some other tragicall euents and obseruations worthie the noting, contayned vnder each seperated reuolution.

And first of the inclination of the Winter quarter. |

C 1 Winter, the first Astronomicall quarter of the yeare, according to my vsuall account, whatsoeuer Ptolomie sayes, beginneth sooner with poore men than with rich, graunted so by the malignant influence of Saturne, whose constellation is that suche as haue no mony nor credit shall want coles & woode, and be faine to stande and starue for colde, while olde pennifathers sit and toast them selues by the fire. The winter beginning at that instant when the Sunne makes his entraunce into the first degree of Capricornus, that Hiemall solstitiall signe shewes that by naturall inclination this quarter is generally fleugmatike, and that ale shall be of suche great authoritie that the Bakers basket shall giue the wall vnto the Brewers barrell, and a halfe pennye drie doe homage vnto a halfe pennye wet; the weather and season being so colde that diuerse for feare of the frost shall sit all daye at Tables and Cardes, while their poore wiues and families fast at home for their follies. And in respect that I finde three of the seauen Planetes to be in waterie signes, as Iuppiter, Mars, and the Moone, it signifieth that diuerse persons both men and women for want of wine or strong drinke shall goe to bedde sober against
C 1v their willes: that Sea-faring men shall haue ill lucke | if either their shippes hit agaynst rockes or sticke in the sandes: that there shall bee such great hoarie frostes that men and women shall creepe to bedde together, and some of them lie so long till they bee fetchte out with a Bason. Heere Saturne retrograde in Gemini shewes that there shall this Winter fall such great fogs and mists that diuerse riche men shall loose their purses by the

16 toast] wast *Gro.* 20 ale] all *Q, Gro.* 23 wet. The *Q, Gro.*
25 familes *Q.* 30 willes. That *Q, Gro.*

high waie side, and poore men be so weather beaten by the crafte of vsurers that they shall begge their bread by the extremitie of such extortion: but Mercurie and Venus beeing congregated in Sagitarie prognosticateth that, for want of faire weather, such as haue but one shirt shall go woolward till that be a washing, and that water-men that want fares shall sit and blowe their fingers till theyr fellowes row betwixte the olde Swanne and Westminster. And by reason that Mars, that malignant Planet, hath nothing to doe in that Hiemall reuolution, souldiers this Winter for the most parte shall lie still in garrisons, and shall not be troubled with more monie than is necessarie. Beeing also greatly to bee feared that through the extreame colde diuerse poore men shall die at riche mennes doores: pittie shall bee exiled, good woorkes truste ouer the sea with | Iacke a lent, and Hospitalitie banisht as a signe of popish C 2 religion: and were it not that some moist shoures shal moderate the hardnes of the frost, Charitie should for want of house roome lie and freeze to death in the streets: diuerse great stormes are this yere to be feared, especially in houses where the wiues weare the breeches, with such lowde windes that the women shall scolde their husbands quight out of doores, wherevpon is like to fall great hailestones as bigge as ioynd stooles, that some shall haue their heads broken: and all through the froward disposition of Venus. But Mars comes in and playes the man, who beeing placed in Gemini, that gouernes armes and shoulders, presageth that sundrie tall fellowes shall take heart at grasse, who, armed with good cudgels, shall so lambeake these stubborne huswiues that the wind shall turne into another quarter, and so the weather waxe more calme and quiet. Such greate floudes are like to insue, through this Hiemall distemperature, that diuerse men shall be drowned on drie hilles, and fishe, if they could not swimme, were vtterly like to perish. Eeles are like to bee deere if there bee few or none taken, and plentie of poutes to bee had in all places, especiallie in those coastes and Countries where weomen | haue C 2v not their owne willes. Nowe, Gentle Reader, in respect of diuerse particular circumstances, drawne from the daily motions, progressions, stations, retrogradations, aspects, and other appointmentes of fixed and wandring stars, I am induced to set downe that such as haue no fire shall feele most cold, and that wierdrawers, if they

14 iacke *c.w.* 17 gxeat *Q.* 33 had *c.w.*

plye not their worke, shall feele no great heate, that they in Russia shall suffer more preiudice by the sharpenesse of Winter than the Spaniards: and yet one thing is to bee hoped for at the handes of Mercurie, that this winter mony shall haue a fall, for Philip and Mary shillings that heretofore went for 12.d. shall now passe from man to man for 6.d. a peece.

The distemperance of this quarter is like to breede many sickenesses and sundrie diseases as well in young as in old, proceeding either of corrupt and vicious bloud or of superabundance of crude and raw fleugmatike humors: as Cephalagies or paines in the head, which shall make men dizzy, that some shal stagger & stumble vp & downe the streetes till they haue stolne a nappe to quiet their braines. Ach in the shoulders shal raine amongest diuerse women that haue shrewes to their husbands, and diuerse drunken men shall bee pestured with surfets. Maidens this winter shall
C 3 haue strange stitches & gri-|pings of the collicke, which diseases proceed by too much lying vpright: and men shall be troubled with such paine in the eies that they shall not know their owne wiues from other women, with coughs, rumes, and itchings, which I omit.

Of the Spring time.

Winter being finished with the last grade of the watry signe Pisces, at the Suns ioyful progresse into the first degree of Aries, the second quarter of our vsuall yere, commonly called the spring, cõmeth next, which beginneth when grasse begins to sproute, & trees to bud. But to treate of this present season, forasmuch as I find the planets to be contradictorily disposed in signs & mansiõs of diuerse & repugnant qualities, I gather that this spring will be very il for schollers, for they shal studie much and gain litle, they shall haue more wit in their heads then money in their purses, dunces shal proue more welthie then diuers doctors, insomuch that sundrie vnlettered fooles should creep into the ministerie, if the prouident care of good Bishops did not preuent thẽ. And by the opinion of Proclus, women are like to grow wilful, & so variable that they shall laugh & weepe, and all with a
C 3v winde: Butchers shal | sell their meate as deare as they can, and if they be not carefull, horne beastes shall bee hurtfull vnto them, and some shall bee so wedded to swines flesh that they shal neuer

10 humors. As *Q, Gro.* 22 Aries. The *Q, Gro.* 35 sel *c.w.*

be without a sowe in their house as long as they liue. This spring, or vernall reuolution, being naturally hot and moist, is like to be verie forwarde for sprouting fieldes and blooming trees, and because Saturne is in his proper mansion, olde men are like to bee froward, and craftie knaues shall neede no Brokers, vsurie shalbe called good husbandrie, and men shalbe counted honest by their wealth, not by their vertues. And because Aquarius hath somthing to do ♒ this quarter, it is to be doubted that diuers springs of water will rise vp in vintners sellers, to the great weakning of their Gascon wine, & the vtter ruine of the ancient order of the redde noses. March Beere shalbe more esteemed than small Ale.

Out of the old stock of heresie, this spring, it is to be feared, will bloome new scismaticall opinions and strange sects, as Brownists, Barowists, & such balductum deuises, to the great hinderance of the vnitie of the Church, & confusion of the true faith, if the learned doctor sir T. Tiburne be not taskte to confute such vpstart companions with his plain & dunstable philosophie. Cancer is | busie in this spring tide, and therefore it is like that C 4 florishing bloomes of yong Gentlemens youth shalbe greatly anoide with caterpillers, who shall intangle them in such statutes & recognances that they shall crie out against brokers, as Ieremy did against false prophets. Besides, thogh this last winter nipt vp diuers masterles men & cut purses, yet this spring is like to afford one euery tearme this ten yere in Westminster hall: Barbers if they haue no worke are like to grow poore, and for that Mercury is cōbust and many quarelles like to growe amongst men, lawiers shall proue rich & weare side gowns and large consciences, hauing theyr mouths open to call for fees, and theyr purses shut when they shoulde bestowe almes. But take heed, O you generation of wicked Ostlers, that steale haie in the night from gentlemens horses, and rub their teth with tallow, that they may eate little when they stand at liuery, this I prognosticate against you, that this spring which so euer of you dies shall leaue a knaues carcasse in the graue behind him, and that they which liue shall hop a harlot in his clothes all the yere after. But aboue all let me not hide this secret from my countrymen, that Iupiter being in aspect with Luna discouereth that diuers men shal drinke more thē they bleed, | & Tailers shall steale nothing but what is brought vnto C 4ᵛ

2 reuolution] resolution *Q*, *Gro.* 4 to] io *Q*. 38 and *c.w.*

them; that poulters shall bee pestered with rotten egs, & Butchers dogs make libels against Lent, that affoordes no foode but herring cobs for their diet.

Diseases incident to this quarter, as by Astrologicall & philosophicall coniectures I can gather, are these following: Prentises that haue ben sore beaten shall be troubled with ach in their armes, and it shall be ill for such as haue sore eies to looke against the Sun. The plague shall raigne mortally amongst poore men, that diuerse of them shal not be able to change a man a groate. Olde women that haue taken greate colde may perhaps be trobled with the cough, and such as haue paine in their teeth shall bee grieuouslie troubled with the tooth ach. Beside, sicke folke shall haue worse stomackes then they which be whole, and men that cannot sleepe shall take verie little rest: with other accidentall infirmities, which I doe ouerpasse.

A declaration of the disposition and inclination of the Summer quarter.

When the Sunne hath made his course through the vernal signs,
D 1 Aries, Taurus, & | Gemini, at his passage vnto the solsticiall estiuall signe Cancer, the third parte of an English yeere, called Summer, taketh his beginning, this yere, as Ptolomie sayth, the twelfth of Iune, but as my skill doth coniecture, it beginneth when the wether waxeth so hot that beggers scorne barnes and lie in the field for heate, and the wormes of Saint Pancredge Church build their bowers vnder the shadow of Colman hedge. The predominant qualities of this quarter is heate and drynesse, whereby I doe gather that, through the influence of Cancer, bottle Ale shall be in great authoritie, and wheat shall doe knightes seruice vnto malte. Tapsters this quarter shall be in greater credite than Coblers, and many shall drinke more then they can yearne. And yet, because Mercurie is a signe that is nowe predominant, women shall be more troubled with fleas then men, and such as want meate shall goe supperlesse to bedde. Besides, this quarter greate hurlie burlies are like to bee feared, and greate stratagems like to bee performed, thorough the opposition of Mars and Saturne: for Butchers are like to make greate hauocke amongest flies, and

17 *Summer*] *Gro.*: *Winter Q.* 20 Cancer. The *Q*, *Gro.* 21 beginning this *Q*, *Gro.* yere: as *Gro.*

beggers on Sunne shine dayes to commit great murthers vpon their rebellious vermine, and the knights of Coppersmiths hal | to doo D 1v great deedes of armes vpon Cuppes, Cannes, pots, glasses, and black iacks; not ceasing the skirmish til they are able to stand on their legges.

Further it is to bee doubted that, because Venus is in the house of Loue, that Millers, Weauers, and Tailors shall be counted as theeuishe as they are knauishe: and Maides this quarter shall make sillyebubbes for their Louers, till some of them Calue with the Cowe for companye. But Iupiter in his exaltation presageth that diuers young Gentlemen shall creepe further into the Mercers Booke in a Moneth then they can get out in a yere; and that sundry fellowes in their silkes shall be appointed to keep Duke Humfrye company in Poules, because they know not wher to get their dinner abroad: if there be great plenty of Cherries this Summer, they are like to come to a penny the pound, and Costard-mongers this Summer shall be licenst by the Wardens of their hall, to weare and carry baskets of Apples on their heads to keepe them from the heat of the Sun. But Libra adust and retrograde foretelleth that there is like to be a league between diuers bakers & the pillorye, for making their bread so light, and the Sun shall be so hotte that it shall melte awaye the consciences of diuers couetous men, and | that, by the meanes of Venus which is in the D 2 house of Scorpion, women shall bee so loue sicke that Sumners and ciuil lawiers shall haue greate fees thorough the aboundance of such sinfull clients, and diuerse spirites in white sheetes shall stand in Poules and other Churches, to make their confessions. But this by the waie learne of me, shomakers shall proue so proud that they shall refuse the name of souters, and the Tailer and the louse are like to fall at martiall variance, were it not the worship-full company of the Botchers haue set downe this order, that he that lies in his bed while his clothes be mending neede not haue a man to keepe his wardroppe. But amongst all, the Smithes haue put vp a supplication to the Alecunners, that he which goes dronke to bed, and as soone as hee wakes dares not carouse a hartie draught the next morning, shall drinke two daies together small Ale for his penance.

2 hal] hap *Gro.* *The last letter is apparently an inverted* l: *there is certainly not room for* p. 3 gxeat *Q.* 7 *Qy. read* Loue, Millers?

This variable season is like to bring variable accidents, for diuerse diseases which will much molest the people: namely the plurisies which shall grieue many, that they shall haue farre more knauerie than they haue honestie; diuerse fluxes, and especiallie in poore mens purses, for they shall bee so laxatiue, that money
D 2v shall runne out faster | then they can get it; the small pockes among children, and great amongst men; infirmities in the tong, some shall doe nothing but lie; with others which I let pas.

A declaration of the inclination and disposition of the Autumnall or haruest quarter.

Haruest and the last quarter of this yeere beginneth, as I coniecture, when corne is ripe. But for the nature of this autumnall reuolution, because it beginneth in Libra I gather there shall be more holes open this quarter then in all the yeere beside, and strange euents shall chance, for knaues shall weare smockes, and women shall haue holes in their heartes, that as fast as loue creepes in at one, it shall runne out at another. Yet Leo, being a firie signe, foresheweth that diuerse men shall haue their teeth longer than their beards, and some shal be so Sun burnt with sitting in the Alehouse that their noses shall bee able to light a candle. Others shall for want of money paune their clokes, and march mannerly in theyr doublet and their hose. And some shall this yere haue barnes and yet want corn to put in them. Rie this yeere shall
D 3 bee common in | England, and knaues shall be licenst to sel it by the pound, and he that wil not this quarter spend a pennie with his friende, by the counsayle of Albumazar, shall bee thrust quite out of all good companie for his labour.

It may be doubted that some straunge sicknesse and vnknowen diseases will happen, as hollownesse of the heart, that a man shall not knowe a knaue from an honest man, and vncouth consumptions of the lyuer, that diuerse men of good wealth shall by their kinde hearts spend all and die banquerouts: some shal be troubled with diseases in the throate, which cannot bee helpte without Bull the hang man plaie the skilfull Chyrurgion. Amongest the rest, many that haue faire wiues shalbe troubled with greate swelling in

6 it. The *Q*, *Grv.* beginneth when *Q*. 8 lie with others, which *Q*, *Grv.* 12–3 coniecture, 36 swelling] *Grv.*: smelling *Q*.

the browes, a disease as incurable as the goute. Some shall bee troubled with the stone, and seeke to cunning women to cure them of that disease, an infirmitie easilie amended and the doctors of Bridewell did not punish such women Phisitions by a Statute. But the greatest disease that is to bee feared is the Cataphalusie, that is to saie, good fellowes this yeere for want of money shall oft times be contented to part companie. |

D 3v

And thus (gentle reader) thou hast my prognostication, gathered by arte, and confirmed by experience, and therefore take it in good worth, for *Quod gratis grate*, and so farewell.

FINIS.

VERSES FROM 'ASTROPHEL AND STELLA'

THE following verses without signature are found at the end of the 'Sonnets of diuers Noblemen and Gentlemen' appended to the edition of Sidney's *Astrophel and Stella* described at p. 327.

They also occur in the following:

(L) The reprint of *Astrophel and Stella* by M. Lownes.

(H) Harleian MS. 6910, f. 156, in the British Museum.

(D) John Dowland's *Second Booke of Songs or Ayres*, 1600, No. 11.

See also the Shakespeare Society's *Papers*, vol. i, 1844, p. 78, where they are printed from one of Tanner's MSS. in the Bodleian Library, in which they follow some poems by Nicholas Breton. (*I do not give the readings of this.*)

If flouds of teares could clense my follies past
And smokes of sighs might sacrifice for sin,
If groning cries might salue my fault at last,
Or endles mone for error pardon win;
Then would I crie, weepe, sigh, and euer mone
Mine error, fault, sins, follies past and gone.

I see my hopes must wither in their bud,
I see my fauours are no lasting flowers,
I see that words will breath no better good
Than losse of time, and lightning but at howers:
Then when I see, then this I say therefore,
That fauours, hopes, and words can blinde no more.

4 error] euer *H.* 6 errors *D.* 7 their] the *H.* 8 fauours] fouers *L.* no] not *H.* 9 breath] breede *D.* 11 Then] Which *H*: Thus *D.* this] thus *D.* 12 fouours *L.* can] shall *H.*

THE CHOISE OF VALENTINES

Manuscripts:

Three manuscripts of this poem are known to me: these, with the letters which will be used in referring to them, are as follows:

(B) A manuscript in the Bodleian Library (Rawl. MS. Poet. 216, fol. 96–106 and fol. 94).

This manuscript is somewhat carelessly written in a hand of the early part of the seventeenth century in an oblong leather-bound book (95 × 150 mm.) containing a translation of the *Ars Amatoria* of Ovid and some other verses of a similar character. The dedicatory sonnet on fol. 96 is followed by a blank page, other leaves are written on both sides. The Epilogue, as Mr. Farmer pointed out, is to be found in an exceedingly incorrect form on fol. 94, standing before the poem and separated from it by some verses having no relation to the subject. The piece is not signed, but Nashe's name appears in the title. Punctuation is almost entirely absent. It may be noted that the second line of each couplet is indented, but does not as a rule begin with a capital letter; that a form of *C* is frequently used for initial *c* even in words which would naturally be written with a minuscule, as *Come* in l. 104; that *u* and *n* are practically indistinguishable; and, finally, that the dot of the *i* is occasionally absent, so that *faine* appears as *fame* and *vainely* as *vamely*. The usual contractions are employed: the one which in earlier times represented final *-es* seems here, as frequently, to do duty for simple *-s* as well. I have, however, always given it as *es*, as in most cases it is impossible to say for which it stands.

(D) A manuscript containing only a part of the poem, in the Dyce Collection at South Kensington (No. 44).

The Dyce manuscript is written in a minute but clear hand on five pages of a small octavo or duodecimo book (140 × 90 mm.) containing a variety of poems and a few prose jests. It is the second piece in the volume. It has no title, nor is the name of the author given. As heading there is a Latin couplet (see collation-notes).

The manuscript is complete as written, but shortens the poem by

more than half, having only 161 lines as against the 342 of P[1]. This shortening is brought about by a number of small omissions here and there, and by the absence of all that part of the poem (ll. 203–310) which deals with what seems generally to have been looked upon as its chief subject[2]. Of other omissions the most important are those of ll. 81–92, 155–78, 191–8, and of the Epilogue.

The chief peculiarity of this manuscript is that it is written partly in cryptography. Except in the dedicatory sonnet, which has only a single expression thus disguised, almost every line contains one or more words in cipher, while a few passages are written almost entirely in it. The cipher employed is of the most elementary character, consisting merely in the substitution of one letter for another, thus[3]:

Letters written:	a	b	c	d	e	f	g	h	i	k	l	m	n	o	p
Standing for:	b	m	s	l	t	c	w	n	x	y	q	i,j	[z]	g	d
	q	r	s	t	v	w	x	y	z						
	k	f	h	o	r	p	a,&	e	u,v						

It may reasonably be inferred that *n* was to represent *s* from the fact that every other letter is otherwise provided for, but we have no direct evidence of this. On the single occasion of the appearance of *n* in a cipher word, namely in l. 106, it is clearly an error for *v*, while when the scribe required to put *s* into cipher he seems to have forgotten the equivalent, for *asure* in l. 115, the only word in which this letter occurs, is written *xsure*, the *a* alone being changed.

The character used for *a* and & is hardly the usual *x*, being rather a mere cross; as, however, *x* does not occur in an unciphered word we have no means of knowing how the scribe wrote this letter. Long *s* is not used in the cipher words, though freely employed elsewhere.

Except for three or four full stops, there is no punctuation whatever. The poem is not divided into stanzas, nor are alternate lines indented. Every line begins with a capital. The cipher is, as we should expect, not always accurately used, letters being sometimes wrongly represented and sometimes omitted altogether, while a certain number of words are partly in cipher and partly in ordinary spelling.

In the collation-notes words which in the manuscript are in cipher are transliterated and printed in italics. In some cases of error in the manuscript I have given the original form within brackets as well as a transliteration.

[1] Not counting the line of Latin at the end.

[2] See the form given to the title of the poem in B, and the allusions of J. Davies of Hereford in *The Scourge of Folly* (*Works*, ed. Grosart, 1878, ii. 75) and Harvey (*Works*, ed. Grosart, iii. 63).

[3] I may say that I cannot perceive any particular purpose or design in the arrangement of the equivalent letters.

great carelessness or great ignorance on the part of the scribe. In a few cases, however, B preserves what may be the true reading, where P and D either omit something or are unintelligible, as, for example, in lines 183–6, where of the four lines, all of which seem necessary to the sense, P omits the first two and D the second two[1], and again in l. 287, where B seems certainly to come nearer to sense than P.

The numerous cases in which B preserves the general meaning, or at least gives a reading which accords fairly well with the context, while utterly differing from P in wording, suggest the possibility that it may have been written down from memory. It is difficult to see how such readings as *And she poore wench compeld* for *And now she was compell'd* in l. 23, *then giue me first* for *Com, laye me* in l. 36, or *verry mappe* for *icie limmes* in l. 171, could possibly be due to careless copying[2]. On the other hand there are a few readings, such as *allso* for *Ale's* in l. 7, *vestures* for *vestalls* in l. 48, and *includes* for *enclowds* in l. 165, which strongly suggest incorrect reading of a manuscript. Indeed, to explain all the peculiarities of B we must, I think, suppose the text to have suffered from both these causes of error; having been perhaps written down by or at the dictation of some one who only knew it in a form already corrupted by careless copying[3].

It has been pointed out by Mr. Farmer that in B the dedicatory sonnet has been roughly altered to make it generally applicable.

So far as it goes D is considerably better than B, but it also contains a number of obvious errors. It will be noticed that in certain readings it agrees with B as against P, and these or almost all of them may be, and, I think, probably are, correct. Where on the other hand it agrees with P as against B it will generally be found that B is obviously wrong. Thus, imperfect as it is, D perhaps diverges less from the original than either of the others. At the same time the fact that a considerable part of the poem is altogether wanting and that there are numerous omissions in what remains, renders it unsatisfactory as the foundation of a text[4].

[1] The omission in either case is probably explained by the fact that the two couplets begin with the same words.

[2] It is evident that such variations in reading could equally well be explained by there having been more than one original, a possibility to which I have already referred; but B seems to have too many readings which are certainly erroneous for any such argument to be founded upon it.

[3] It might perhaps be argued that on the whole there is greater probability that the bad copying succeeded the writing down from memory than that it preceded it; but the point is of no great importance.

[4] I may say that I see no reason for supposing D to represent an original shorter version of the poem. It is indeed perfectly true that the subject dealt with in ll. 235–95 has little, if any, connexion with that of the remainder: it seems especially out of accord with the opening of the piece. Nevertheless, even if this passage originally belonged to something else or was a separate poem, as is, I think, not impossible, it is now incorporated in the whole in such a way that it cannot be removed, and to break off the poem at l. 202, adding

We are thus reduced to following P, which presents the piece for the most part in an intelligible form, if not in one which seems very accurate. A person with a taste for such curiosities of literature, copying it out for his own delectation from a somewhat corrupt manuscript, would be quite likely to touch it up here and there as he went along, in order to get rid of the more obvious errors and to render the lines reasonably metrical, when by the dropping out of words or by corruption they had ceased to be so. In a poem of this sort such amendment would evidently be far more easy to make and far more difficult to detect than in one of higher literary merit.

It would I think be possible by using D and B more freely to construct an eclectic text which would perhaps come nearer to the original than that which I print, but it would be difficult to prove that it actually did so. I have therefore thought it preferable simply to reprint the longest version as it stands, punctuation and all, with but two or three changes where it seemed quite unintelligible.

merely four lines from near the end, as is done in D, utterly fails to bring the piece to a satisfactory close. The probability is that the transcriber, whose use of cipher shows him to have been fully conscious of the objectionable character of what he was copying, simply omitted the remainder as too offensive.

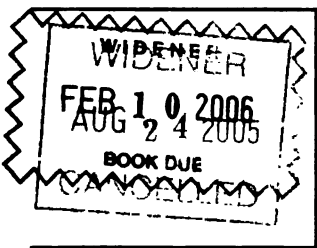
25.6-12

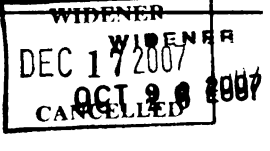
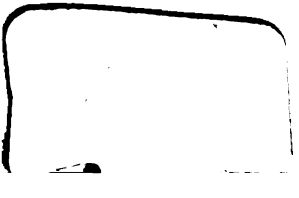
3 2044 025 681 388

The borrower must return this item on or before the last date stamped below. If another user places a recall for this item, the borrower will be notified of the need for an earlier return.

Non-receipt of overdue notices does not exempt the borrower from overdue fines.

Harvard College Widener Library
Cambridge, MA 02138 617-495-2413





Please handle with care.
Thank you for helping to preserve library collections at Harvard.